

THE  
FRONTIER MISSIONARY:

A MEMOIR

OF THE LIFE OF THE

REV. JACOB BAILEY, A. M.

MISSIONARY AT

POWNBALBOROUGH, MAINE; CORNWALLIS AND ANNAPOLIS, N. S.;

WITH

*Illustrations, Notes, and an Appendix;*

BY

WILLIAM S. BARTLET, A. M.,

Rector of St. Luke's Church, Chelsea, Mass., and a Corresponding Member of the  
Maine Historical Society.

WITH A PREFACE

BY

RIGHT REV. GEORGE BURGESS, D. D.,

Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the Diocese of Maine.

---

BOSTON:  
IDE AND DUTTON.

106 WASHINGTON STREET,

1853.



your humble servant  
J. Jacob Bailey

**IDE AND DUTTON.**  
**106 WASHINGTON STREET,**  
**1853.**

## CHAPTER IV.

Journey to Boston, 48; Arrival there, 48; Visit to Harvard College, 49; Treatment by the President, 49; Calls on the Boston Clergy, 49; Goes on board the "Hind," 51; The Ship drops down to Nantasket, 52; Description of the place assigned to Mr. Bailey, 52; Company assembled in it, 52-54; Their Conduct, 54; Adventure of two of the Ship's Officers, 55; The Ship goes to Sea, 56; Terrific Storm, 57; Lands in Portsmouth, England, 58; Journey to London, 60; Arrival in London, 60; Interview with the Secretary of the Propagation Society, 61; With Archbishop of Canterbury, 61; Examination for Holy Orders, 61; Ordained Deacon, 62; Dines at Bishop of London's Table, 63; Waits upon Dr. Franklin, 63; Crowds attending Whitefield's Preaching, 64; Ordained Priest, 64; Calls on Bishop of London, 65; Receives the Royal Bounty, 66; Dines with Dr. Franklin, 66; Prepares to return to America, 66; Sight of Land, 66; Arrival in Boston, 67.

## CHAPTER V.

Early Settlements in North America, 68; Colonies at St. Croix and Annapolis Rivers, 68; Kennebec and Penobscot Rivers visited, 68; Plymouth Company formed, 69; Landing of Colonists at Kennebec, 69; Regular Public Worship there, 70; Colony at Saco, 71; Rev. Robert Jordan, 72.

## CHAPTER VI.

Proprietors of Kennebec Purchase, 74; Germans settle at Frankfort, 74; Circumstances of these Settlers, 75; Destitute of Religious Instruction, 75; Efforts of a Jesuit, 76; Application to "Society for Propagating the Gospel," etc., 76; Rev. William MacLennachan sent as Missionary, 77; Mr. MacLennachan removes from the Mission, 77; Extent of the Mission, 78; Rev. Jacob Bailey succeeds Mr. MacLennachan, 78; Mr. Bailey's Marriage, 80; Extract from Mr. Bailey's Report, 80; Petition from Georgetown, 81; Extract from Mr. Bailey's Letter to the Society, P. G., etc., 83; Rev. W. W. Wheeler, Missionary at Georgetown, 86; Steps taken to build a Church at Pownalborough, 86; Church occupied, 87; "Account of the First Mission on Kennebec River," 88-91; Persecutions by "M." and "N.," 93; Rev. W. W. Wheeler leaves Georgetown, 98; Attempts to establish a Congregational Society, 99; Mr. Bailey's Writings, 101; Account of the Parsonage and Grounds at Pownalborough, 102-104; Persecution while on a Journey, 105; Report to the "Society P. G.," 105; Rev. J. W. Weeks persecuted, 108; Attempt upon the Lives of the Inmates of the Parsonage, 108; Travelling Preachers, 109; Raising a Liberty Pole, 110; Persecutions of Mr. Bailey, 112; Second attempt to establish a Congregational Society, 113; Episcopalians taxed for this purpose, 113; Mr. Bailey flees to Boston, 116; Second Journey to Boston, 117; Extracts from his Journal, 117-121; Persecution continues, 122-126; Sufferings of the People in Maine, 127, 128.

## CHAPTER VII.

Mr. Bailey and Family leave Pownalborough, 129; Visit Georgetown, 130; Depart for Nova Scotia, 133; Incidents of the Voyage, 133; Account of Mr. Rhodes, 137; Incidents of the Voyage, 138-156; Arrival at Halifax, 156; Meets old Friends, 156; Visited by Rev. Dr. Breynton, 159; Waits upon the Governor, 161; Commences Housekeeping, 168.

## CHAPTER VIII.

Donation from the General Assembly, 172; Invited to officiate at Cornwallis, 173; Removes to Cornwallis, 175; Report to the Society P. G., 177; Letter from Rev. Samuel Peters, D. D., 178; History of Connecticut, 179; Mission at Annapolis, 180; Appointment to Annapolis, 182; Account of Journey from Cornwallis to Annapolis, 184-190; Letter to the Society P. G., 191; Large Immigration at Annapolis, 193; Report to the Society P. G., 194; Immigration at Annapolis, 195; Report to the Society P. G., 196; Letter to Rev. S. Parker, D. D., 197; Church at Annapolis opened for Divine Service, 197; Letter from Rev. Dr. Parker, 198; Letter to Rev. S. Peters, D. D., 199; Letter from Rev. S. Peters, D. D., 202; Letter to Rev. S. Peters, D. D., 204; Report to Society P. G., 208; Letter to Mr. T—B—, 212; Report to Society P. G., 213; Letter to Rev. S. Peters, D. D., 213; Report to Society P. G., 219; Idem, 220; Idem, 222; Sunday Schools established in Nova Scotia, 224; Mr. Bailey appointed Deputy Chaplain at Annapolis, 224; Letter to the Society P. G., 227; Letter from Bishop Inglis, 228; Mr. Bailey's Death, 228; Notice of his Family, 228; Estimate of his Character, 230.

NOTES, . . . . . 234

APPENDIX, . . . . . 277

St. John's Church, Pownalborough, 277; Church at Georgetown, 280; St. Paul's Church, Portland, 282; Christ Church, Gardiner, 284; Kittery, 286; Prospect, 287; Rev. W. W. Wheeler, Missionary at Georgetown, 287; Silvester Gardiner, M. D., 290; Contribution to the List of Three Hundred Ministers, 294; Abstract of Sermons, 295.

NOTICES OF LOYALISTS, . . . . . 311

Rev. Edward Bass, D. D., 312; Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, 315; Rev. William Clark, 317; Rev. John Wiswall, 318; Rev. Roger Viets, 319; Rev. Mather Byles, Jr., D. D., 320; Rev. ——— Bissett, 321; Rev. Henry Caner, 322; Rev. John Troutbeck, 322; Rev. John Vardill, 322; Rev. Isaac Brown, 322; Sergeant (Rev. W. ?), 322; Captain ——— Smith, 322; John McNamarra, 323; Dr. John Calf, 324; Moses Foster, 324; Robert Jenkins, 324; ——— Simmons, 324; John Jones, 325; Thomas Brown, 327; Capt. Charles Callahan, 327; Thomas Turner, James Turner, ——— Cookson, John Carlo, Martin Carlo, 329; Edmund Doharty, 330; Capt. ——— Combs, 330; Joseph Domette, 330; Capt. ——— Campbell, 331; Thomas Robie, 331; Joseph Patten, 331; Major ——— Rogers, 331; ——— Dowling, 332; ——— Cummings, 332; John McKown, 332; ——— Forman, 332; Col. (Peter ?) Fry, 332; William Gardiner, 332; ——— Wallace, 333; Nathaniel Gardiner, 333; ——— Charlestown, 334; Dr. James Tupper, 334; Benjamin Snow, 335; John Lee, 335; Capt. Antill Gallop, 335; ——— Williams, 335; James Rogers, 335; Simon Baxter, 336; Bartholomew Sullivan, 336; Dr. Jonathan Hicks, 336; George Lyde, 336; John Carleton, 336; ——— Jackson, 337; Dr. ——— Coffin, 337; Dr. Cassimire Meyer, 337; Major Samuel Goodwin, 337.

LETTERS AND JOURNALS, . . . . . 338

Letters to Amos Bailey, 338, 348, 349, 350; Rev. H. Caner, 338; Dr. Silvester Gardiner, 338, 351, 352; William Gardiner, 340, *ib.*; Mills and Hicks, 347, 348; Mrs. Susanna Renkin, 348; Rev. J. W. Weeks, 343, 344, 345; Rev. W. W. Wheeler, 342.

# THE FRONTIER MISSIONARY.

---

## CHAPTER I.

NEAR the north-east corner of the old Bay State, lies the ancient town of Rowley.

The northerly line of Massachusetts, if it continued in the straight course in which it runs from the westerly border of the Commonwealth, would strike the ocean to the southward of this place, throwing it and the neighboring ancient town of Newbury within the limits of New Hampshire. The dividing line between the two States, however, crosses the Merrimac River, some forty miles from its mouth, and then running parallel with that river at a distance of three miles from it, proceeds in an irregular course, generally in a north-easterly direction, till it meets the sea which washes Salisbury Beach. The townships spoken of, lie, therefore, as it were, in the bow of a parenthesis.

Even now, when the improved facilities of travel have brought Rowley into close connection with other places, it remains a comparatively quiet and secluded spot. Though near the sea, the communication with it is circuitous, and small vessels only can approach any part of the township. There is hardly sufficient water power for the grist-mills, needed by the inhabitants.

- If such be the present condition of this ancient settlement, when almost every New England town has greatly increased and wonderfully changed during the last fifty years, it may

well be supposed that a century since, Rowley was a place in which manners and customs, once formed, would continue stereotyped for a long time.

Distant, as it was, a long summer day's ride on horseback from the metropolis; seldom resorted to, either for business or pleasure, by strangers, and the occupation of its inhabitants being mainly agricultural, the stamp which its Puritan settlers affixed upon its society was not only visible, but still sharply defined. A seaboard town, and yet, practically, almost cut off from the sea, it had hardly the resources that are common to most New England communities, and its society resembled more nearly that of settlements far in the interior, than might be expected in a place in which the roar of the Atlantic might be heard in every easterly storm.



[Birth-place of Jacob Bailey.]

In this community JACOB BAILEY,\* the subject of this Memoir, was born, in the year 1731, and the following account is in his own language, written when he had arrived at middle age, and after education and travel had improved his mind.

“In my very childhood, as soon as I was able to read, I was seized with an insatiable desire of travelling, and a boundless

---

\* See note A.

curiosity to visit foreign countries. This inclination I was obliged to suppress, since such numerous obstacles arose to check my ambition, and to prevent me from indulging those desires, which all my acquaintance looked upon as extravagant and romantic.

"When I had completed my tenth year, I found myself an inhabitant of a place remarkable for ignorance, narrowness of mind, and bigotry.

"An uniform method of thinking and acting prevailed, and nothing could be more criminal than for one person to be more learned, religious, or polite, than another. For instance, if one happened to make advances in knowledge beyond his neighbors, he was immediately looked upon as an odd, unaccountable fellow, was shunned by every company, and left to drink his mug of flip\* alone on lecture-day night. He was sure to draw upon him the contempt and ridicule of the other sex, and always became the banter of the young females, not only at the frolic and dance, but at the washing tub and spinning wheel.

"Whenever a person began to make a figure in religion, or had the boldness to be more virtuous than his companions, he instantly drew upon him the envy of the old professors, who branded him with the odious names of upstart, hypocrite, and new-light.

"As for all politeness and every kind of civility, except what their great-grandfathers taught them, it was esteemed a crying sin. Thus I have known a boy whipped for saying Sir to his father, when he came from school,—a young fellow severely reprimanded for drinking a health,—and a very pretty girl obliged to live a virgin ten years, for once preferring a gentleman to a plough jogger, and for saluting every body with a courtesy. The old people were so tenacious of the customs of their ancestors, that no consideration could prevail upon them to vary in the minutest instance. This stupid exactness might be discovered in the field, at home, at the tavern, and

---

\* "Flip; toddy made with New England rum."—*Gage's History of Rowley*, p. 269.



even in the meeting-house. Every man planted as many acres of Indian corn, and sowed the same number with rye; he ploughed with as many oxen, hoed it as often, and gathered in his crop on the same day with his grandfather. With regard to his family, he salted down the same quantity of beef and pork, wore the same kind of stockings, and at table, sat and said grace with his wife and children around him, just as his predecessors had done before him.

"At the tavern the same regulation obtained, where it was esteemed impious to venture, except on a training or lecture-day. Upon the former occasion, the good man always bought a piece of sweet cake for his spouse, and a roll of ginger-bread for each of his children; upon the latter, you might see the fathers of families flocking from the house of devotion, with a becoming gravity in their countenances, to the house of flip.

"The young sparks assemble in the evening to divert themselves, when, after two or three horse-laughs at some passage in the sermon, they proceed in the following manner. They send for an old negro, who presently makes his appearance with the parish fiddle, part of the head of it is broken, it is glued together in several places with rosin, has three strings, etc. Now the music begins, which instantly inspires the youths, who lead out the willing fair to mingle in the dance. They hold this violent exercise, till sweat and fatigue oblige them to desist. In this interval, one is despatched to the tavern for a dram, which revives their spirits till midnight, when they separate. They have one excellent custom here, and that is, their constant attendance on public worship. Upon the ringing of the bell on Sundays, every one repairs to the meeting-house, and behaves with tolerable decency till prayers are over. As to singing, the greatest part have renounced their prejudices to what is called the new way, but others continue to place such sanctity in a few old tunes, that they either hang down their heads in silence, or run out of the meeting-house, while their neighbors are singing one of a more modern composition.

"When the sermon begins, every one has the privilege of growing drowsy, about the middle many catch a nod, and

several sleep quietly during the application. These honest people would esteem it a great hardship if they were denied the privilege of taking a nap once a week in their meeting-house.

"Thus, at the age of ten, I found myself among these people, without any education, without money; and to increase my misfortune, I was bashful to the extremest degree.

"This disposition had taken such a possession of me, that I was even afraid to walk the streets in open daylight, and frequently, when I have been sent abroad in the neighborhood of an errand, I have gone a mile about through fields and bushes. A female was the most dreadful sight I could possibly behold, and till I was eighteen, I had never courage to speak in their presence. Whenever I had the misfortune to meet one of these animals in the street, I immediately climbed over the fence, and lay obscured till she passed along. And, if a young woman happened to come into the room where I was sitting, I was seized with a trembling, but if she spoke, my confusion was so great, that it was a long time before I could recover. But these difficulties, instead of abating my thirst for knowledge, or lessening my unbounded desire for travel, only served as so many incitements to these acquisitions."

The following is a copy of a letter written in mature life. It will be perceived that it was addressed to a lady. Neither her name, nor the date of the letter, however, are preserved.

"I was born in a country town on the coast of New England, of honest parents, who, notwithstanding they were extremely industrious, could obtain but a scanty maintenance for themselves and their numerous family.

"It was my misfortune, from the earliest period of my life, to be bashful to the extremest degree.

"I was, when a child, even under all the disadvantages of poverty and a narrow education, extremely ambitious, and my curiosity was unbounded, and my thirst for knowledge perfectly insatiable. I was for taking hold of every opportunity

to increase my knowledge, improve my understanding, and to gain intelligence of humane affairs. The means I enjoyed for mental acquirements were indeed very infrequent and slender. I was disposed to pass all my leisure hours in learning, and yet was unfurnished with any kind of books, or any means of acquiring knowledge.

"I was constrained to labor with the most constant and unwearied diligence, and had scarcely time allowed me for needful recreation. However, a season is never wanting to those who are ready to improve upon any occasion. I used to redeem an hour every evening from the small portion that was allotted for my sleep. This, for want of books, I usually spent in scribbling, so that I composed matter upon a variety of subjects, sufficient, I suppose, to have filled several volumes.

"It happened, one evening, after I had, as usual, been employed, just before the hour of repose, with my pen, that I was suddenly called away upon some urgent occasion. In the hurry of my rising, I dropped the paper which I had been using, so that it was taken up the next morning by a person of no small curiosity. He was so pleased with the contents, that he instantly communicated it to the perusal of some others, till at length it arrived at the Parson of our Parish, who was a pious and ingenious gentleman. He was so taken with the performance, that he resolved to pay the author a visit. By some means or other, I gained intelligence of his design, and took care to avoid his conversation, by secreting myself from the knowledge of any person. I took a ramble through a neighboring grove, where I gave my attention to the whispers of the breeze, the noise of the turtles, and the croaking of the frogs, till I thought the time of his visit had fully expired. For, not to dissemble, Madam, I esteemed our minister, in that day, such a great man, that thousands would not have tempted me to come into his presence. Being arrived at my father's, I understood that he had paid the family a visit, and had prevailed upon my father to let him have the instructing me a twelve month, and that without any consideration. Such was his unparalleled generosity!

"This proposal, however advantageous and agreeable, I

found encumbered with insuperable difficulties, for I imagined it impossible to introduce myself to the family without perishing under an intolerable weight of blushes, and the deepest confusion. The day soon approached. I arose in the morning, having never closed my eyes the preceding night, and directed my course to the Parson's. I passed the house, and walked backwards and forwards by it, I think, no less than ten times. At last, a strange and unusual pang of courage and resolution came upon me, and forced me up to the door, but, alas, when I arrived, my heart failed me, and I presently perceived my spirits beginning to sink, till finding that the eyes of a young female in the neighborhood were turned towards me, I concluded, of the two evils, prudentially to choose the lesser, and so instantly entered. I gat over the difficulties of my first address, and was put to learning that very afternoon, and, as I had the good fortune to perceive, greatly to the acceptance and admiration of my master."

No information is to be found of the time spent in his preparation for college. Enough, however, has been stated, to show his great desire for learning, and the serious obstacles he met with in its acquirement.

To the Rev. Jedediah Jewett, Pastor of the First Congregational Society in Rowley, belongs the credit of taking this poor and almost friendless young man from his obscurity, and giving him the opportunity to gratify that taste for learning, of which he has spoken in the foregoing extracts.

## CHAPTER II.

THE subject of this Memoir entered Harvard College in 1751, when he was twenty years old.

The reason of his commencing his preparation for college at an age when most young men have completed their collegiate course, appears in the extracts from his own writings, which have already been given.

We can hardly expect to find much that will interest the general reader during the life of an undergraduate. But Jacob's practice of writing, by which, as he has testified, he acquired most of the education he had before he was noticed by Rev. Mr. Jewett, was now very freely followed, and portions of copious daily journals kept by him are still in existence. Most of their contents might have been pleasant to him as reminiscences in after life, and would be valued by his relations and friends. Beyond this circle they possess but little interest. Yet there are some matters in them which may be alluded to, and a few portions of them will be extracted. If but little can be copied from these writings to illustrate the personal biography of their author, still, the glimpses they afford of the state of society at the time, may not be uninteresting in themselves, as well as because they exhibit to us, to some extent, *the influences that helped to form his character at this period of his life*. It would appear, from these journals, that the bashfulness which he formerly felt in female society, and of which he has spoken, (see previous extracts from his writings,) had now entirely disappeared, and that the company of the softer sex was now eagerly sought by him, and highly enjoyed.

It has ever been a practice for persons to complain of the age in which they live, asserting that religion and morals have deteriorated from their former condition, and, supposing that

their tendency was still downward, to indulge in gloomy forebodings as to the future. We read the writings of divines and others, who flourished two centuries since, and meet with evidences of this belief.

Fifty years later, the complaint is repeated in the books of that time. Another half century furnishes us with lamentations over the degeneracy of the times as compared with those that are past. Doubtless there is reason always to mourn over the disregard that men manifest to their highest good. A thoughtful person can view with no satisfaction the interest which the majority show in perishing trifles. A pious mind, in any age, cannot but be pained at the evidences around him, that "the things that are seen," and "that are temporal," so entirely usurp the place in the heart which should be occupied by "the things that are not seen," and that "are eternal."

Still, we cannot but think that the last one hundred years have witnessed material improvements in the *decencies* of society and its minor morals, and where these are improved, the way of advance in more important matters is made easier.

Some practices were current during the youth and early manhood of Mr. Bailey, that would not now be tolerated. New England society, at that time, in country towns, was harsh and hard. No influences prevailed to refine the manners, and but little existed, around which the finer feelings could entwine themselves. The love of letters was mostly confined to professional men, or to some of those in other pursuits, who had received a liberal education. As a general thing, it was not supposed that females need be taught more than the mere rudiments of learning. Hence, though a few trifling amusements were occasionally resorted to as a means of preventing listlessness, sensual pleasures were the principal ones of that generation.

Modesty prevents more than an allusion to some of the social customs of the time. Suffice it to say, that the intercourse between the sexes in rural districts was frequently of a character so improper, and in many cases so gross, that the present age could hardly believe a plain statement of its

nature, were it not certified by those who lived at that day, and who speak of it as a matter of course.

The subject of this Memoir lived in the country till he was twenty years of age, and he fell somewhat into the habits of those around him. But as a larger acquaintance with the world expanded his views, as the company of females educated in cities, (where no such customs prevailed,) gave him juster notions of the purity of female character, and as Divine grace strengthened in his heart, he saw the nature of the intercourse spoken of in a truer light, and his journals and letter-books show his convictions on this subject, and the efforts he made for reform. To him fairly belongs the credit of having, in early manhood, advanced beyond the age in which he lived, in his ideas of what females were capable of becoming, and the honesty of his convictions was abundantly manifested in his persevering efforts for their improvement in secular and religious knowledge.

Ardent spirits were a common beverage in Mr. Bailey's day, among all classes. The minister, the deacons and the people, all indulged in a practice, now so loudly condemned. Playing cards was nearly as universal. Young men, almost on the point of entering the ministry, did not hesitate to join a party at whist, or other games; and, if after they had been ordained, they scrupled at engaging in this amusement, they did not forbid its being indulged in under their roof. The same may be said of dancing.

A portion of his journal, while he was a college student, illustrates what has been said touching the three last customs. Under date of January 19, 1753, he gives an account of the marriage of a daughter of a pious and orthodox New England clergyman in a country town. "After the ceremony was past," says he, "dinner was prepared, but first I waited upon the gentry with a bowl of lemon punch. . . . About the coming on of the evening, the younger sort, to the number of about fifty, repaired to the western chamber, where we spent the evening in singing, dancing, and wooing the widow."

The festivities appear to have been renewed at the clergy-

man's house the next day, when several young people assembled. Mr. Bailey says: "Having saluted the bride, we spent our time, some in dancing, the others in playing cards, for the space of two hours. . . . After dinner, we young people repaired to our chamber, where we spent the day in plays, such as singing, dancing, wooing the widow, playing cards, box, etc."

Thus much for the social habits of that day. Who can deny that they have been much improved in the mean time?

It is with much satisfaction that we make extracts from Mr. Bailey's journals, recording the liberality of certain persons in assisting him to pay his expenses when in college. The Rev. Mr. Jewett was the friend on whom he mainly relied for means to obtain his education. Yet Mr. Jewett probably thought that others ought to share this burden with him.

"*April 13th, 1753.* . . . We resorted to Messrs. Cushing and Newman's, (in Boston,) where we were led into a room most curiously adorned with rich and costly furniture. Mr. Jewett, after having entered into some discourse with these gentlemen, easily persuaded them to subscribe £85, O. T., a-piece, for my support at college. From these gentlemen I had an invitation of making free at their house for the future." This bounty, however, added to what other resources he might have, does not seem to have been sufficient to meet his expenses, as we may infer from the following entry in his journal, dated "*Rowley, January 28th, 1754.* This day, meeting with many discouragements, I had almost resolved to fix off to sea, but just as I had the matter in agitation, I had an offer to go to Bradford, where, I hoped, I should find something to divert my mind." On his return, he says, "I called in at (Rev.) Mr. Chandler's, about sunset, who gave me two dollars and a pair of gloves. He also lent me his Hebrew Bible."

The aid of Rev. Mr. Jewett was called in on this emergency. He advised a journey to Portsmouth, N. H., and an appeal to several persons in that town and its vicinity. Jacob, being furnished with letters of introduction, travelled to Portsmouth, and the extracts from his journals, which follow, show his success.



*"Portsmouth, N. H., January 31st, 1754.* Waited upon Col. Gilman with a letter. . . . Called on my classmate, John Wentworth. . . . Rev. Mr. Langdon came home, to whom I presented my letter. He, upon receiving it, spake very discouraging of my receiving any donation in the town. However, he promised, the next day to use his interest among the gentlemen.

*"February 1st.* . . . The first place we called at was Wentworth's, who welcomed me to his house, and gave me his hand. After I had been there a few minutes, his son, my classmate, made his appearance, and invited me to dine with him, as did his father, and Mr. Langdon being invited also, I consented. At our coming away, Mr. Wentworth gave Mr. Langdon £12 for me. After this, we went to Sen'r Col. Sherburne's, where we were courteously entertained, and invited to dine with him. He, at parting, gave me £2. . . . About nine o'clock, having obtained leave of Esq. Bell, I set out for New Castle with the Esq. and three of his men, to row us down. It happened to be a very cold, dark, and stormy night; the rain that fell froze upon everything, but though we were much fatigued, yet we arrived in about half an hour at New Castle, it being about three miles from Portsmouth. On our arrival, Esq. Bell sent one of his men to show me to (Rev.) Mr. Chase's. When I arrived there, about ten o'clock, I found myself perfectly unknown."

Mr. Chase read the letter of recommendation from Mr. Jewett. He "made some of his servants bring me some supper, and very courteously entertained me all night."

*"February 2d.* After prayers, we all breakfasted upon chocolate, etc. When we had done, Mr. Chase called me into another room, and gave me £3, Hampshire money. Afterwards, we fitted out for fishing, and getting into Mr. Chase's boat, we, six in number, launched off, but changing my mind, I was set on Kittery shore. Being come to land, I travelled over the rocks up to (Rev.) Mr. Stevens's. Here I found his wife and he at dinner, and, upon invitation, sat down with them. After dinner, Mr. Stevens . . . gave me a dollar, and a recommendatory line to Sir William Pepperell. About two, I

set out with the intention of seeing York, but before I had got to Sir William's plantation, an exceeding thick fog arose and covered all the land, so that it was almost impossible to discern the ground right under one's feet. I at length, however, found the knight's house, and went first into the kitchen, where I waited till after he had dined, and then sent in my letter. When he had read it, he immediately sent for me, upon which I was conducted into the room, where I found Sir William and his lady and three gentlemen. The knight ordered me to sit down, and turned me out a glass of wine, upon which I drank his health. After I had been, with the gentlemen present, long entertained with an account of his travels in England, he sent a young scribe in his employ with a couple of blacks up to Portsmouth in a boat, with whom he ordered me a passage. Accordingly, about three o'clock, we prepared for our voyage, and being ready to set off, Sir William's lady presented me with a dollar, and he gave me twenty shillings in copper, and came with us down to the water, where he helped me into the boat, and charged me to come and see him, if I came that way again."

. . . . .

"*February 4th.* This day I proposed to set out on my journey home, but after breakfast Mr. Langdon and I took a walk, first to Mr. Wiberd's, the Counsellor, and then to Mr. Wiberd, the Merchant, who gave me two dollars a-piece. During my stay here, I was taken aside by my lady Wiberd, who bestowed upon me a yard and a half of very fine muslin and a pair of fine worsted stockings. As we were going out of Mr. Wiberd's we met Mr. Jefferds, who gave me nine livres.

"From hence we proceeded to Col. Atkinson's, who out of his generosity put me into the possession of £12, Hampshire money, and treated me very handsomely. From Col. Atkinson's we directed our course to Capt. Warner's, where I had an opportunity of seeing his son, who, together with his father, treated me very handsomely. Being invited to dinner here, we refused and retired home, where we dined; after which, Capt. Warner's son came to Mr. Langdon's, and after we had sat together a little time, I took my leave of Mr. Langdon's

family. On coming out of the door, Warner came with me and gave me four dollars and a bundle of things, worth £10, O. T. I have the greatest reason to esteem this town, for the kindness I received from several of the principal inhabitants, especially from Mr. Langdon and his family, who all treated me with peculiar respect."

\* \* \* \* \*

" *Cambridge, February 27th.* This day received by Mr. Warner, from (Rev.) Mr. Langdon, of Portsmouth, the remaining part of my bounty from those gentlemen I had lately visited, consisting of one pistole, one English shilling, and forty-two livres."

The following portion of Mr. Bailey's Journal, containing an account of a journey which he made into Connecticut, will no doubt prove interesting.

" *July 9th.* This day having concluded to accompany Wm. Brown and his sister to New London, I arose early in the morning, about half after four o'clock. \* \* I went to Stockbridge's chamber, who rose and went with me to Stedman's after a horse, but not prospering, Elliot rode down to Charlestown and got one of Mr. Wood. \* \* Brown coming from Salem about eleven o'clock, we left Cambridge a little before twelve. Before we had gotten a mile I perceived I had left my great coat, upon which I rode back after it, and took leave of several scholars. I set out again, and rode directly for Bills, in Jamaica, where I found Mr. Brown and Miss Nabby at dinner with Capt. Fry, of Andover, and several others. After dinner we three sat together upon the benches before the door awhile, and about two o'clock set out on our journey, riding through Jamaica, a pleasant parish in the upper part of Roxbury, beautified with the country seats of several gentlemen. We came at length to Mr. Walter's, a very pleasant seat, where gravity and elegance seemed to reside. A number of venerable trees spread their agreeable shades and formed a fit habitation for the Muses. Here Wm. Walter invited us in, but being on our journey we refused.

The next town we came to was Dedham, where Ames, the

famous astronomer lives. Just as we passed his house, an accident happened. The swivel, by which the horse drew the chair, came loose and fell against his heels, which set him in a terrible fright. He ran with all his might and took the chair into a small gate-way, but people being near at hand, delivered my young companions from impending ruin.

#### DEDHAM.

No remarkable place, but an old settled town. Some good buildings towards the middle. It contains three parishes. The roads are good, but pretty much up hill and down. After we repaired our chair, we rode as far as one Dean's, where we diverted ourselves with the affected gentility. Leaving Dean's, we rode next through Walpole. Here we had the company of a Bristol man who had that day come from Ipswich.

#### WALPOLE.

A country town, most remarkable for valleys and hills. The roads, as in Dedham. The Rev. Mr. Payson is the only minister here. About dark, we came into Wrentham, where we put up. After we had brought in all our things, we took a room to ourselves, drank a bowl of beverage, and supped upon lamb steaks. At supper, we had a very odd creature to wait upon us. By its dress, we judged it to be of the feminine gender. We made some sorrowful reflections upon the situation of our chums at college, but soon began to divert ourselves with Madam Dean's affected gentility. Miss Nabby made several pert observations. After we had considered the great deliverance we had experienced in the day time, with wishing each other good night, we betook ourselves to repose. Miss Nabby lodged in our keeping room, Mr. Brown and I in a chamber overhead.

*July 10th.* This day arose in the morning. We had the company of the Bristol man I had seen before on our journey for several miles; but before we set out, we breakfasted upon tea.

#### WRENTHAM.

A pretty, plain country town; one or two very neat buildings; one meeting-house, and a very good road through the

greatest part of it. After we had rode about an hour, we came into Attleborough, and at length passed by Parson Weld's,\* where we had a view of his numerous file of daughters, out of a chamber window they were in. We made some stop, afterwards, at one Parson Clark's. The people begin now to appear in a sylvan roughness; the women in these parts wear but little more clothing than what nature gave them. The first stage we made was at Day's, where we called to change our horses, but not succeeding, we departed, and proceeded towards Providence, riding through a very sandy plain.

#### ATTLEBOROUGH.

A long country town, situated at a vast distance from the Eastern Ocean, the land somewhat poor and sandy, the roads very good, and but one meeting-house. We came, at last, to Sekonk, which is three miles in length and breadth, having upon it neither tree nor stone, but an exceeding fine road, and glorious riding.

#### REHOBOTH.

We saw nothing here but a large plain: it is the southern bounds of the Massachusetts dominions. After we had passed Sekonk Plains, we came over a large bridge, built exceeding high from the water; the stream itself has a prodigious fall. About twelve o'clock, we came to Providence, and put up at Capt. Ones, where we dined, and had a very good entertainment. A very pretty young lady belonging to the family, afforded us her company, and entertained us with her pleasant conversation. The house is furnished in a very elegant and curious manner. After we had rested ourselves and horses, we proceeded and rode through the delightful town of Providence, and passed the great bridge.

#### PROVIDENCE

Is a most beautiful place, lying on both sides of a fine river, in the north-westerly part of Rhode Island government. The

---

\* Rev. HANNAH WELD, who died in 1782, after a ministry of fifty-five years. His family consisted of four sons and eleven daughters.

north-east side is built with two streets of painted houses, above which lies a most delightful hill, gradually ascending to a great distance, all cut into gardens, orchards, pleasant fields, and beautiful enclosures, which strike the eye with agreeable surprise. Here is a fine harbor for shipping, and a well-built bridge across the river. The town, on the south-west side, is not less elegant than on the north-east, but contains two or three streets of well-built houses. Providence is a very growing and flourishing place, and the finest in New England. Here is one meeting-house, one church, one Quaker and one New-Light house for divine worship. The inhabitants of the place, in general, are very immoral, licentious and profane, and exceeding famous for contempt of the Sabbath. Gaming, gunning, horse-racing and the like, are as common on that day as on any other. Persons of all professions countenance such practices. From Providence we rode over a fine plain to Patuxet.

#### PATUXET

Is a pretty compact place, built upon a small river, over which is a very good bridge. From Patuxet we rode through a long desert country, in which we saw but a very few people, and they almost as rough as the trees. In riding through a great wood, we came, at length, to a house about the bigness of a hog-sty. The hut abounded in children, who came abroad to stare at us in great swarms, but were clothed only with a piece of cloth about the middle, blacker than the ground on which they trod. Miss Nabby began to wonder that the poor creatures did not wholly abandon themselves to sorrow and despair, but I told her, I made no doubt they enjoyed themselves as much in their savage condition, as she in all her elegance and plenty.

We spent some time, as we rode along, in reflecting upon the unhappy circumstances of these people, and upon the different genius and inclinations of the humane mind. At length, being very dry, we came to another house, where we lit, and coming in, found five or six women in a little room without any floor, either over head or under foot. Two or three of them appeared to be young. One of the young

wenches made haste to draw us some water, while another made search for a drinking vessel, and the last gave us water in an old broken mug, almost as ancient as time, of which we drank very sparingly. After we had rode a few miles further, we came to Major Stafford's: his daughter came to wait upon us, (after absconding for about two minutes,) barefooted and barelegged, with a fine patch and a silver knot on her head, with a snuff box in one hand, and a pinch at her nose in the other. She afforded abundance of amusement for my polite companions, which stuck by us longer than anything we met with in our journey. This Stafford's is in Warwick, about fifty-seven miles from Boston.

#### WARWICK.

A poor, but old-settled town, something populous, on the borders of Greenwich; the inhabitants very profane and unpolite. From Stafford's we proceeded to Wolcot's, just upon the edge of Greenwich.

At Wolcot's, where we put up in the evening, we were much interrupted by the town's people coming in, cursing and swearing, and drinking, but at supper time we had a room by ourselves, and enjoyed freedom of conversation, which turned chiefly upon the affairs of the preceding day. Our supper afforded us some amusement, it being fried chickens and currant sauce, sweetened with molasses; but nothing so much diverted us as the Major's daughter. *Observation.*—Those people who, to appearance, live the most mean and sordid lives, seem to enjoy themselves, and to take as much pleasure in life as those who pass away their time in the most elegant and sumptuous manner.

*July 11th.* This day arose very early in the morning, and, having fitted for our journey, we took our leave of Mr. Wolcot, and set out through Greenwich; but before we had got a mile it began to rain.

#### GREENWICH

Is a very populous shire town, and built compact on the north side. Here is one Baptist meeting-house and a court-house,

handsomely erected. A little to the southward of the town, is a road, for about half a mile, upon a high ridge, with terrible valleys on both sides. We rode through Greenwich and a part of North Kingston, over a prodigious rocky way, about eight miles, while rain fell in impetuous showers, and made no stop till we came to Thomas, the Quaker's, where we dried ourselves, and breakfasted upon tea. We found here the dirtiest tavern-keeper that ever was made; all the while I stopped, I could scarce get a word out of him. After we had sufficiently dried our things, we called for our horses, and proceeded on our journey to North Kingston, through a most terrible rocky country.

#### NORTH KINGSTON.

A very scattering town, exceeding stony, but very fertile, abounding in grass and the best of pasturage. After we had got to South Kingston, we came to the foot of Tower Hill; the ascent to the top is very easy, though from the first rising it is, for four miles, scarce perceivable. In many places the country on each side affords a most beautiful prospect. The ascent, within a mile of the top, grows something steep and rough. About one o'clock we reached the top of the hill, which is a large spacious plain, on which is built a handsome town, the houses exceeding neat, and the gardens very elegant.

#### SOUTH KINGSTON.

The whole township seems to contain Tower Hill, which is the most fertile part of New England. It is in the north-eastern part of the Narraganset country; the compact part of the town is on the top of the hill, about ten miles from Newport, the metropolis of the government. The descent from the town, on the eastern side next the water, is very steep, but exceeding pleasant, diversified with little fields, grass enclosures, and artificial groves. Near the Presbyterian meeting-house, which stands in the centre of the place, are several large and elegant buildings, with some of the finest gardens in New England. The people here live in better position than in most parts of the government. South Kingston is a shire town, and is favored with the presence of the General



Assembly once in two years. Having gained the top of the hill, we put up at Esq. Case's. Here we were received with the utmost civility and complaisance; the Esq. came out himself and welcomed us to Tower Hill, led us into one of his best rooms, and served us out wine with his own hands. Dinner being ready, we sat down, and had everything in the best order, with the most genteel attendance. We found the Esq. to be a prodigious loquacious gentleman. Among the rest of his discourses, he told us that all the gentlemen that travelled the road from South Carolina to Piscataqua, had heard of his fame, and made his house a stage, and by a few subtle hints, gave us to understand that he was a Justice of the Peace. After dinner was over, we rose from the table, he clasped his wife round the neck and kissed her, and going into our room, he entertained us with a long relation concerning the family of the Browns, and then offered to wait upon us down to the eastern part of the hill, to see a man that hung there in gibbets, but we, excusing the matter, went ourselves to the bottom of the hill, and there beheld the sorrowful sight. The man had been there three years already, and his flesh was all dried fast to his bones, and was as black as an African's. The crimes for which he was thus exposed were robbery and murder. He was taken in the southern parts of Long Island with some indisposition, and being in a strange place, one Jackson, a leather merchant, travelling with his horse, found him and took pity on him, and being on his way to Rhode Island, bore all his expenses, and treated him with all the tenderness of a father, for near one hundred and fifty miles, till he arrived at South Kingston, where, being together about the dusk of the evening, near the great Quaker meeting-house, he took up a stone, and with it struck him down. Jackson begged his life, and that he might, and welcome, take all his wealth; but he cursed and then fell upon him, and in a few minutes made full despatch of his innocent patron; thus we have at once an horrid instance of ingratitude. After we had looked at the sorrowful spectacle a long time, we travelled up the hill with some difficulty. Being returned to Case's, we paid our reckoning, and set out. After we had rode about a mile, we came

to the great Quaker meeting-house, which is an odd-built thing, having a kitchen and chimney at one side. Towards the southern part of Kingston, we came to a hill, over which the road lay, with a shocking ledge of rocks. With much difficulty we passed it, and continuing our journey till about the dusk of the evening, we arrived at Capt. Hill's, in Charlestown, after a very tedious day's journey, through abundance of wet and heat. After we had taken in our things, we were entertained all the evening with divers stories concerning the adjacent country, by Capt. Hill's son. He gave us an insight into the laws and customs of the government, and told us that the natives inhabited those parts, to the number of five or six hundred, and that their king was a young man about eighteen years of age, at school at Newport. The place where we lodged is about five miles from the place where the great Narraganset battle was fought, in which so many soldiers expired.

*July 12th.* This morning, about daybreak, it rained very hard. We arose with the sun, soon after which it cleared away, and looked like a pleasant day. We breakfasted upon tea, and calling for our horses, set out. After we had rode about a mile and a half, we passed by the Narraganset king's house, which stands in the midst of a spacious plain. It is a building two stories high, with two or three rooms on a floor, but of late it is miserably fallen to ruin. We had a sight of two of the king's sisters, who came to the door as we rode by. We still continued our progress through the Narraganset country, till we came to the borders of Westerly.

#### CHARLESTOWN.

Charlestown lies in the centre of the Narraganset country, in the place where the great battle was fought, so famous in our New England annals. The land here, for several miles near the sea-coast, is very smooth and pleasant. Here are some of the finest groves, fields, and grass enclosures, of any in New England. We rode through Westerly, meeting divers Indians, till we came to Weeden's, where we stopped till eleven. The weather being very hot, our horses were much overcome,

but having refreshed both them and ourselves, we proceeded over a terrible rough and uneven way, till we came to a river, which divides Rhode Island from Connecticut.

#### WESTERLY

Is the most western town in Rhode Island, and is a miserable, poor, unpopulated place, having nothing in it but woods, mountains and rocks, yet near the separating river there are divers good farms. The inhabitants seem to be, a great part of them, Indians. After we had passed the river over a large bridge, we came into Stonington, up and down whose rocky hills we rode, till coming to a great tree, we sat awhile under its shade and refreshed ourselves, after which we proceeded several miles, till at length Miss Nabby missed her capuchin. I immediately rode back, and found it within a mile of the place where we first missed it. After we had rode over some of the most frightful hills, so that Mr. Brown and his sister were obliged to alight and walk on foot, and so steep were they in places, that it was hardly safe riding down upon a single horse, having gone through a great deal of difficulty, we came to Col. Williams's. Here we made a small stop, and though almost overcome with the tediousness of our journey, we left the tavern, and with it Stonington, about four o'clock.

#### STONINGTON

Is in the south-east part of Connecticut. It is bounded on the north by Preston, on the east by the Narraganset River, on the south by the Atlantic Ocean, and on the west by Groton. It is so called, from the great abundance of stones found here. The roads here were formerly almost impassable, but by reason of their being, for the most part, movable, it continually grows better. The town is all under improvement, and divided into stately farms. Here are four large parishes. Having got into Stonington, we came into the borders of Groton, of all places the most horrid and shocking. After we had rode about four miles, over a prodigious continuation of rocky mountains, we ascended upwards for some time, till at length we began to descend, and came to a smooth place, as we thought, at the

bottom of the hill over which we rode; but coming to the end, we found before us a most horrible precipice, encumbered on every side with impenetrable thickets. The road we had to pass was excessive steep, over one entire chain of rocks, which descended like a winding pair of stairs, having the steps at an enormous distance from each other. Mr. Brown and his sister got out of the chair, and I dismounted for their assistance. Having fastened my horse, one took hold of the chair and the other of the horse, and with a vast deal of trouble, having followed the path which led to almost every point of the compass, we came to the bottom in safety; but bringing down my horse, he had like to have broken his neck. After this, we rode by a Quaker meeting-house, then by a Presbyterian, and at length, about half after eight o'clock, we came to the ferry, and thus, after a tedious journey of four days, we arrived in New London. The roads were so excessively bad, that we were four hours and a half in riding the last eight miles. It was past eleven before we had crossed the ferry and got to Mr. Winthrop's. Mr. Brown and his sister were received by the whole family with all imaginable expressions of joy and satisfaction. After supper, we betook ourselves to repose.

#### GROTON.

Groton, the last town through which we passed, is bounded on the north by Norwich and Preston, on the east by Stonington and Preston, on the south by the Atlantic, on the west by the River Thames, which divides it from New London. It is a prodigious mountainous place, and may justly be reckoned to exceed all others on account of rocks. One thing remarkable here, is a bridge made of one entire stone. Here are two Dissenting meeting-houses, one Church, and one Quaker. The inhabitants live very scattering, except on the river, where is a street, comfortably built, inhabited by Baileys. The people differ exceedingly in religious sentiments. Mr. Johnson, one of the ministers, records in his parish no less than fifteen different religions.

*Observation.*—I have had an opportunity of seeing divers of the natives of the country in their own proper habits, on

their own land, and in the exercise of their peculiar customs; and, upon the whole, one may justly conclude, that there is a great analogy between them and the people in the first ages of mankind; those who lived in the golden age, so much extolled by the poets, in their dress, religion and manners, were very similar to our Indian neighbors.

*July 13th.* This day arose, and found myself in a new country. After I had dressed myself, went down and breakfasted with Mr. Winthrop, his lady, and Madam Hide, together with our own company. Then Mr. Brown and I walked out into the garden, which is very pleasant. A little to the north of Mr. Winthrop's house, is a fish pond, at the upper end of his orchard, from which a canal is cut, about two feet wide, and near as deep, to the bottom of the garden, which lies on the south side of the house, so that this delightful stream falls through the orchard, house and garden; at the lower end of which, next to the south, stands a mill, which is carried by this cascade. The garden itself is beautifully laid out, and abounds with a variety of herbs, fruits and flowers. After I had a view of all the works round the house, and had some conversation with Mr. Winthrop, I concluded to pay Mr. Jewett a visit. Accordingly, about eleven o'clock, I set out, and after riding ten miles, over a vast number of holes and rocky mountains, I came to Mr. Jewett's, where I was very civilly received. Mr. Jewett's consort lay very sick of the mumps, or some other strange disorder. She had this afternoon two doctors, who concluded that she might recover. In the afternoon, Mr. Jewett being absent, I spent a great deal of time in walking in the fields, and in his garden. His house stands in a very sightly place on the eastern side. We may see, from the doors, near forty miles down country. Mr. Jewett's family is not large. He has one son and one daughter, and a negro servant. After we had prepared for bed, we all betook ourselves to repose.

*July 14th.* This day being Sunday, I arose, and having breakfasted, we prepared for meeting. At about eleven o'clock we rode to the house of God, where I had an opportunity of

hearing Mr. Jewett preach for the first time, though he had often preached before in Rowley, yet I always happened to be absent. After meeting, at noon, went to Esq. Raymond's, where I found Nathan Jewett, a young man that had formerly been at Cambridge, with Rev. Mr. David Jewett, at my chamber. Here I met with a great deal of civility, and was invited from among the company to go into another room, where I sat down and refreshed myself. The people in these parts never make a dinner on Sunday between meetings, but have a feast at night.

*Observation.*—The people in the north parish of New London appear to be civil and courteous, though not so polite as in Boston. They are not so showy in the meeting-house as in most country parishes in Boston government. Some of the young women wear hoops, though very much out of fashion. Their clothes are commonly good, though not very elegantly put on. The greatest part of the men wear caps: a wig is scarce to be seen in the whole meeting-house. Many children wear no stockings or shoes.

*July 15th.* . . . . After we had rode several miles, we came to Paugwank, or North Salem, a place belonging entirely to my class-mate, Brown. Here we saw several fine fields of wheat and other grain. Here are thirty tenants to near twelve thousand acres of land. When we had gotten out of Paugwank, we rode through a thick wood in the edge of East Haddam, till we came to Lyme. The first house we came to was Capt. Jewett's, the father of the young persons with me. As soon as we had hung (*sic*) our horses, we went in where the people were. When they came to know from whence I came, they treated me with a great deal of courtesy and kindness. The Capt. gave me an invitation to tarry at his house as long as I pleased. In a few minutes dinner was made ready and brought in, and set upon a long table, round which the whole family gathered, both white and black. His family consists of nine sons and one daughter, two maids, and five to six negroes, in all, sixteen persons. After dinner I went out with Mr. Jewett and his sons, to see them work at a little distance from the house. Here I beheld an abundance of

good land, cleared and well brought to, upon which grew the finest grass, wheat, and Indian corn, I have seen anywhere this year, yet still I fancied it an unpleasant place, on account of its being encumbered with rocky and mountainous land, and having not above two houses in sight. . . . .

*Observation.*—I am greatly astonished when, upon travelling, I find the people of this country to carry their resentments against each other so high, on account of the differing sentiments with respect to a few unessential modes and trifling circumstances in religious worship, at the same time all, of every persuasion, indulge in a custom, not only notoriously indecent, but the most subversive of the reverence due to the Grand Object of adoration, and this is a practice they have in all their assemblies of persons of both sexes meeting together, by which practice they utterly overthrow the design for which religious societies were established; that people should make music vocal only, or vocal and instrumental together; and that they should imagine the reading of prayers, or the pronouncing of them extempore such a serious matter of conscience, and admit, universally, an evil from which so many fatal practices flow, to be practised with impunity in the congregations. . . . .

#### MOHEGAN.

*July 22d.* This town is about three miles square, lying in the north-east corner of New London. It has in it two hundred or three hundred Indians, who live in almost the primitive mode, and many of them cannot speak a word of English. They wear a dress the most savage and barbarous that ever I saw. The Rev. Mr. Jewett formerly brought them to his meeting, but the separate preachers have of late drawn them away. However, Mr. Jewett continues to instruct them once a fortnight, in the principles of the Christian religion, at the public school-house, where they have a master to teach their children. . . . .

As an instance of the prodigious plenty in these parts, the last year, I shall mention a short story my landlord told me, viz.: a man in his near neighborhood, having buried upwards

of eighty bushels of potatoes last fall, made proclamation in the spring, that if any person would be at the trouble of digging them up, he should have them all for his reward, but nobody appeared to undertake it, which is not only an instance of great plenty, but also of the wealthy circumstances of the people in town.

WETHERSFIELD.

*July 23d.* This paradise is seated on the western bank of Connecticut River, on an extended plain, gradually rising from the first range of squares, and reaching two or three miles each way, contains a vast number of the neatest buildings in America. The main street is most curiously levelled, and runs from north to south, as straight as a mathematical line, in the midst of which is a meeting-house of the oddest form. On the eastern side, between the buildings, and among a beautiful range of orchards, lay a ravishing continuation of gardens. The western head forms the front of several most elegant squares, all richly occupied with gardens and little fields of onions. But it is impossible for my tongue to utter, or my pen to describe the beauties of this place. In short, the town, by reason of its vast variety of squares, cut into most elegant forms, and decorated with the profusion of nature and art, the neatness and beauty of its edifices, and, lastly, by reason of the most delightful scenes and ravishing prospects, opening themselves to view on every hand, may well be thought to equal, if not to exceed, those blooming fields where the first and only happy pair of humane kind confessed the gentlest passion, and united in the softest embrace."

Mr. Bailey continued his journey through Hartford, Springfield and Worcester, to Cambridge, where he arrived on the 27th day of July. His journal is full and minute to the day spoken of, but enough, perhaps, has been already extracted from it.

In August of the same year, Jacob was again in Portsmouth, and a guest of Rev. Mr. Langdon. Among others, he called on Mr. Wiberd, who, at his leaving, gave him "a pair of fine worsted stockings." Afterwards, calling on Mr. Haven,



he dined with him, by invitation. "He took me into his study, and presented me with a view of all his books, and, in the end, gave me three volumes in quarto."

It would seem that greater liberty, in some respects, was allowed to students in Harvard College during Mr. Bailey's residence there, than would now be granted.

"*May 1st, 1753.* This day arrived here about three o'clock, Mrs. Page, and also Mrs. Nabby Thompson, of Mystic, and Mrs. Sally Clerck, of Boston, who came first to my chamber and then to Goodhue's, where we drank tea; after which we went into the library, and then to my chamber, where I entertained them with a bowl of punch. Then Goodhue, Powers and I waited upon them back to Goodhue's chamber, and after drinking, conducted them to their chair, and there left them."

The following is deemed worthy of being extracted:

"*Newbury, August 11th, 1754.* This day being Sunday, we were, very early in the morning, called upon to arise. Upon coming down, we found a table prepared, and everything in order for drinking tea. After breakfast and prayers, we made ready for meeting, which began about ten o'clock. I sat this forenoon in (Rev.) Mr. Parsons' pew, it being the second highest in the meeting-house. The next to ours was Dr. Sayres', and round about I saw several persons of my acquaintance, who came to me after meeting, and invited me to their habitations, but being pleasantly engaged with Mr. Parsons' family, I refused their kindness. At noon we drank a dish of tea again, after which Jona., Sam. and I retired into the orchard, where we spent the time in too much jollity for the season. In the afternoon we attended public worship. Here, as Mr. Parsons was urging the use of examination, and telling the people 'that some could not endure such doctrine, who, though they had never told the minister of it, had hinted as much to others,' upon which a certain fellow starts up and cries, 'Sir, you had better call me out by name;' at which the whole congregation fell into laughter. After meeting, we returned to Mr. Parsons', and had a good supper in readiness, after which I had some discourse with Mr. Parsons upon divers subjects,

but more especially concerning those rambling preachers, that have dispersed themselves over these parts of the country, to the great disturbance both of ministers and people. Night

[The following cut is a view of the meeting-house in which the incident, spoken of in the preceding page, took place.]



NORTH WEST VIEW OF THE FIRST PRESBYTERIAN CHURCH,  
NEWBURYPORT, MASS.,  
IN WHICH ARE DEPOSITED THE REMAINS OF  
REV. GEORGE WHITEFIELD.  
INCLUDING A DISTANT VIEW OF THE HOUSE IN WHICH HE DIED,

coming on, S. Parsons, Jonathan and I, having obtained leave of his father, took a ramble through the town. We presently lit with N. Parker and some other young sparks, who joined themselves to our club. After we had visited several streets and lanes, we went into D. Bailey's, where we tarried a few

minutes, and in going down to the water, we had the pleasure of seeing Thos. Bradbury and his cousin, Miss Betty Nolton, who invited me to visit them the next day. Accordingly, I engaged to breakfast with them the next morning, and so left them, after which we returned, through several streets and lanes, to Mr. Parsons'. The old sir and his lady being now gone to repose, we three went into the kitchen, as far remote as possible from the intelligence, where we discoursed a long time with the maid, a young Scotch girl. We at length arrived at such a degree of extravagance, as to say whatever came uppermost. About twelve or one o'clock, the old lady arose and came into the room where we sat, which at first gave us some alarm, but finding her design not unfavorable, we contented ourselves till she retired, when we again resumed our merriment, till near two o'clock, when we went to rest.

#### OBSERVATIONS.

*Observation 1.*— Guilty persons seldom need any accuser but their own conscience, or witnesses beside themselves to declare their crimes. He must be endued with a more than common share of impudence, who can hear the aggravations of his guilt displayed without some evident tokens of regret in his countenance.

*Observation 2.*— We should ever be cautious of exposing our weakness before servants, and persons of low stations in life, especially if we have any regard to being extensively useful."

Mr. Bailey was graduated at Harvard College in 1755. Among his classmates were JOHN ADAMS, afterwards President of the United States; John Wentworth, who received the honorary degree of LL. D. from the Universities of Oxford and Aberdeen, and from Dartmouth College, was royal governor of the province of New Hampshire and of Nova Scotia, and was created an English baronet in 1796; William Browne and David Sewall, both of whom became judges of the supreme court of Massachusetts, and the former afterwards royal governor of Bermuda; Tristram Dalton, U. S. Senator;

Samuel Locke, S. T. D., President of Harvard College in 1770; Rev. Wm. Willard Wheeler, Missionary of the Church of England at Georgetown, Me.; Charles Cushing, Jonathan Bowman, and others.

‘ In a letter to his parents just before his graduating, he speaks in terms of warm gratitude of the interest which the Rev. Mr. Jewett of Rowley had taken in him. He says: “ He not only instructed me for this society, (i. e. Harvard College,) but has since been almost the procuring cause of all my benefactions; and now, whilst in Boston, he spared no pains to advance my interests. I have everything of clothing for commencement, but only a pair of stockings and a gown.”

In a letter to Rev. Mr. Jewett, about the same time, he expresses the like sentiments, and from his giving Mr. J. a statement of the amount due from him to the college, it is probable that he expected from that gentleman a loan of the sum necessary to discharge this debt.

## CHAPTER III.

THE importance which has always been attached to an universal system of education in New England, is well known to all who are familiar with her history.

From its earliest period provision has been made by law that every male\* child should have the opportunity of acquiring at least the elements of learning at the public expense.

This provision, of course, has called into requisition the services of many persons competent to teach. And as the school districts were of necessity small in area, their number was far greater than that of the towns. Till of late years, school teaching has not, as a general thing, been a distinct profession.

The business was formerly followed mainly by college students of small means, in their vacations, or by graduates, who finding that a debt remained for their education, taught school in order to earn the money for discharging that debt.

The profession to which they looked was at the end of their course as school-masters, and their continuance in this employment depended entirely on the length of time necessary to free them from pecuniary embarrassment.

Mr. Bailey followed this course. He had tried it during his second year in college, but from the short time in which he was so occupied, it would seem that it did not prove as profit-

---

\* It is believed that no provision was made for the *public* instruction of *females* till in the latter half of the last century. It is stated that females were not admitted into the public schools in Boston till the year 1760, and then at first only six months by way of experiment.—[Barnum Field's statement at Teachers' Convention, Worcester, Mass., 1849.]

Previous to the year 1789, boys only were taught in the public schools of Boston. In the year 1789 measures were taken for "instructing both sexes."—[The Public Schools of Boston, *Boston Almanac*, 1849, pp. 83, 84.]

able as perhaps he expected. The following extracts from his journal relate to this matter.

*Rowley, Jan. 13th, 1753.* This day concluded first upon my keeping school. The young men to find wood, and the young women candles, and pay besides three shillings O. T., per week. This school was kept, as he says, in the first place in his sister's house, and was afterwards removed to ——.

*Jan. 15.* The number of those who put themselves under my instructions is, males, seventeen; females, ten; total, twenty-seven.

The school soon terminated, for under date of February 9th, he says, "this was the last day of my keeping school here."

We next find him engaged in this employment shortly after completing his college course. He had left his native province and was in that of New Hampshire before August of this year, discharging the duties of his temporary profession. He thus writes to a friend at Cambridge:

"KINGSTON, N. H., Sept. 29th, 1755.

"*To Mr. E. Sparhawk, at Cambridge:*

"*Dear Sir:—* My lot is cast in a solitary region, where I have no amusement, except reflecting on that pleasant situation I enjoyed a few weeks ago. I call it solitary, not so much for want of company, as because I can find no agreeable companions in the place where I reside.

"It is a large town, consisting of three parishes, and this has no less than three hundred and sixty houses. My school has belonging to it above one hundred and fifty scholars, mostly young.

"My time passes away unchecked with variety. I have no scenes of novelty to amuse, nor changing appearances to entertain my fancy. To-day opens the same prospect with yesterday, and to-morrow I expect nothing new.

"I feel, however, the same temper towards Mother Harvard, which the Israelitish Songster had towards his beloved Jerusalem, when seated beside the waters of Babylon.

"But instead of rivers or purling streams, I find nothing

except stagnating pools and dismal swamps; instead of willow groves, the usual repose and retreat of disconsolate lovers, I have only ranges of shaggy hemlock, and the gloomy shades of lofty pines. As to a harp, never having used one, there remains none, either to hang up, or to fling away. The people in these parts have no very musical ears, so that an un-Harvardinium story will serve instead of a song."

A letter which Mr. Bailey addressed to his classmate, John Adams, dated Kingston, Dec. 29th, 1755, brought one in return, of which a fac simile is here given.\*

The nature and amount of his labors at this time may be learned from an extract of a letter that he wrote, dated Jan. 4th, 1756:—"That you may have some conception of my situation, I must endeavor to acquaint you with my constant employ. From nine in the morning to the hour of ten in the evening, I am constantly in my school, except two hours, viz., from twelve to one, and from five to six. And this will by no means appear incredible, if you only consider the numbers under my inspection.

"My constant attendants in the day are fifty, not to reckon divers others, who come and go as the weather permits: in the evening I have between thirty and forty, so that the whole number of my scholars, at least, are eighty-five. I have three grammarians, sixteen arithmeticians, and thirty-two writers."

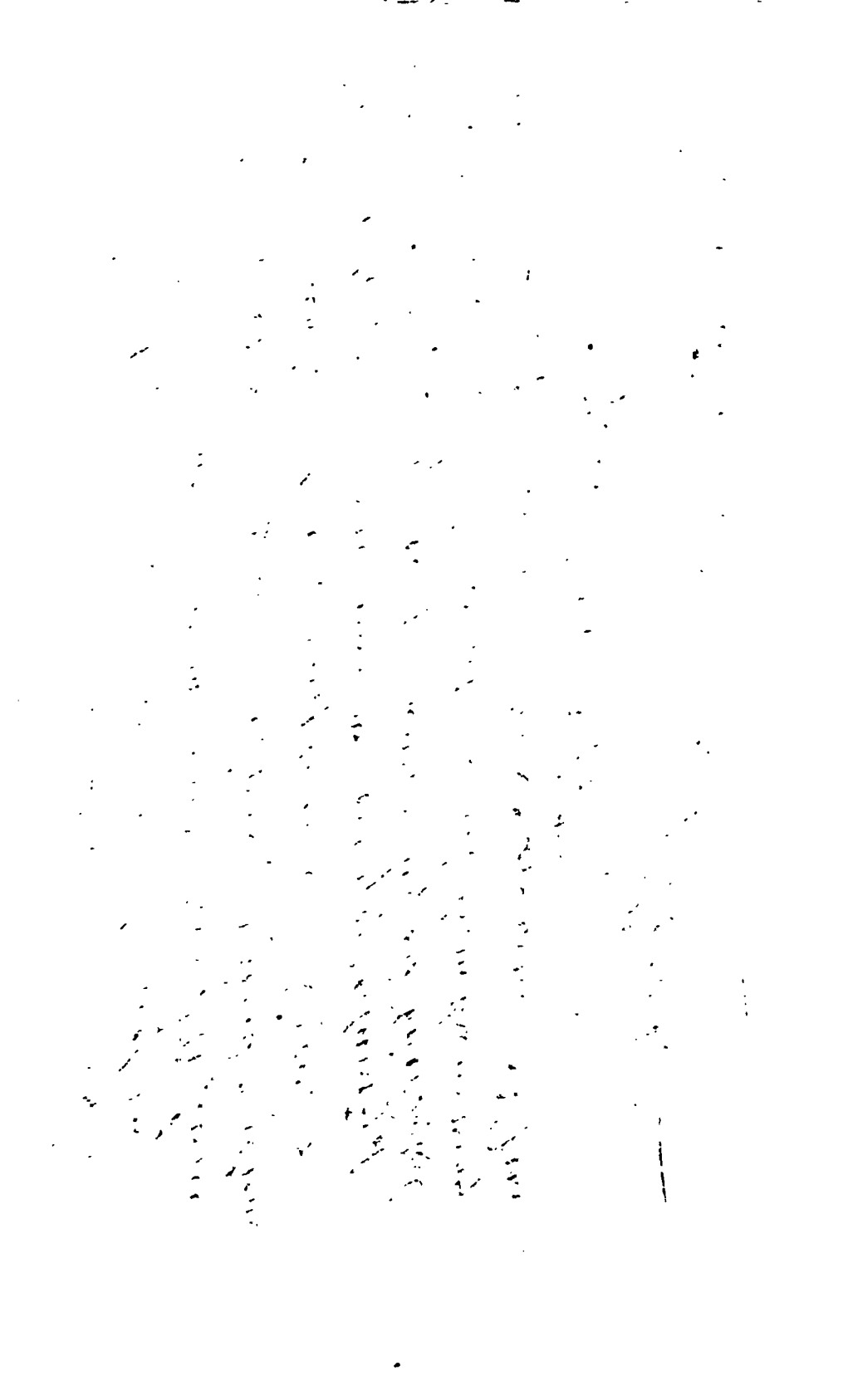
Shortly after this Mr. Bailey writes thus to a friend:

"Though whole forests of pine and hemlock cover this country, and oftentimes disturb our senses with their sooty influence, yet all this is but a trifle, compared with the sooty conversation which fills every private apartment, as well as more public places of resort. Not only taverns and retailers' shops are infected with the most poisonous balderdash, but even the temples of the Most High are not exempted.

"The late terrible dispensations of heaven have no manner

---

\* A fac simile of a letter from John Adams, afterwards President of the United States, is given opposite. This letter is thus superscribed: "To Mr. Jacob Bailey, Schoolmaster, at Kingston, N. Hampshire. These."





help, that all the *Orthodoxy* I can muster can heartily support  
the *new* the *amazing* *should*! ~~There~~ <sup>How</sup> one source of plea-  
sure is left me still. & that is the *dear* of my  
friends. & the more streams flow from this source  
the greater is my *dear* pleasure. I should & esteem  
to *glad* therefore of a correspondence with you! &  
I promise you I will improve every opportunity of  
writing to you. - If you see any of my old friends, tell  
them I am well & should take a line from them very  
kindly. - But I can add no more now, than that I am  
your friend & friend

your friend & friend

J. Adams

Pardon all our epistolary sins.

Dear Sir  
 Worcester Jan<sup>y</sup> 1 know not what day  
 1756.

I rec<sup>d</sup> your favour of Dec<sup>r</sup> 29. about 3 or 4 days after  
 it was arriv<sup>d</sup>. ~~The~~ The bearer left it at the  
 Tavern & proceed on his journey. So that I despair of ever  
 getting an opportunity of answering it, till this morn<sup>g</sup>.  
 I heartily sympathize with you in your affliction. which I am  
 the better qualify<sup>d</sup> to do as I and console myself to a like  
 case of lament. When I compare the loss, the delight  
 some friends of Howard, with the harsh & barbarous na-  
 ture of Jemmy ~~and~~ that now instantly grate any cord  
 I ~~can~~ can hardly imagine myself the same body that  
 once liv<sup>d</sup> to Am<sup>r</sup> Mather's affection, and now liv<sup>d</sup> in all the  
 other pleasures of ~~an~~ <sup>an</sup> accidental life. total & compleat



of effect upon them, except it be to render them more hardened and vile. Drinking, Sabbath-breaking, swearing, and immodesty prevail, and what will be the event, God only knows.

. . . I must tell you that I have the satisfaction of finding several blooming young creatures under my inspection, something inclined to virtue and modesty, but alas, I must leave these dear disciples in a few weeks, and I am afraid that after all they will be ruined by bad example."

*February 19th, 1756.* Concluded his keeping school at Kingston for the present. A few days after he returned to his native place. While there, he mentions that one "night there was a (religious) meeting at my father's." He adds, by way of observation: "Private meetings tend greatly to keep up the life and spirit of religion in the world, if managed with prudence and discretion."

Mr. Bailey returned to Kingston and opened a *private* school on the 1st of the following March, which, owing to some cause unexplained by him, terminated in about two weeks.

He then made a visit to Cambridge, and says, that on the 19th March "he saw the story of Queen Esther and Haman acted in the college chapel."

A second attempt to establish a private school in his native town, seems to have proved equally unsuccessful, for he records that about April 14 he "set up a small private school in Rowley," and about a month afterwards that he was "out of all employ."

On a journey which Mr. Bailey made to Boston shortly after this, he says, "it was our fortune to fall in with Sir William Pepperell, a familiar gentleman, with whom we had no inconsiderable diversion, till we arrived at Ipswich, at which place we parted."

"On the 16th of June," as his journal states, "there was a general muster through the province, none being excused upon any occasion from making their appearance in the field."

On the 21st of the same month Mr. Bailey went to Hampton, N. H., in accordance with previous arrangements to take charge of the public school in that place. He says: "About

the dusk of the evening, I was visited soon after my arrival by Dominie Weeks and the selectmen, with whom I had a wearisome conference.

"*June 22d.* This day first entered into my school. I found a vast difference between my scholars here and those I had at Kingston. Afterwards he writes: "My situation at Hampton is perfectly agreeable. I enjoy all the satisfaction and delight a person can receive from objects of sense. My lodgings are contiguous to the great road, and surrounded with a variety of entertaining prospects. I am favored with the conversation of scholars, men of sense and learning, and when the gentle shadows of evening approach, a company of easy, ingenuous young ladies afford us their pleasing society to walk abroad into the streets or neighboring fields to view the beauties of nature."

"*July 2d.* This day begin to train my scholars in military exercises. I propose to set apart every Friday afternoon for spelling, and to appoint the boy who remains uppermost after the last word in the appropriated portion, captain, and the other officers successively in order."

Some evidence of the estimation in which Mr. Bailey's services as a teacher were held by the people among whom he now was, will appear in the fact, that when he had been with them about four months, and was solicited to remove to a neighboring town, the citizens of Hampton increased his yearly pay £80, O. T.

The following was evidently intended for publication. Whether or not it ever appeared in print, is not known. It is, however, thought worthy of a place here, for its statement of certain practices prevailing when it was written, and also for the singular theory of the writer as to their cause.

"HAMPTON, Jan. 10th, 1757.

"*To Mr. Fowle, Publisher of the New Hampshire Gazette:*

'*Discite non temnere divos.*'—*Virgil.*

"It is enough to fill a considerate mind with the deepest horror, to see with what irreverence and inattention many peo-

ple attend sacred worship; they seem to rush into the Divine presence with the same lightness and airy appearance they carry to shows and places of diversion; even in their addresses to the Supreme Majesty of Heaven, when their minds ought to be filled with the profoundest solemnity and the most awful conceptions, how often do their eyes rove unguarded, and wander from one gay object to another, till their hearts become lost to all serious impressions, till some pleasing amusement steals upon the fancy, and warmly engages all their devotion.

"I shall add no more at present, but refer this question to the judgment of sober-thinking men, whether these disorders do not, in a great measure, proceed from both sexes being permitted to mingle in our public assemblies promiscuously?"

In April, 1758, Mr. Bailey's labors, as a teacher at Hampton, were concluded. The following is entered in his journal at that time :

"*April 1st, 1758.* This being the day I had appointed for any of my scholars who had an inclination to pay me a visit, I had my study almost full from nine o'clock to sunset, during which season I was inspired with many tender sensations. The little creatures who had been so long under my instruction, were exceedingly moved at parting, and the tokens of sorrow which they exhibited, had almost the same effect upon me.

*Observation.* — Nothing gives a person, I believe, a more sensible feeling, than a separation from those who have, upon every occasion, afforded him their kind instructions."

In speaking of a female acquaintance, whose disregard to sacred things, and even violent opposition and scoffing, had been succeeded by a love and reverence of her Maker, an interest in the spiritual state of others, and an "aversion to all kinds of immodesty and immoderation," then too common, Mr. Bailey observes: "I had an opportunity, of late, to take notice of the Divine power in influencing the hearts of several, in a truly wonderful and surprising manner, which plainly shows, that no human consideration can avail against the efficacious operations of Heaven."

What were the motives which induced him to leave Hamp-

ton, where, he says, he spent nearly two years very pleasantly, he has not stated.

Nor are there any means of knowing how he obtained a school in Gloucester, Mass., to which place he now removed, after a space of two months, in which he was unemployed. His first impressions may be learned from the following entry in his journal:

"*April 10th, 1758.* This day being Monday, first opened my school, but found everything vastly different from what I had before been accustomed to in those regions of rusticity where I had formerly placed my abode. The scholars, I observed, began to use every method to impose upon me, and I presently found myself in a very unhappy situation, on account of my perfect ignorance, both of their characters and the manner of instruction they had been used to under former masters."

After having been in Gloucester nearly two months, Mr. Bailey undertook a journey to Portsmouth, and lodged with Col. Weeks, in Hampton. The next day he went on to the place of his destination. . . . "It being Sunday, we should have found it something difficult to travel, had not the smallpox been in Hampton, so as to prevent the use of their meeting-house. . . . We reached Portsmouth just as the bells were ringing for one (o'clock), and came to Col. Warner's, where we met with exceeding handsome treatment. In the afternoon I went to church, but was so overcome with the extreme heat, the fatigues of the journey, and the want of rest, that I should have certainly fallen asleep, had not novelty kept me awake. At evening I returned to the Colonel's, and spent some time in conversation with Mrs. Warner, on the ceremonies of the church."

The next day, he adds: "I went to the printer's, where I engaged him to print a little book for children."

On the fourth of the same month we find him at Exeter, N. H., at the house of Rev. Mr. Odlin, where the association of (Congregational) ministers were assembled. "Here," says he, "I found Mr. Merrill, Mr. Parker, Pike, and others, who came with an expectation of hearing my approbation dis-

course. However, it was with the greatest difficulty I was prevailed upon to overcome my bashful humor so far as to read my discourse. When I had finished, I had the satisfaction to find it well received, and accordingly, after dinner, they gave me an approbation to preach the Gospel. O, that I may be improved as a blessing to mankind, and be an instrument of advancing the Redeemer's kingdom!"

The subject of this Memoir was now a regular clergyman, according to the rules of the predominant denomination. His labors in school teaching, during the three years since he left college, were arduous (as we have seen) and almost unintermitted. Under these circumstances, how he could have the opportunity of acquiring any large amount of theological knowledge, it were difficult to tell. Yet, those "having authority," in his and their view, gave him official permission, publicly, to teach and preach in the congregation. They must also have been satisfied of his personal piety, else they would hardly have consented to his occupying a position in which he would not only be regarded as a guide, but as an example to others.

"*July 19th.* Commencement day at Harvard College. . . About four o'clock in the afternoon meeting began, when I had to ascend the rostrum a second time, and to dispute from this question: *Imperium sive hominibus prorsus necessarium sit?*"

In the course of a few days, Mr. Bailey again visited Portsmouth. "When I arrived, about sunset, I called upon Mr. Fowle, where I found the little book printed, which I had prepared for children, after which I put up at Col. Warner's, and was very courteously received by him and his lady." On leaving this hospitable family, he received "seven louis from the Colonel, and to the value of as many pounds from his lady, to his own use."

The journeys of which we have spoken above, did not, it would seem, interrupt Mr. Bailey's school at Gloucester, which was kept for him by a friend in his absence.

It certainly appears strange to our present ideas of ministerial conduct, to read an entry in which he records that, being



in company on an evening in August of this year, he "played several games of cards."

On another journey, made to New Hampshire, he stopped at Col. Weeks's, in Hampton, on the 13th of August. He says, in his journal of that date: "Mr. Brackett called at the gate, where I waited upon him, and had an invitation to Portsmouth, which he imagined might be greatly for my advantage, as there was a mission vacant for a minister of the Church of England. This proposal wonderfully pleased both me and Mr. Weeks."

The next day found Mr. Bailey in Portsmouth, at the house of his benefactor, Col. Warner. Dr. Brackett interested himself in the matter about which he had spoken to Mr. Bailey in Hampton. But it would seem that, at present, inquiries only could be made, the result of which the Dr. promised to write to Mr. Bailey, after the return of the latter to Gloucester.

Mr. Bailey did not fail, however, to call on Col. Weeks, in Hampton, on his homeward journey — when he says: "I relieved their impatience to hear of my success at Portsmouth." He also called on a classmate of his, in Salisbury, and "acquainted him with" his "designs of visiting England."

On the evening of the same day, being in Rowley, he says: "I visited my parents, where I found my Aunt Bailey, who all cried out upon me when I discovered my resolutions of visiting London for orders; and after all, I found it extremely difficult, with all the arguments I could use, to gain them over to any favorable sentiments concerning the Church of England."

Mr. Bailey, on the next day, resumed his occupation of teaching in Gloucester.

"*October 21st.* This day, at evening, visited Capt. Gibbs, and acquainted him with my business at Portsmouth, who seemed much pleased at the prospect, and assured me that he should see Mr. Brown shortly, himself, in Boston, when he would use his interest in my behalf."

Under date of the 31st of the same month, Mr. Bailey writes to Dr. Brackett, at Portsmouth, N. H., who, it will be recollected, made the suggestion to him, that it might be for his

interest to visit the latter place. Mr. Bailey refers to the above conversation with Capt. Gibbs, and says, that while he engaged to use his interest with Mr. Brown, he "imagines it proper, in the mean time, to have it mentioned to some gentlemen in Portsmouth."

In a letter addressed to a friend, and dated Gloucester, February 26th, 1759, he says: "I was at Hampton the first of this month;" and afterwards, in the same letter: "They have almost made a Presbyterian preacher of me since I saw you."

It is difficult to tell to what this statement refers. Mr. Bailey had, for some months, been made, i. e., "approved" as a preacher, by a Congregational association. Does the above refer merely to a change of relations from that denomination to the Presbyterian, or a regular ordination as a Congregational minister? And had this anything to do to prevent Mr. Bailey's intention of entering the Church of England? We have no means of answering these questions.

An extract on page 40, has shown that the general ideas of what was proper in ministerial practice were not offended by clergymen who engaged in playing cards, and the subjoined extract will show that the public were equally tolerant with reference to their engaging in another amusement, as much objectionable to our modern notions of propriety.

"Rowley, May 30th, 1759. Towards evening, the actors came together at Mrs. Woodman's, when we attempted to perform the play of the Scapin. The actors were:—

<i>Octavian,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	J. BAILEY.
<i>Leander,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	_____.
<i>Gripe,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	_____.
<i>Thrifty,*</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	_____.
<i>Scapin,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	_____.
<i>Sly,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	_____.
<i>Shift,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	_____.
WOMEN.							
<i>Clara,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	POLLY P.
<i>Lucia,</i>	.	.	.	.	.	.	AMELIA.

---

\* The gentleman who sustained this character became a clergyman afterwards, if, indeed, he was not one at this time.

"After taking a dish of tea, we all together walked down to the meeting-house, and there diverted ourselves till dusk, then returning, we had an agreeable dance.

"*Hampton, June 3d.* At eight o'clock I went down to (Rev.) Mr. Cotton's, and took breakfast, under the most painful anxiety. After which, I resorted to the great chamber and perused my sermons, viewing, at the same time, with a pensive dulness, those surrounding scenes of beauty I had formerly, with so much pleasure, wandered through; a glorious sun had brightened all the fields, and painted the grass with golden splendors.

"When the bell rung, and we entered the meeting-house, I ascended the pulpit with the utmost agitation of spirit, but was enabled to go through the exercise with greater freedom than I expected. At noon, I had some compliments passed upon me, which were a little disagreeable. In the afternoon, preached from this text: 'And thou Solomon, my son,' etc. I had the satisfaction of having the utmost attention given, the whole congregation appeared serious, and when I came to address those dear young creatures, who had formerly been under my instruction, the concern which became visible in their countenances, affected me almost beyond measure. After meeting, I perceived that my discourses and performances had been greatly to the acceptance of Mr. Cotton. When family prayers were over, I walked up to Col. Weeks's. Here I received a great many compliments on account of my performances. Good heavens, preserve me from the mighty swellings of pride!"

Being in Cambridge on the 19th of July, Mr. Bailey was invited to preach three Sundays in Plymouth, Mass., which invitation he accepted. On the 21st, he began his journey from Gloucester, and reached Plymouth on the evening of the 22d. "The famous Deacon Foster soon paid us a visit, but was, I perceived, under some apprehensions lest I should be a North Shore man, an appellation for Arminians." Mr. Bailey preached both parts of the next day in Plymouth, and left early the following morning for Gloucester.

The following Sunday Mr. Bailey was again in the former

town, and preached all day. "About six o'clock," he says in his journal, "I returned to my lodgings, and repairing to my chamber, endeavored to study, but was prevented, by a prodigious tumult in the street. I looked out of my window, which faced the great street, from whence, to my great surprise, I beheld a vast number of boys and girls diverting themselves in the most noisy manner. At length they entered a ruinous building on the opposite side of the way, and spent the remainder of the day and part of the evening, in playing hide-and-go-seek. This is the more remarkable, as the Plymouth people have always been most zealous pretenders to religion, and still are the greatest sticklers in the country for orthodoxy."

Mr. Bailey fulfilled his agreement by preaching the third Sunday in Plymouth. Mr. Bailey also preached in "Gloucester Old Town," March 25th of this year, and at Cape Ann Harbor the 19th of the following August, as appears by endorsements on a MS. sermon of his, still in existence.

The following letter needs no remark :

" GLOUCESTER, Sept. 24th, 1759.

*" To Rev. Mr. Caner, in Boston :*

" Rev. Sir : — I take this opportunity to return you my grateful acknowledgments for the favor you have done me in lending me 'Potter upon Church Government.' I have carefully perused it with Bennet's Abridgment, and find all the objections against Episcopal ordination and conformity to the Church of England, answered entirely to my satisfaction. I would still entreat your advice, and should highly esteem the favor of receiving from you any further directions."

In a letter of the same date, addressed to Dr. Silvester Gardiner, at Boston, Mr. Bailey thanks him for the loan of his books, which had proved very satisfactory in determining his future course.

" You will have an opportunity," the letter proceeds to say, "of conversing with Capt. Gibbs, whose generous notice first recommended me to gentlemen of your persuasion. And if you think proper to encourage my proceedings, I shall immediately endeavor after proper testimonials."

Mr. Bailey remained in Gloucester till the 13th of December, to which date he probably kept school in that place.\*

A convenient opportunity is afforded, in this stage of his history, to make some observations on his character and acts up to this time.

His early associations and struggles have been pretty fully spoken of, principally in his own language.

Social distinctions were much more strongly marked a century since in New England than now. Even down to the Revolution, (as the writer is informed, by good authority,) the names of the members in the classes in the catalogue of Harvard College were arranged according to the social rank of the parents or guardians of the students.

Mr. Bailey's name stands *last* in the class of 1755. His father was a farmer, a calling now considered as respectable as most occupations, but then placed below many others, which at the present time do not, of necessity, confer any marks of distinction.

But when Mr. Bailey became a college student, he was at once admitted to the society of those who would not have noticed him as "a tiller of the soil."

Thus we have seen him, in his sophomore year, the guest of the reverend clergy and of lawyers of distinction; noticed, on more than one occasion, by Sir William Pepperell, and invited to visit that baronet; and dining with the father of his classmate, John Wentworth, the father then holding the office of Royal Governor of New Hampshire, which was afterwards conferred upon the son, who graduated in the same class with the subject of our sketch.

Mr. Bailey deserves the credit of so discharging his duties during the four years that he taught in different places, that the thoughts of his faithfulness must have been a satisfaction to him during the whole of his after life. Those of his journals and letter-books that remain, afford abundant evidence of his interest, not only in the intellectual progress of his scholars,

---

\* In a letter, written many years afterwards, he says that he "kept the Grammar School at Cape Ann Harbor for about two years."

but also in their manners and morals. To read them, one would suppose that he was engaged in a business to which he had devoted his life, and the labors in which were rewarded with abundance of honor and profit.

Many letters to his female scholars are preserved. The mere fact that the master would write to his pupils, must then have been considered as a remarkable condescension. These letters are not mere didactic compositions, excellent in themselves, but from their form not likely to be interesting to youth, but they show a wonderful degree of ingenuity, in their *adaptation* to those to whom they were addressed. Some of them contain stories of considerable length, whose object is to show the misery in which wickedness results, and especially some forms of wickedness peculiar to the time, and but lightly regarded. A publication of these writings would do honor to the head and heart of their author.

The schoolmaster also tried to refine the minds of his female scholars, by lending them such books as he thought conducive to that end. And from the mention he makes of his reading to them the works of suitable writers, it is fair to infer that his conversation with them was frequently of a higher character than that which at that time often marked the intercourse of parties in similar relations.

It is not intended here to speak in detail of the religious character of that portion of the last century, which is now under notice. But it is confidently believed that the piety of Mr. Bailey was as deep and genuine as that of most other church members and ministers of the time. That a religious man, and more than all, a minister, should in these, our days, play cards, engage in private theatricals, drink wine and punch, and occasionally dance, would destroy his influence, and subject him to discipline. But the very fact that these things were then done *without any concealment*, and with no apparent consciousness of their impropriety, shows, in the absence of all other proof, that public opinion on these matters, was different then. And we have other evidence to satisfy us that this view is correct. At this time it must be remembered that Mr. Bailey preached for Orthodox ministers and congrega-

tions, and no exception was taken to practices which must have been known.

The Plymouth deacon "was under some apprehensions, lest Mr. Bailey should be a North Shore man, an appellation for Arminians;" but the time had not then arrived for inquiring the minister's views on Total Abstinence; being satisfied whether he knew how many cards there were in a pack, or knowing whether he had ever worn the sock or buskin. These were evidently trivial things in the eyes of that generation. That the latter part of the Lord's day should be desecrated by the noise and sports of children in the public street, and near Forefathers' Rock, "frightened not the town from its propriety." Church members and officers were too much intent on metaphysical questions, to concern themselves much with the works by which, as the Scriptures assure us, a true faith may be discerned.

Mr. Bailey was one of the many who have left the ministry of the different denominations, and entered that of the Episcopal Church. It would be interesting to know his motives. Unfortunately, however, the series of his journals and letter-books at this time is broken. Could these missing documents be recovered, much light might be shed on this change. We learn, from those that remain, that it was not till nearly three years after he had graduated, that he ever attended the services of the Church of England,\* for he speaks of the "novelty" of what he witnessed in the church at Portsmouth, N. H., and that this novelty prevented his falling asleep from the combined effects of the heat, fatigue, and want of rest. His conversations with Mr. Warner and Dr. Brackett, of that place, doubtless had some effect. He had interviews with the Rev. Arthur Brown, Rector of Queen's Chapel. From what we can learn, however, the influence and exertions of Capt. or Esq. Gibbs, of Gloucester, were most efficacious in determining Mr. Bailey to change his religious relations. In several parts of his journal this gentleman is spoken of in

---

\* The corner stone of Christ Church, Cambridge, Mass., was not laid till 1763, five years after Mr. Bailey graduated at Harvard College.

terms of warm approbation. Mr. Bailey records his first meeting with him in the following words :

"*April 20th, 1758.* This evening had an interview with Esq. Gibbs,\* who behaved towards me with a degree of complaisance I had always been unaccustomed to, though, I must acknowledge, I have had my share even of extraordinary caresses from several persons, who have been in exalted stations. I was pleased with this gentleman's aversion to rusticity and profaneness."

Mr. Bailey's letter to Rev. Mr. Caner, then Rector of King's Chapel, in Boston, has been given in full, and also extracts from his letter to Dr. Silvester Gardiner, at that time senior warden of the same church. Both these gentlemen loaned books to the subject of this Memoir, and undoubtedly had conversations with him on the subject of the Church. Beyond what has been mentioned, the materials for knowing the progress and means of the change in his religious opinions, do not now exist. But it is the candid belief of the writer, that Mr. Bailey was qualified to discharge the duties of a minister to any Orthodox congregation over which he might be called to settle.

\* The writer of this Memoir has been able to obtain but scanty information respecting the gentleman spoken of. The following was politely communicated by John J. Babson, Esq., in a letter, dated Gloucester, May 16th, 1851 :

"I can only, at the present moment, say a word of Mr. Gibbs. Of him all my knowledge may be expressed in a very few words. He first appears in Gloucester on the occasion of his marriage, November 30, 1727, to Mary, daughter of Thomas Sanders, a shipwright, who lived an obscure life here, but whose descendants, for three or four generations, emerged into considerable notice. • • • • •

"Mr. Gibbs was a merchant in good standing, taking little part, I suppose, in town affairs, as I do not find his name often mentioned in connection with any public business.

"No children are recorded to him, and, I think, there is no doubt that his marriage was unproductive of issue.

"Mr. Gibbs is one of the few whose death is given by our Town Clerk, in office at his decease: — 'Daniel Gibbs, Esq., died March 21st, 1762, in the 61st year of his age.' 'Mrs. Mary Gibbs, wife of Daniel Gibbs, Esq., died January 17th, 1769, in the 60th year of her age.'"



## CHAPTER IV.

MR. BAILEY left Gloucester, for Boston, on the 13th December, 1759. As he walked the whole distance, he was obliged to stop one night on the road. He lodged at Norwood's tavern, in Lynn. Speaking of the company which he found there, he says: "We had among us a soldier belonging to Capt. Hazen's company of rangers, who declared that several Frenchmen were barbarously murdered by them, after quarters were given, and the villain added, I suppose to show his importance, that he 'split the head of one asunder, after he fell on his knees to implore mercy.' A specimen of New England clemency!

"*December 14th.* This morning we arose with the dawning light, and travelled on towards Boston. The wind blew from the N. W., and the weather was excessive cold. I presently found myself unable to proceed on my journey, which Mr. D. observing, he was so kind as to let me ride to the ferry, while he travelled on foot.

"The sun had been risen about an hour when we arrived at Winnisimmet, but it was almost ten before we made Boston. . . . I then proceeded to Dr. (Silvester) Gardiner's, but, to my sorrow, found him very sick, and in such a situation that he could not be spoken with. This put me under a great disadvantage, as the ship, I was informed, would infallibly sail within a few days. I perceived, however, that the Dr. took notice of my affairs in the intervals of his disorder. His son, Jeremy, was heartily disposed to promote my interest, and engaged to see my business settled to my content. . . . In the afternoon I visited (Rev.) Mr. Caner, who advised me to proceed immediately to Cambridge, for proper testimonials from the President and Fellows of the college, especially with regard to my conduct while I was a member of that society.

" *December 15th.* About ten o'clock I arrived at college, and entered those walls, where I had formerly resided with so much satisfaction. . . . I waited upon the President.\* He kindly invited me into a parlor, and behaved towards me in a genteel and obliging manner, not only before, but after I had manifested my request. When I desired some testimonials of my moral conduct at college, he answered with mildness, and told me that a diploma would be the most advantageous thing I could possibly carry from that society, and added, that it should cost me nothing for the seal. I thanked him, and returned to college, after which a freshman waited upon me with a copy of a diploma. . . . About three o'clock I waited again upon the President, who behaved towards me not only with incivility, but a kind of barbarous roughness. Notwithstanding the weather was extreme cold, he caused me to tarry in an outer kitchen for near half an hour, without any fire to mitigate the prevailing severity, and finally refused to give me any testimonials, although it was well known that I was never punished for the breach of any college laws. He, however, signed my diploma, and sent me to the gentlemen of the corporation for the like favor.

" About six o'clock I waited upon Mr. Caner, and was constrained to give him the disagreeable news of my unsuccessful journey to Cambridge. Upon which he declared, with some emotion, that all my affairs were entirely confounded, and that it would be next to impossible for me to act with success. This afforded me a great deal of uneasiness, till he informed me that he had drawn my recommendatory letters to the society and his lordship, the Bishop of London; and now, says he, if you can prevail upon the ministers of this town to sign these letters, you may possibly succeed, but if they refuse, nothing further can be done.

" These discouragements whetted my industry, and made me careful to lose no time. I proceeded directly to Dr. Cutler, who readily put his name to the papers, as did likewise Mr. Troutbeck, to my great satisfaction.

---

\* Rev. Edward Holyoke, A. M.

*"December 16th.* This day being Sunday, went to Christ Church. Dined with Dr. Cutler. . . . In the evening, waited upon Mr. Caner, where I found Mr. Apthorp, who did me the favor of signing my letters. I was very much pleased with his conversation, and that modesty he discovered in proposing his sentiments.

*"December 17th.* Called, in the evening, upon Parson Hooper,\* who behaved towards me with a great deal of complaisance. After looking over my testimonials, he declared them sufficient, but, nevertheless, refused to set his name to my recommendatory letters, objecting, that Mr. Caner had drawn them up without sufficient caution.

. . . . .  
*"December 21st.* This day, attended prayers, and dined with Mr. Caner. This gentleman has, upon every occasion, shown me an infinite deal of kindness. May Heaven prosper all my benefactors! . . . . .

*"December 26th.* This morning, waited upon Mr. Paxon, who engaged to use his interest with the commander of the Hind in my behalf, for a passage to England.

. . . . .  
*"January 6th, 1760.* This morning, early, received orders from Capt. Bond, to wait upon him the next day at his lodgings. After church, went into Mr. Caner's, and tarried till dinner, but having received an invitation from Mr. Paxon, I waited upon him, was politely received, introduced into a fine parlor among several agreeable gentlemen. I found here the famous Kit Minot, Mr. McKensie, and one Mr. Stuart, a pretty young gentleman. I observed that our company, though chiefly upon the gay order, distinguished the day by a kind of reverent decorum. Our conversation was modest and perfectly innocent, and I scarce remember my ever being in any company where I could behave with greater freedom. After attending divine service at Trinity Church, and hearing a sermon by Rev. Mr. Hooper, I waited upon Mr. Caner, and received from his own hands into my custody, those letters of

---

\* Rev. William Hooper, Rector of Trinity Church, Boston.

recommendation which he had prepared to his grace the Archbishop of Canterbury, his lordship the Bishop of London, and the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts.

• • • • •  
“*January 10th.* • • • Towards evening the boat appeared. In the boat's crew I discovered a young man, whose appearance and behavior pleased me more than all I had seen. I immediately applied to him for advice, and he courteously answered, that it was my best way to go directly on board. Accordingly, the boat was loosed in a few minutes, and I found myself floating upon the water. In our way to the ship we met Capt. Bond in a small schooner, returning towards the shore. He desired me, with all the insolence of power, to step into the schooner, while he entered the boat and proceeded to land. The wind blowing strong, it was some time before we could get on board the ship. At length, with difficulty, I clambered up the sides, and found myself in the midst of a most horrid confusion. The deck was crowded full of men, and the boatswain's shrill whistle, with the swearing and hallooing of the petty officers, almost stunned my ears. I could find no retreat from this dismal hubbub, but was obliged to continue jostling among the crowd above an hour, before I could find anybody at leisure to direct me. At last, Mr. Letterman, the captain's steward, an honest Prussian, perceiving my disorder, introduced me through the steerage to the lieutenant. I found him sitting in the great cabin. He appeared to be a young man, scarce twenty years of age, and had in his countenance some indications of mildness. Upon my entrance, he assumed a most important look, and with a big voice demanded to know my request. I informed him that I was a passenger on board the Hind, by the permission of Capt. Bond, and desired that he would be civil enough to direct me to the place of my destination. He replied, in this laconic style: ‘Sir, I will take care to speak to one of my mates.’ This was all the notice, at present, from these great nothings. But, happily, on my return from the cabin, I found my chest and bedding carefully stowed away in the steerage. In the

mean time, the ship was unmoored, and we fell gently down to Nantasket.

"The cold was extreme at this season, the wind blowing hard from the north-west, and what added vastly to my affliction, was the disagreeable conversation around me. I spent an hour in walking under the half-deck, during which time I observed a young gentleman at a distance, walking, with a pensive air in his countenance. Coming near him, he advanced forward, and in a courteous manner invited me down between decks, to a place he called his berth. I thanked him for his kindness, and readily followed him down a ladder into a dark and dismal region, where the fumes of pitch, bilge water, and other kinds of nastiness almost suffocated me in a minute. We had not proceeded far before we entered a small apartment, hung round with damp and greasy canvas, which made, on every hand, a most gloomy and frightful appearance, but a little superior, in my imagination, to the infernal abodes, where darkness and horror remain unmolested. In the middle stood a table of pine, varnished over with nasty slime, furnished with a bottle of rum and an old tin mug, with an hundred and fifty bruises and several holes, through which the liquor poured in as many streams. This was quickly filled with toddy, and as speedily emptied by two or three companions, who presently joined us in this doleful retreat. Not all the scenes of horror about us could afford me much dismay, till I received the news that this detestable apartment was allotted by the captain to be the place of my habitation during the voyage! I endeavored to soothe the melancholy ideas that began to intrude upon my mind, by considering that I should, through the permission of a favorable Providence, shortly be in brighter regions.

"Our company continually increased, when the most shocking oaths and curses resounded from every corner, some loading their neighbors with bitter execrations, while others uttered imprecations too awful to be recorded. The persons present were: first, the captain's clerk, the young fellow who gave me the invitation. He was born in Northampton, about sixty

miles from London, and was educated to the stationery employment. I found him a person of considerable reading and observation, who had fled his native country on account of a young lady to whom he was engaged; but his parents, for certain reasons, appeared so violently against the match, that he was prevented from marrying. He would sometimes get drunk, and at other times behave in a most unaccountable manner. Second: Another was one John Tuzz, a midshipman, and one of my messmates; he proved a good-natured, honest fellow, was apt to blunder in his conversation, but too frequently gave it a dash of extravagant profaneness. Third: Another of my messmates, named Butler, was a minister's son, who lived near Worcester, in England. His mother was a Bailey, and himself a descendant from Butler, the author of *Hudibras*. He appeared to be a man of fine sense, considerable breeding, a stiff Jacobite; his language, upon all occasions, was extremely profane and immodest, yet nobody seemed a greater admirer of delicacy in women than himself. My fourth companion was one Spears, one of the mates, a most obliging, ingenious young gentleman; he informed me that the captain had recommended me to him, and that he should endeavor to make the passage as agreeable as possible, and accordingly he treated me, upon every occasion, with uncommon civility and kindness, and was as tender of me in my cruel sickness, as if he had been a brother, and what I most valued him for, was his aversion to swearing and obscenity. Fifth: One of our company, this evening, was the carpenter of the ship. He looked like a country farmer, drank excessively, swore roundly, and talked extravagantly. Sixth: Another was one Shephard, an Irish midshipman, the greatest champion of profaneness that ever fell under my notice. The sacred name, at every word, was uttered with the strongest emphasis, and I scarce ever knew him to open his mouth without roaring out a tumultuous volley of stormy oaths and imprecations. After we had passed away an hour or two together, Mr. Lisle, the lieutenant of marines, joined our company. He appeared about fifty years old, of a gigantic stature, and quickly distinguished

himself by the quantities of liquor he poured down his throat. He also was very profane.

"About nine o'clock the company began to think of supper, when a boy was called into the room. Nothing in human shape did I ever see before so loathsome and nasty. He had on his body a fragment only of a check shirt, his bosom was all naked and greasy, over his shoulders hung a bundle of woollen rags, which reached in strings almost down to his feet, and the whole composition was curiously adorned with little shining animals. The boy no sooner made his appearance, than one of our society accosted him in this gentle language: 'Go, you . . . rascal, and see whether lobsouse is ready.' Upon this the fellow began to mutter and scratch his head, but after two or three hearty curses, went for the galley, and presently returned with an elegant dish, which he placed on the table. It was a composition of beef and onions, bread and potatoes, minced and stewed together, then served up with its broth, in a wooden tub, the half of a quarter cask. The table was furnished with two pewter plates, the half of one was melted away, and the other, full of holes, was more weather-beaten than the sides of the ship; one knife with a bone handle, one fork with a broken tine, half a metal spoon, and another, taken at Quebec, with part of the bowl cut off. When supper was ended, the company continued their exercise of drinking, swearing and carousing, till half an hour after two, when some of these obliging gentlemen made a motion for my taking some repose. Accordingly, a row of greasy canvas bags, hanging overhead by the beams, were unlashed. Into one of them it was proposed I should get, in order to sleep, but it was with the utmost difficulty I prevented myself from falling over on the other side. Here I endeavored to compose myself, but had no rest this night, except a few uneasy snatches.

"*January 11th.* In the morning I awoke with ten thousand dismal apprehensions ringing in my ears, which gave me a very melancholy idea of my present situation, but being sensible that I must, for some time, endure it, I arose and put on as

much cheerfulness as possible. We expected to sail every minute, till evening, when, the wind becoming unfair, we were obliged to continue still at anchor.

*"January 12th.* This day began to reconcile myself, in some measure, to my new method of living. • Nothing remarkable happened, except that the captain and officers endeavored to conceal a negro servant, belonging to Capt. Ellis, of Beverly, ✓ but Mr. Ellis, understanding his business, recovered his servant by authority.

*"Towards evening,* several passengers came on board, viz.: Mr. Barons, late Collector, Major Grant, Mr. Baron's footman, and Mrs. Cruthers, the purser's wife, a native of New England. After some considerable dispute, I had my lodgings fixed in Mr. Pearson's berth, where Master Robant, Mr. Baron's man, and I, agreed to lie together in one large hammock.

*"As the Sabbath approached,* I critically observed the behavior of our people, but found not the least respect paid to the approaching season by one person on board.

*"January 13th, (Sunday.)* This day spent in a very disagreeable and scandalous manner, without any kind of divine worship. Our people, instead of keeping the Sabbath day holy, passed it away either in diversions or quarrels. • • • This evening the barge returned from a cruise to one of the neighboring islands, when Mr. Glover, the lieutenant, and Mr. Pearson, gave an account of the following adventure. They came to a house where lived a man, who, in our country dialect, is called a substantial farmer; he had several pretty young daughters, whom he had taken great pains to educate. They could not only read and write, but understood letters to a considerable degree of perfection. Every lady admired their innocence, modesty, and decent behavior, but the neighboring youths, in general, imagined themselves too inferior to offer their addresses to these excellent virgins. Mr. Glover and Mr. Pearson, however, had the happiness, by means of laced clothes, and loud, rattling oaths and imprecations, to get introduced to their company. They followed their suit with all expedition, and, in less than two days, seduced and ruined a couple of fine creatures, the one about sixteen, the other about



eighteen years old. That this was really true, the following accident discovered. As Mr. Pearson was taking something out of his pocket-book, he dropped a paper that I took up and read, which was as follows:—

“‘DEAR SIR:—’Tis with the utmost regret I am forced to part with you, and shall have many a sorrowful hour till you return.

“‘I cannot think you will ever be so cruel as to forget one who has sacrificed my innocence, and, I fear, my happiness, to your pleasure.

“‘Pray let me hear from you before you sail.

“‘I am, sir, yours forever,

“‘SALLY.’”

Five days passed, after the events recorded in the last extract, and found the fleet still at anchor in Nantasket Roads.

“*January 19th.* This morning, almost before daylight appeared, I awoke with the clangor of trumpets and the noise of whistles, and the bustling of all hands upon deck, by which I perceived that the ship was, at last, unmooring, and that we were preparing to sail. This instantly drove me from my repose, upon the quarter-deck, where I found a most serene and pleasant morning. In less than an hour, the whole fleet was under sail, and enjoyed a gentle breeze till we had sailed some leagues to the eastward of the lighthouse. Our fleet consisted of seven sail, viz.: the Hind, a twenty-gun ship, the Maria, the Ruby, the Molly, the Genoa Packet, the Galley, and the St. Paul. I stood with a melancholy feeling, to see the New England shores grow further and further distant, till the tops of the mountains, and, at last, the whole country, entirely disappeared. The wind quickly died away, and it was perfectly calm for an hour or two, which gave us some fearful apprehensions, but towards evening it sprang up a little to the eastward of south. It blew fresh, and we were obliged to keep the ship close hauled to the wind, which caused a great motion, and I presently was obliged to repair to my hammock, extremely sick, and so continued all night.”

The daily occurrences of the voyage are related with more or less minuteness. Mr. Bailey mentions several acts of kindness and attention to him on the part of the petty officers of the ship, but which were, nevertheless, accompanied with much that was unpleasant and repulsive. Thus, they with whom he dined, by invitation, one day, "tried to tempt him into some fashionable excesses, and as the acquaintance increased, were perpetually criticising his conversation." On one occasion he dined with the doctor of the ship, who did not hesitate to express Deistical, and even Atheistical, opinions.

He states, in his journal, after he had been at sea a few days, that "at this season I was much emaciated with sickness, and oftentimes not less disconcerted at the abominable profaneness that everywhere prevailed, more especially in the apartment to which I had the misfortune to be confined."

The following is gladly inserted, as it makes the captain of the ship appear in a more amiable light than previously: "I cannot help taking notice of the kindness of our captain to me, which, though conferred with a good deal of insolence, yet was exceedingly comfortable to me in my reduced condition, since he ordered his servant to send me something every day from his table."

After a terrific storm,\* which nearly proved the destruction of the ship and all on board of her, their ears were saluted, on the morning of Feb. 16th, with the joyful cry of *land!* "Such was my satisfaction," says our voyager, "at the sight of the British shores, which I had so long sighed for in my native country, that I could not forbear shedding tears upon the occasion. . . . Exactly at twelve o'clock we came to anchor between St. Helens and Spithead, it being completely, to an hour, twenty-eight days, from the time we weighed anchor at Nantasket. The next day, (Sunday,) about eleven o'clock, the barge was hoisted out, and the captain, with Mr. Barons and

---

\* Mr. Bailey subsequently speaks, in his journal, of the accounts which the newspapers contained, of the disasters occasioned by this storm. The *Hind* was signalized by the *Ramilles*, a ninety-gun ship, on the 16th inst. That very night, this ship was shipwrecked, and of a crew of seven hundred and thirty-four persons, only twenty-five escaped with their lives.

his attendants, were preparing to land at Portsmouth, when I requested leave of our haughty commander to visit the shore, but he returned me answer, with all the insolence of tyranny, that 'I must wait for the return of the boat.' This disappointment raised my spirits to a prodigious degree, but I was constrained to vent my disappointment in silence. I took, however, a social dinner with the doctor, the purser, and his agreeable consort, after which, Mr. Major, a young gentleman who had conveyed his chest on board the Hind, but was disappointed of a passage, joined our company. Towards evening he was disposed to return towards Portsmouth, and having a large boat alongside, I requested the favor of accompanying him to the shore, which he readily granted. Having taken my leave of all friends in the ship, I left it with the greatest satisfaction, but not without a strong inclination of seeing again those who had been companions in so many dangers. In our way to the harbor, we passed by a vast number of ships, either lying at anchor, or getting under sail. In less than half an hour we landed on the strand, in Portsmouth, which was covered with a great multitude of people, chiefly boys and servants, at their several diversions. This opened to me a new scene, and quickly made me sensible that I was in a country different from New England. The gentleman who came on shore with me was a stranger to the city as well as myself, which occasioned me a great deal of uneasy confusion, since I was not acquainted with any living person. While I stood staring around me in the wildest disorder, a young lad came down to the water, and offered to carry my chest to any place I should direct. I, in a moment, recollected that it might be proper to have it repositied in some wagon-house, till it could be conveyed up to London. Accordingly, he put it down at the Blue Anchor, where I was informed that it would be put into the wagon the next morning."

One of the officers of the Hind had given Mr. Bailey a letter of introduction to a lady who kept a boarding-house in Portsmouth, and immediately on his arrival there, he set out in search of her dwelling. He rambled through the streets, inquiring of many persons where the person lived to whom his

letter was addressed. For a long time he could gain no information, till, at last, "an honest-looking tar" offered to conduct him to the place of his destination. "I made no scruple," says Mr. Bailey, "to commit myself to his direction, especially when he told me that he belonged to the *Diana*, the ship in which Mr. Greaton\* took his passage for England." The letter of introduction procured him a welcome, and, at last, he found himself in comfortable quarters, waiting for the first public conveyance to London.

The reader can hardly have failed to remark the difficulties which Mr. Bailey encountered, and the trials to which he was subjected in his efforts to obtain orders in the Church of England. We cannot easily account for the coldness with which he was treated by the President of Harvard College, or the refusal of that officer to certify the acknowledged fact, that his character was unexceptionable while he was a member of that institution. This refusal caused Mr. Bailey much anxiety and trouble, and nearly prevented his obtaining the testimonials required by the ecclesiastical authority in England.

Although the subject of this Memoir found friends who had sufficient influence to secure him a passage in an armed ship, yet, it would seem, he could not obtain decent accommodations on board, and that he was even obliged to share his hammock with the man servant of one of the passengers. The captain treated him with a superciliousness little to be expected from one of a profession with which civility and politeness are uniformly associated. The petty officers of the ship, including the surgeon, appear to have been almost brutes in human shape, who bore the royal commission. Their passenger was an educated man, a licensed clergyman of the Congregational denomination, and the object of his voyage to England was to obtain orders in the Established Church. Yet their profaneness appears to have been unrestrained in his presence; they sought to tempt him into some fashionable excess; they made severe reflections on his native country;

---

\* Afterwards Rector of Christ Church, Boston, Mass.

and, even when he was a guest at their table, they criticised his pronunciation and manner of speaking.

We know not if Mr. Bailey's experience in obtaining testimonials, and on his voyage to England, was a fair specimen of that of other candidates, in general, for holy orders. If it were so, we cannot but admire the perseverance, and respect the strong principle which influenced these young men, not only to sacrifice the time and money necessary to the voyage, and to incur the dangers of the sea, but which could support them under the trial of being associated, for an indefinite time, with unmannerly, drunken, profane and licentious companions. We are sure, that a person of a similar standing with Mr. Bailey, who should *now* take passage in an armed ship, would not suffer as he was compelled to do. The naval service has gentlemen for its officers, and among them are bright ornaments of the religion which they profess.

On the second day after Mr. Bailey's arrival in Portsmouth, he commenced his journey to London. The public conveyance in which he took passage, is thus described by him: "These stage machines are built in the form of a common coach, but somewhat larger; they are drawn by six horses, are capable of carrying six persons, with their bundles, which must never exceed fourteen pounds to a single passenger. Besides the proper body of the coach, there is a large apartment erected behind, which frequently contains seven or eight people. But it is very uncomfortable riding there in stormy weather, it being wholly uncovered, and exposed to the open air." Of the passengers that occupied the coach with him on this journey, he says: "A greater variety of characters and employments in life, perhaps were never before assembled together in so narrow an apartment."

In the evening of the same day, Mr. Bailey reached the city of London, and lodged at "the great Spread Eagle Inn, Grace Church Street." The next morning he called upon "Mr. Butler, a noted bookseller, near King Street, Cheapside," and delivered to him a letter of introduction. Through his assistance he engaged lodgings with a family, where other American clergymen and candidates for orders had resided. The same day

he found Mr. Greateon, who had visited England to obtain ordination.

On the 27th February, the subject of our Memoir waited upon Rev. Dr. Bearcroft, the Secretary of the Society for Promoting the Gospel in Foreign Parts, and delivered to him some letters, "together with a will, wherein a New England lady had left a legacy of £1,000 sterling to the society." The same day he called on Rev. Dr. Nichols, and presented him with letters for his lordship the Bishop of London.

"*February 28th.* This morning Mr. Greateon and I waited upon the Archbishop of Canterbury,\* at his palace at Lambeth. We had the good fortune to find him at home. After being conducted, with a vast deal of ceremony, through extended walks, grand halls, and spacious chambers, we were, at length, presented to his grace, who immediately rose from his seat and gave us his blessing, before we had an opportunity to kneel. He then desired us to sit, and conversed with us in the most easy and polite manner. He inquired of me concerning the war in America, and asked me 'what the sentiments of people were, in general, concerning Col. Amherst?' I answered him with caution and coolness, more than was necessary. After he had conversed freely for more than half an hour, taking pen and paper, he wrote to Dr. Nichols, that upon the recommendation I was able to produce, he need not be under any scruple of admitting me to ordination. . . .

"*February 29th.* This morning I arose full of anxious concern, and, not tarrying for my breakfast, walked near two miles, to the place of my examination. I was presently introduced to the Doctor, (Nichols,) who received me with all that mildness which he always assumes towards his dependants. Requesting me to sit, he proceeded to ask me a great number of questions concerning my country, relations, and education. I observed that my answers appeared to give him satisfaction. At length, examination came on. He gave me, first, the Greek Testament, and desired me to render a portion of it either into Latin or English, according to my inclination. He likewise

---

\* Dr. Secker.

gave me liberty to choose what book or chapter I pleased. I happened to open about the middle of the first chapter of Matthew, and passed through this part of my examination with ease. The next book he put into my hand was Grotius de Veritate. Here I was not at my liberty, but he heard me to the first section in the Second Book, where I read off that and two sections besides, into English, without receiving any correction. The last part of the examination was, to render the Thirty-nine Articles into Latin, and then to explain it. This I had the happiness to perform, not only to his acceptance, but even far beyond what I could wish. After I had passed through the several forms used on these occasions, he dismissed me, with a declaration that he had the pleasure to find me qualified, and would recommend me for ordination the next Sunday.

. . . . .

*“ March 2d.* This morning arose early, and met my companions, according to agreement. . . . I found Mr. Morton, a young gentleman from Philadelphia, arrived before me. . . . When we had finished our breakfast, a couple of coaches appeared, to convey us to Fulham. We had a pleasant ride through a beautiful country, for the space of five miles beyond the town. . . . About ten, we came in sight of the bishop’s palace. . . . The servants conducted us into a very odd apartment. We found, however, a good fire, which afforded us a very seasonable refreshment, as the weather was chilly. We were presently joined by several other gentlemen, candidates for ordination. His lordship the Bishop of Rochester,\* soon arrived, when we were called into his presence. Here we were obliged to subscribe the Thirty-nine Articles. The bell, a few minutes after, ringing for prayers, we were all shown into the chapel, where, after taking three oaths, we were admitted to deacons’ orders by the Bishop, with the assistance of Dr. Nichols and another clergyman. When we returned from the chapel, we were conducted into a vast large hall, entirely composed of the finest marble. It was arched

---

\* Dr. Zachary Pearce.

overhead, and was at least twenty feet high. All the walls, as well as the grand canopy, were covered with the most striking figures, so that this spacious apartment might truly be said to be fine without hangings, and beautiful without paint. In the middle stood a long table, covered with silver dishes. We sat down with his lordship of Rochester, the Bishop of London's lady, and several others, being, in all, twenty-one. We had ten servants to attend us, and were served with twenty-four different dishes, dressed in such an elegant manner, that many of us could scarce eat a mouthful. The drinking vessels were either of glass or of solid gold.\* The Bishop was very sociable at table, but was seen to behave with a very important gravity. After paying eleven shillings a-piece for our orders, we drove into the city, and took a dish of tea together, and then parted in friendship.

*"March 5th.* This morning waited upon the famous Mr. Benjamin Franklin, and received an invitation to dine. • • His son dined with us, a barrister-at-law. He is a gentleman of good education, but has passed away the flower of his youth in too many extravagancies.

• • • • •  
*"March 14th.* This day was appointed for public fasting and prayer through Great Britain, to implore the divine blessing on the arms of the nation. In the afternoon, walked abroad with Messrs. Greateon and Morton. After rambling several miles, we came to Moorfields, and passing through them, we entered the lane which leads to Mr. Whitfield's famous tabernacle. We saw multitudes of people crowding along from

---

\* In reading this description, allowance should be made for the novelty of the sights which met Mr. Bailey's eyes on this occasion. His early days were passed in humble circumstances, and though afterwards he had some opportunity of associating with persons of wealth and refinement, yet it can hardly be supposed that he had ever been present at any entertainment in which much display of luxury and wealth had been made. Besides, America could not compete with England in the style of furniture and decorations of buildings. His description of his visit at the house of the Bishop, was, no doubt, according to his impressions at the time. That he was mistaken, in some degree, we know, from his remark, that "the drinking vessels were either of glass or solid gold." It has been stated, by competent authority, that, even at the present day, services of gold plate are composed of silver, more or less heavily gilded.



every quarter, to hear the entertaining impertinence of that gentleman. By the calculation I was enabled to make, I am sensible there was not less than ten thousand persons in and about the tabernacle. Here were many serious people of the lower sort, several of fashion, and a great number of villains, who take the advantage to pick the pockets of the innocent rabble. Upon our return, we met Mr. Milner, a young gentleman from New York, who came over for orders. . But Mr. Morton being obliged, with me, to wait upon Dr. Nichols, we parted with these gentlemen, and walked to Piccadilly. . The Doctor met us at the door, and with an easy smile informed us that he had been so happy as to procure us a private ordination, which would be conferred the next Sunday, by the Bishop of Peterboro'\*. This news was very joyful to us, who wished for nothing more than to have our affairs settled.

\* \* \* \* \*

"*March 16th, (Sunday.)* This being the day appointed for my admission into priests' orders, Mr. Morton called at my lodgings a little after eight. We took coach, and ordered the coachman to drive to Piccadilly. We stopped at Dr. Nichols' door, and found that obliging gentleman ready to enter upon our affairs. We were soon conducted into the presence of his lordship the Bishop of Peterboro', and, under his direction, took all the oaths which the canons of our church require upon these sacred occasions. We were next conducted, with the usual ceremonies, into St. James' Church, and there received ordination from the Reverend Bishop. The whole affair was conducted with the utmost solemnity. O, that our minds may ever be sensible of the weight and importance of this sacred office to which we are now appointed, and may the Divine influence animate and direct our actions to the glory of Heaven and the happiness of those beings which surround us! The ordination being over, we returned into the Doctor's apartment, and there paid half a guinea for our orders, and half a crown to the man who attended at the altar. We received orders from our reverend superiors, to partake of

---

\* Dr. Terrick.

the Sacrament at the King's Parish Church of St. Martins-in-the-Fields. We had an excellent sermon, suitable to the occasion, and parted from the holy ordinance in some measure sensible of the favors Heaven had bestowed upon us, in making everything succeed to our wishes.

"*March 17th.* . . . We arrived at the Bishop of London's palace (at Fulham), and were admitted, with usual ceremony, into the secretary's apartment, from whose hand we received our license, after paying £1 18s. 6d. We had the honor of being introduced to His Lordship's presence. He was sitting with his consort in a beautiful parlor, with his hat upon his head. When we approached him, he endeavored to move, but with the greatest difficulty. We came around on the other side of the table, and saw, in the face of His Lordship, an object which at once excited horror and compassion. His face was swollen to a prodigious degree, and his tongue, infected with some terrible disorder, hung out of his mouth, and extended down his chin. The good Bishop, unable to speak, looked earnestly upon us, as if he meant to convey us a blessing. Having subscribed the articles required, we took leave of His Lordship.\*

. . . . .  
 " *March 19th.* Mr. Morton calling on me, we dressed in our robes, and went, first, to wait upon Mr. Franklin. We found him and his son at breakfast, with several ladies, who prevailed upon us to take a dish of tea. After engaging to dine with them the next Tuesday, we went to St. Martin's, expecting to meet the Venerable Society. We tarried prayers, but not finding those reverend gentlemen we wanted, we repaired to the chapter-house, and were introduced into a handsome apartment, with the Archbishop's gentlemen, and other attendants. About one, the assembly broke up, when we had an opportunity of seeing several bishops. . . . His

---

\* This was Bishop Thomas Sherlock, the antagonist of Bishop Hoadley, in the Bangorian controversy. He died in a few months after the interview recorded in the Memoir. His attestation to Mr. Bailey's declaration of conformity to the Liturgy of the Church of England is preserved. The Bishop's signature, in the margin, shows the tremulousness of a hand enfeebled by sickness.

Grace, in passing out of the great room, condescended to address us very complacently, and gave us his blessing. . . . From the chapter-house we went directly to the treasury, . . . thence to the chancellor's house. Here we received £19 7s. 6d., the royal bounty to all American clergymen after ordination. The king himself signed the order for the delivery of the money. I cannot but thankfully acknowledge the goodness of Providence, this day, in succeeding my concerns, and so happily finishing the business for which I made this dangerous voyage to London. I had the pleasure to be informed that the generous Society had appointed me their missionary, with a salary of £50 per annum, to begin from last Christmas. This was favorable, even beyond my most sanguine expectations.

. . . . .  
*" March 22d.* This day received half a year's salary from Alderman Gosling, banker to the Society. . . . I then rode to the upper part of New Bond Street, and bought a number of books. The afternoon I spent in collecting articles I designed to take with me to New England, having first visited the New England Coffee House, and agreed with Capt. Watt for a passage, first paying for it ten guineas.

. . . . .  
*" March 25th.* Visited Dr. Bearcroft with Mr. Greaton and Morton, where we received Leland's View of the Deistical Writers, a present from his royal highness the Prince of Wales, and several other excellent pieces. About two, Mr. Morton called on me, and accompanied me to Mr. Franklin's, in Craven Street. We had four ladies at table. They all dined in full dress, without so much as taking their hats from their heads. Nothing could possibly be more agreeable than the conversation, behavior and entertainment of this afternoon.

*" March 26th.* This day went down the river with Mr. Greaton, to put our — on board the — frigate, at Stone Stairs.

. . . . .  
*" May 28th.* About ten o'clock, to our inexpressible joy, we made the mountains of Agamenticus, on the coast of New

England, having been out of sight of land from Cape Cornwall, in Great Britain, thirty-two days."

Mr. Bailey arrived in Boston a few days after, as we learn from the following item from the "Boston News Letter," of June 5th, 1760: "Custom House, Boston, June 4th. Entered inwards, Watt, from London. In Capt. Watt came Passengers General Winslow, who was welcomed on shore, and congratulated by a great number of People, upon his return; also, the Rev. Mr. James Grayton,\* of Roxbury, and the Rev. Mr. Jacob Bailey, of Beverly,† two young gentlemen who have received Episcopal Ordination, the former for Christ's Church, in this Town, the other for a Church to be established at Pownalboro', on the Kennebeck River; and several other gentlemen."

---

\* Greston.

† Rowley.

## CHAPTER V.

BEFORE we follow Mr. Bailey to his chosen field of labor, it becomes necessary to sketch the history of that part of the country in which that field was situated.

As the French had led the way in colonizing other parts of America, so were they the first in exploring this region, and in attempting to settle it. The king of France had given to De Monts the whole of the country between the island of Cape Breton and the shores below Hudson River, and had called the territory ACADIA. In the spring of 1604, De Monts, accompanied by the future founder of Quebec, entered Annapolis River, in Nova Scotia, and granting a territory, extending some miles from its mouth, to one of his companions, sailed for the Schoodic, or St. Croix River, which now forms part of the north-eastern boundary of the United States. An island was chosen for the residence of the party, and fortified. The privations of one winter, however, caused them to abandon this locality the following spring, and to join the rest of the immigrants on the pleasant river of Annapolis. The same season an exploring party, led by De Monts, ascended the Kennebec River, erected a cross, and took possession of the territory in the name of the king of France. While these expeditions were in progress, English enterprise was also excited. On the pretence of discovering a north-west passage, a party left Great Britain. After touching at a few places in Maine, the vessels ascended the Penobscot River, probably a considerable distance, and the commander also erected a cross, "a thing," he says, "never omitted by Christian travellers." Thus, in the same year, perhaps in the same month, the symbol of man's salvation was planted on the banks of the two noblest rivers in Maine. The leaders of both these expeditions were Protestants. The English enterprise was disgraced by the seizure of five of the na-

tives, who were carried to Great Britain. This act of unqualified baseness was, however, Providentially made productive of good.\* Three of the captives were delivered to Sir FERDINANDO GORGES, governor of Plymouth. A residence with him taught them the English language, and the accounts they gave of their native land first excited in their host that interest in the colonization of New England, which terminated only with his life.

In 1606, an association of English gentlemen was formed, for the purpose of colonizing America, and converting its savage inhabitants to the Christian religion. Although divided into two companies, yet they were under one general council of government. James I. gave them a royal charter. To one of these, called the Second Colony, or the Plymouth Company, was granted a territory, identical, to a great extent,† with that given to De Monts by the king of France. The religion of the Church of England was established in the colonies to be formed. In the following year, the founders of Virginia, under the patronage of the first of these companies, left their native land and commenced a settlement on James River. Late in August of the same year, public thanks to Almighty God were offered up on a peninsula in the Kennebec River, near its mouth, by a party who had landed from ships sent out by the Second, or Plymouth Company, to colonize their patent. A sermon was delivered on this occasion, their charter was read, and rules for the government were promulgated. Buildings for public use, including a Church and a few slender cabins, were erected, with a rude fortification. Early winter witnessed the departure of the ships which had transported the colonists, leaving only forty-five persons to undergo the unknown trials which might await them. Not the least of these trials was the extreme severity of the climate. In mid-winter fire consumed their storehouse, with the provisions it

---

\* "This accident must be acknowledged the means, under God, of putting on foot and giving life to all our plantations." — *Sir Ferdinando Gorges' Briefe Narration*. London: 1658.

† To the two companies all North America, from the 34th to the 45th degree of latitude, was granted. De Monts' patent extended one degree further north.

contained. George Popham, their president, died. The ships sent from England the succeeding spring, brought news of the death of the Chief Justice of England, one of the principal men of the Plymouth Council, and also of another member, a brother to the "Admiral" of the colony, who had now become its president. These untoward events determined the emigrants to return to their native country, and when the ships, despatched to their aid, entered the English harbor on their return, instead of bringing news of encouragement to the sagacious and enterprising men, who had attempted to transfer the religion and civilization of England to the hunting-grounds of the savages of North America, they landed disheartened adventurers, whose story and whose return would postpone, to a distant day, the renewal of an enterprise that had thus lamentably and visibly failed.

As, by the royal letter of instructions, given to the early colonists, the religion and polity of the Church of England were distinctly established, and as religious services were held, and a sermon preached on the day of the debarkation of the colonists, at Kennebec, by their chaplain, who also officiated during the time the colony remained, it is certain that, on the shores of Atkins' Bay, the hallowed strains of England's ritual were heard at no infrequent intervals, during the autumn of 1607, and the succeeding winter. And, therefore, these are the first instances of the use of the liturgy, and the performance of the rites of the Episcopal Church in any part of the present United States, north of Virginia. And not only so, this was THE FIRST PROTESTANT WORSHIP AND PREACHING, BY AN ORDAINED MINISTER, IN ANY PORTION OF THIS VAST TERRITORY.\*

NEW ENGLAND was the name given to a region, extending from the fortieth parallel, eight degrees northward, in a new charter, granted to the Plymouth Council, in 1620. Several voyages, undertaken by private persons, had been made during the thirteen years which followed the failure of the colony at Kennebec. Although the famous Captain *John Smith* was

---

\* See note B.

engaged in two of these enterprises, yet nothing was effected in the way of colonizing the territory. A few persons, under Richard Vines, passed the winter of 1617, at the mouth of Saco River, but a party of English mutineers, who had been set on shore in the succeeding year, found there no white inhabitants, and were obliged to travel eastward, till they reached the island of Monhegan, a noted fishing station for the Europeans.

Thirteen years after Vines' short stay at Saco, two patents were granted to him and others, of about eight square miles, on the banks of that river. The settlers on these grants preserved friendly relations with their savage neighbors, and raised taxes for the support of religious worship, though no clergyman seems to have been among them at the time. But in 1636, Sir Ferdinando Gorges, who had obtained a grant of all the territory in Maine, west of the Kennebec River, sent over his nephew, William Gorges, in the capacity of governor. In the spring of that year, he opened a court in Saco, and thus established the first organized government within the limits of the present State of Maine. In the autumn, "a book of rates for the minister, to be paid quarterly, the first payment to begin at Michaelmas next," was drawn up, and the sum of £31 15s. was subscribed. The patent of this territory established the Church of England, and gave the patentee the patronage of all churches and chapels. Rev. RICHARD GIBSON, an Episcopal minister, was here at least as early as 1637, and remained on this side the Atlantic seven years before his return, part of which time was spent in Saco. It was in this place, then, that Episcopacy was first *permanently* established in the territory of Maine. But Gibson's labors, though given, perhaps, at first, in a great degree, to Saco, became afterwards extended, and the settlers at Richmond's Island, the Isles of Shoals, and at Piscataqua, enjoyed the benefits of his ministrations. In fact, he is known to have been the first minister of Portsmouth, N. H. He was drawn into a controversy with a Puritan minister, of Dover, N. H., who attacked him, and he afterwards offered acknowledgments to Massachusetts, and in 1643 returned to England. The testimony of those who regarded



the church of which he was a minister with no favorable feelings, is, that he was "a good scholar, a popular speaker, and highly esteemed as a Gospel minister," by those among whom he labored.

A small island near the southerly shore of Cape Elizabeth, had been granted by the Plymouth Council to two persons, who appointed John Winter to manage their interest therein. It soon became a noted place for fishing, and the products of the sea and forest were exchanged to so large an extent for foreign commodities, that an European trade of some amount grew up, and continued many years.

Rev. ROBERT JORDAN, a clergyman of the Church of England, married Sarah, the daughter of this John Winter. It is certain that Jordan officiated during the first years of his residence on Richmond's Island, and, as he is termed an "itinerant preacher to the people," his labors, like those of Gibson, may have extended even to New Hampshire. The original grantees of Richmond's Island evidently contemplated the regular performance of divine worship there, according to the ritual of the Church of England, if not the erection of a church, for, in the joint inventory between one of them and their agent, articles used in the Church service are enumerated, such as "Communion vessels, cushions, etc." Jordan also exhibited a charge against the estate of his father-in-law, in 1645, "for my ministry, as by composition, one-half year, £10." But Jordan's life was destined to be a checkered one. The whole of Richmond's Island was awarded to him, as legal representative of Winter, to satisfy a claim of the latter on the proprietors. The territory in which his estate was situated, changed owners more than once, and Jordan became involved in the political disputes arising from such fluctuations. We find him, at various times, acting in a judicial capacity, appointed to his office by the power which, at the time, held possession of the Province of Maine. That he did not entirely lay aside the exercise of his ministerial office, appears from the fact that, in 1660, he baptized some children, "after the exercise was ended on the Lord's day, in the house of Mrs. MacWorth, in Falmouth," for which he was summoned before the General

Court of Massachusetts, who also called him to an account, in the succeeding year, for solemnizing a marriage. Four years after, his house was attacked by Indians. He barely escaped with his life, to Great Island, now New Castle, in Piscataqua River, where he died, in 1679, aged 68, leaving a large landed estate.

The territory of Maine, after many changes of ownership, passed, by purchase, into the hands of the neighboring colony of Massachusetts, in 1677. Thenceforward, the religious teachers encouraged in this Province were Puritans.

## CHAPTER VI.

IN 1749, the representatives of the original proprietors of the Kennebec Purchase, with others who had joined them, held a meeting, to take measures for the improvement of their property. Four years after, a corporation was formed, by the name of the "Proprietors of the Kennebec Purchase from the late Colony of New Plymouth," though this corporation is generally called "The Plymouth Company."\*

† "In the year 1751,‡ a number of Germans having arrived in Boston, the Plymouth Company, as an inducement to them to settle in their patent, offered immediately to give each family one hundred acres of land, in what is now called Dresden, to pay their passages from Boston, to advance them six months' provisions, and to build them a house of defence against the Indians. The only conditions imposed upon the settlers were, that each should clear five acres of land, and build an house, twenty feet by eighteen, within three years. These offers were accepted, and the descendants of those Germans are yet to be distinguished in that neighborhood, by their patronymic names." The plantation begun by these people was called Frankfort.

The wars between France and England involved their respective colonies in America, and the influence which the former had obtained over the Indians, was used in exciting them to attack the white settlers in Maine. As Richmond fort had become almost ruinous, another was built, in 1754,

---

\* See note C.

† History of the Kennebec Purchase, by R. H. Gardiner, Esq. — *Maine Historical Collections*, II., p. 280.

‡ After the revocation of the Edict of Nantes, some of the French went to Germany, and with the Germans came thence to Frankfort, on the Kennebec, from the River Rhine.

about one and a half miles above it, on the opposite side of the river, and called Fort Frankfort, or Fort Shirley. To this the inhabitants fled for security, when alarmed by the Indians.

The circumstances of the people at Frankfort were extremely straitened. They had been transported to a region whose winters are long, and generally rigorous, and they were obliged to fell the enormous growth of timber which covered the ground, before anything could be raised for the support of themselves and their families. Unused to this kind of labor in their native country, their attempts to cut down the forest were awkward, and of course very toilsome. As it must be long before they could raise their own food, and as they had no means of renewing, in their new home, their clothing, when worn out, they were, of course, doomed to a protracted and severe struggle for the necessaries of life. It is evident, then, that a provision for religious instruction was entirely beyond their power. In fact, the whole of the present State of Maine, east of Brunswick, was at that time, and for some years after, (with the exception hereafter to be named,) entirely destitute of the services of a minister of any denomination. But Popish emissaries were not idle. In 1605, the expedition of De Monts, (as before stated,) ascended the Kennebec River, erected a cross, and took possession of the country in the name of the king of France. In 1612, De Biencourt and Biart visited the same river, and brought the natives to the profession of the Romish religion, and allegiance to the French king.\* Thirty-four† years after, Drenillettes took up his abode in this region, and officiated in a chapel erected by the Indian converts. He was succeeded by the Bigots, father and son. When Ralle was killed by the English forces, at the Indian village of Norridgewock, in 1724, he had been their priest at that place for a quarter of a century. As the Jesuits were well established in Canada, at the time of the death of Ralle, and as the route from the St. Lawrence to the Kennebec was well known to the Indians, and frequently passed over by

---

\* Bancroft's History of the United States, I., 27.

† Bancroft's History of the United States, III., 136.

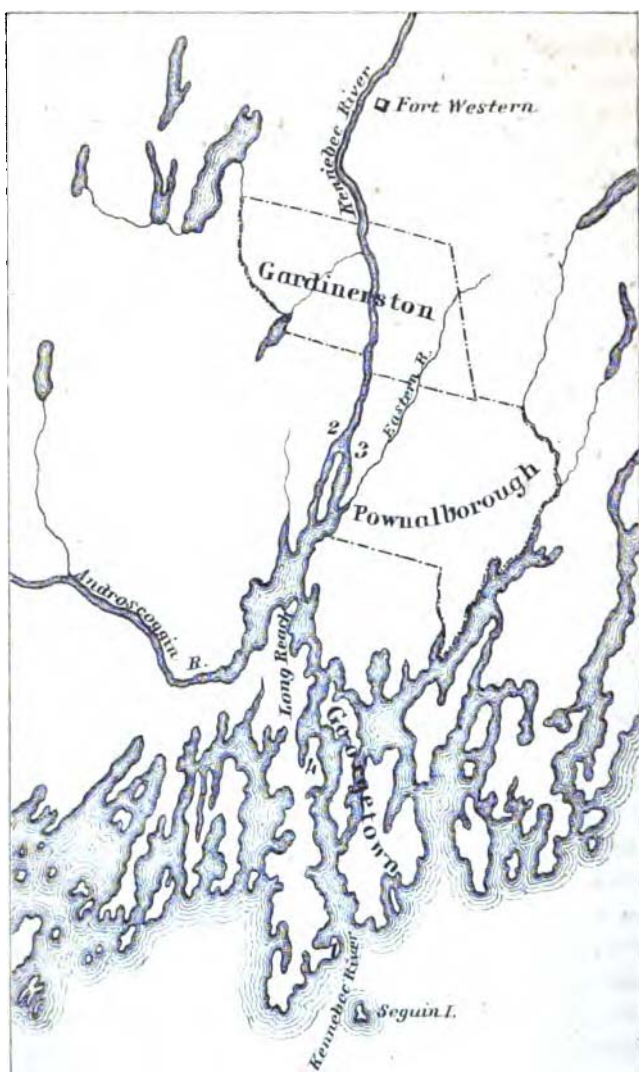
them, emissaries of the Romish Church could, with little comparative difficulty, find their way into the country where the head-quarters of the Norridgewock tribe had formerly existed. That these opportunities were not neglected, appears from the following narrative: "On the 4th of January, 1754, Mr. Peter Audron, a Jesuit, and missionary to the Norridgewock tribe, arrived at Frankfort. . . . Mr. Bunyon, one of the German, or French settlers, accompanied the Jesuit to his habitation, which was about three or four miles above Cushnoc, at the distance of half a mile from the eastern shore, and his house was surrounded by a number of Indian wigwams. The French were carrying on a settlement at Anondowincke, a remarkable situation, between the head of Kennebeck and Ammagantick Lake, and, it is reported, that the above-mentioned Jesuit was busy among the French people, at Frankfort, to engage some of them to remove, and, for their encouragement, he promised each family two hundred acres of land, and some other advantages; but, with all his arguments and insinuations, he was unable to prevail." \*

The poor settlers at Frankfort, thus exposed to the arts of Romish missionaries, and unable, themselves, to provide for religious teaching, looked in vain to any in America to assist them. No Protestant minister had ever been in the valley of the Kennebec, of which we have any account, save at Georgetown, a settlement near the mouth of that river, and the last clergyman had left that place two years previously, while there was no prospect that the vacancy there would be supplied. Nothing, then, was left to these neglected pioneers but to apply to the benevolence of pious persons in England. In this emergency, the people of Frankfort joined with those in Georgetown, in petitioning the "Society for Propogating the Gospel in Foreign Parts," to send them a missionary. This petition, dated in 1754, states that they who signed it "are a collection of Protestants, from *Great Britain, Ireland, France*

---

\* Rev. J. Bailey's MSS. Williamson's History of Maine, II., 297. Both of these authorities concur in stating that this visit of the Jesuit, with other facts, drew the attention of the General Court of Massachusetts, and led to the renewal or erection of forts, one of which was placed in the present town of Winslow.





- 1 Site of Popham's Colony 1607.
  - 2 Site of Fort Richmond, 1719.
  - 3 St John's Church, Pownalboro.
  - 4 ——— Do. Georgetown.
- N. B. The names of places are those previous to 1779.

## PART OF MAINE.

*D. Mord's 18th Edition*

*and Germany*," compelled, by poverty, "to accept, gladly, a Settlement on the Frontier of New England," who feel sensibly the want of "the Administration of God's Word and Sacraments, and their Children must be in evident Danger of falling into the grossest Ignorance and Irreligion, so as to become an easy Prey to the Popish Missionaries in that Neighbourhood, unless the Society shall send a Missionary to officiate to and instruct them."

The Abstract of the Society, for 1755, states that "Governor *Shirley*, and other very worthy Persons, recommending Mr. *Macclenaghan*, that he had been for many Years a Dissenting Teacher, but was become a Convert to the Church of *England*, as a proper Person for this Mission, on account of his uncommon Fortitude, and a Mind cheerfully disposed to undergo the Dangers and Difficulties to be expected in that Mission, the Society, Mr. *Macclenaghan* having been received into the Holy Orders of our Church, hath appointed him their Missionary to *George Town* and *Frankfort*, and to the neighboring Places on the Eastern Frontier of the Province of Massachusetts Bay." The annual stipend attached to this mission was fifty pounds sterling.

In May, 1756, Mr. Macclenachan arrived at Kennebec, and took up his residence in Fort Richmond. His family afterwards joined him there.

But one report of Mr. Macclenachan to the Society has been preserved. This is compiled from his letter to them, dated Richmond, August 5th, 1757. In this he speaks of his "diligence in preaching the Gospel on common Days, as well as the Lord's Day," and states that "the number of his Hearers increases." He complains "that there is no Church, either at *George Town* or *Frankfort*, nor Glebe nor House prepared for the Missionary, as was promised to the Society on his appointment; but that he had, to that time, resided in an old dismantled Fort, wonderfully, through God's mercy, preserved from a merciless Enemy, to whom he is often exposed."

Mr. Macclenachan removed from his mission in December, 1758.\* A large territory was thus left without the services of

---

\* See note D.



any resident minister of any denomination. The title of the incumbent of the Church Mission in this region was, "Itinerant Missionary on the Eastern Frontier of Massachusetts Bay." This frontier was indeterminate, both in length and breadth. It extended from the ocean, indefinitely, towards Canada, and from Brunswick, as far east as any white people could be found. It was shortly after stated, by one who had the means of knowing, to be "one hundred miles in length, by sixty in breadth." Few roads had been made, and the settlements being on the banks of rivers and the sea-coast, the usual mode of travelling was by a canoe. At this time, and in fact for many years after, county roads, connecting one township with another, were entirely unknown. In summer, the canoe held the place of the wheeled carriage, while in winter, the icy surface of the frozen river formed the principal highway for the sleigh, and even for the ox-sled, with its heavy load.\* It is evident, that it would be beyond the power of any one missionary to labor successfully in all parts of so large a field. But he was liable to be called on for services, even beyond the limits of the extensive region to which he was appointed. As the Church, in Portsmouth, N. H., was the first to be met with in travelling to Boston from these eastern parts, the mission may be said, in some sense, to have embraced all that was then settled of the present State of Maine.

There was, at that time, but one county, that of York, whose limits included all the territory east of Piscataqua River. On the 19th of June, 1760, two new counties were taken from this, the more easterly one, the county of Lincoln, having Pownalborough for its shire town. This town included the ancient plantation of Frankfort, and its area was so large, that it was afterwards divided into three towns.† In the succeeding year, the Plymouth Company erected the necessary county buildings, one of which, the court-house, three stories in height, is still standing, a conspicuous object to all who pass on the Kennebec.

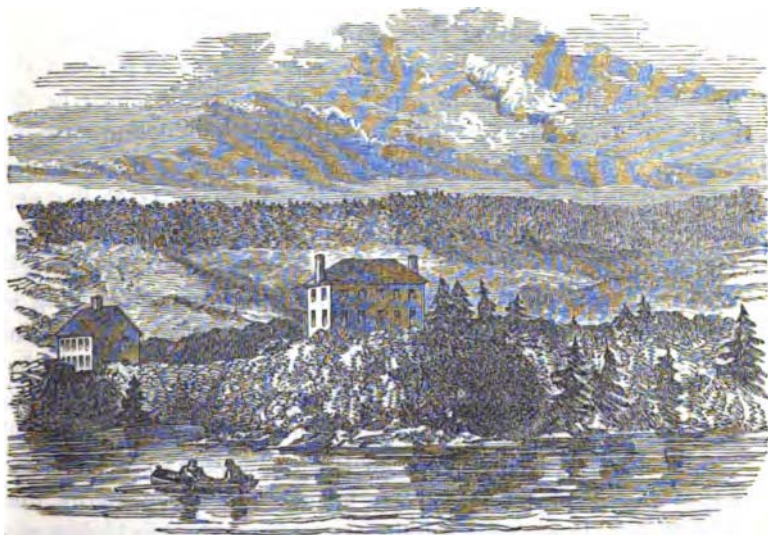
Mr. Bailey arrived in Pownalborough, July 1st, 1760. He

---

\* See note Da.

† Dresden, Alna, and Wiscasset.

represents the majority of the inhabitants as extremely poor, and very ignorant, without the means of either religious or secular instruction. He resided, for the first few months, in the family of Capt., (afterwards Major,) Samuel Goodwin, who had been in the country a number of years, as a surveyor and military officer.



[View of the Court-House, Pownalborough, Maine.]

But little is to be found touching Mr. Bailey's first year's labor as missionary. In a letter, (probably to Florentius Vassall, Esq., in London,) he says: "I have been about two months upon the spot, have travelled through most of the settlements upon your patent, and been sixty miles up the Kennebec. Frankfort is now called Pownalborough, and has in it one hundred and fifteen families."

After the court-house was built, in 1761, it was used, for many years, on Sundays, for the services of the Church. Previous to this, these services must have been held in the chapel of Fort Richmond, and in private houses.

The inhabitants of Frankfort, in their petition\* to the Ven-

---

\* See note E, for the petition entire.

erable Society, in 1759, for a missionary, stated that "they have a Glebe of 200 Acres of good Land, which, with their Contributions in Money, will not amount to less than £20. Sterling, *per annum*; and as soon as they enjoy the Blessing of Peace, they will build a Church and Parsonage House, and, in the mean time, they can have *Richmond* Fort for an House for the Minister, and the Chapel belonging to it for Divine Service, and the Farm around it for a Glebe."

The people, from their poverty, were unable to perform the promises which were, no doubt, honestly made; but, in the spring of 1761, Mr. Bailey removed to Richmond, and received a grant of the use of the land around the fort, to draw from it what profit he could. In August of this year, Mr. Bailey was married to Miss Sally, fourth daughter of Dr. John Weeks, of Hampton, N. H. The lady was much younger than himself. She had been one of his scholars, when he was teaching in the place of her residence, and much evidence yet remains that he was very assiduous in his endeavors to implant in her young mind the principles of morality and religion, as well as to improve her intellect and refine her manners.\*

In 1762, Rev. Henry Caner, of Boston, wrote† to the Society: "It is a great pleasure to me to hear, as I have repeatedly, that Mr. Bailey, lately sent missionary to Kennebec, is highly useful there, by his diligence, prudence, and exemplary conduct. That country, though a frontier, peoples very fast. Had they the happiness of two more such missionaries, one at the western, the other at the eastern boundary, as Mr. Bailey is in the centre, the whole country would unite in one profession, without any perplexing disputes, or differing sentiments. But this is a matter which must be referred to the wisdom of the Society."

From the report of Mr. Bailey to the Society, in 1762, we learn, that a gentleman had presented to the parish a set of Communion ware, and that the congregations were on the increase, both at Pownalborough and Georgetown. He states,

---

\* See note F.

† Original letter quoted in Hawkins' "Historical Notices of the Missions of the Church of England," p. 231.

that the number of communicants is already above fifty. "It gives me great satisfaction," he continues, "to find Industry, Morality and Religion, flourishing among a People, till, of late, abandoned to Disorder, Vice and Profaneness, which Alteration is chiefly owing to the Performance of Divine Service, and those Pious Tracts, which the Society's Pious Care has dispersed." He acknowledges "the Receipt of a great Number of Catechisms and Common-Prayer Books, which will be of great Service to the younger Sort, and Promote the Decency of Divine Worship." However, he complains, that "the Mission is attended with great Disadvantages, from the Poverty of the People, and the Difficulties of Travelling in the Winter, when the Snow is sometimes Five or Six Feet deep for several months. If a Missionary could be sent to *George Town*, *Harpwell*, and Places adjacent, it would lessen these Difficulties, and very much establish Religion among a People whom he is obliged, in Winter, to leave almost destitute; besides that, another Minister would give him an Opportunity to do more service in the New Settlements, and upon the neighboring Rivers of *Sheepscott* and *Dumarascotta*."

In connection with this, occurs the following record: "The Society have also received a Petition from the Inhabitants of *George Town* and *Harpwell*, on *Kennebeck* River, dated Dec. 11th, 1761, thankfully acknowledging the Society's charity to them, to which it is owing, under God, that a sense of Religion is preserved among them;" and observing "that the large Increase of a poor, industrious People, consisting of above 7,000 Inhabitants, (situated in a New Frontier Settlement, with not one Ordained Minister of any Denomination except Mr. Bailey,) obliges them humbly to request another Missionary for this large District. This favor they particularly entreat for the Inhabitants of *George Town* and *Harpwell*, which are about twenty miles from *Pownalborough*, where, and in the neighborhood of which, Mr. *Bailey* finds so full Employment, that he can afford the Petitioners but a very small Proportion of his Service, and that to the Detriment of the Places contiguous to his Settled Abode. In Hopes of this further Increase

of the Society's Compassion, they have begun to build a Church, which is now in great Forwardness, and engage, in their present low and laborious State, to give the Missionary the Society shall be pleased to send, £20 Sterling *per Annum*, build him a Parsonage House, and, as their Circumstances enlarge, give him, from Time to Time, such further encouragement as may be Proof how highly they value the Blessing they now petition for."

This petition is accompanied by a letter from the Rev. Mr. *Caner*, minister of the King's Chapel, in Boston, dated June 10th, 1762, certifying that "the above is a faithful and modest account of the Condition of the People on *Kennebeck* River, and especially at *George Town*, where Mr. *Bailey's* greatest Diligence is utterly insufficient to answer the pressing Necessities of that People in regard to the Means of Publick Worship, and begging such Assistance as their Circumstances do truly call for."

In 1764, an Episcopal Church was formed in Falmouth, now Portland, Maine.

But few materials remain for writing a detailed account of Mr. *Bailey's* life during the next five years.\* That he was active and devoted to the duties of his Mission, appears from his reports to the Society, in which he gives the number of baptisms and of additions to the Communion. In consequence of the want of a parsonage, he became a tenant of others, and was obliged to remove his family more than once during this period, and a larger part of the time he resided in Richmond, while the services of the Church were performed, and most of his parishioners resided in Pownalborough, on the opposite side of the river.

From the 2d volume of "The Works of John Adams," it seems that he made a journey to Pownalborough, in the summer of 1765. No mention is made of the object of this journey. As Mr. Adams was then in the practice of the law, it is to be presumed that his visit to these eastern parts might have

---

\* See note G.

been, to attend to some case to be tried at the term of the court held at Pownalborough. Mr. Adams, it will be remembered, was a classmate of Mr. B.

The following extract from a letter addressed to Mr. Bailey, and dated Boston, May 17th, 1766, is of interest, as concerning the history of the Church in New England: \* "I must inform you that the Clergy of this and the neighbouring Towns, having been together some time ago, upon a special occasion, agreed upon a voluntary annual Convention of the whole Clergy of this Province, to which the Bishop of London has since given his Sanction. The day appointed for this year is the first Wednesday in June, on which day there will be a Sermon preached before them at King's Chapel in this Town; at which you are desired to be present, and to dine with me after Sermon. As you have few opportunities of meeting and conversing with your Brethren, I doubt not you will cheerfully lay hold of this, and take the benefit of the brotherly correspondence and advice which such an occasion affords.

"I am, Dear Sir,

"Your affec. Bro. and humble Servant,

"H. CANER."

In his letter to the Society, in 1766, he makes the following statement: "A great number of Indians frequent this Neighbourhood. They are the Remains of the ancient *Norridge-walk* Tribe, and lead a rambling Life. They support themselves entirely by hunting, are very savage in their Dress and Manners, have a Language of their own, but universally speak

---

\* "We have now to remark the commencement of efforts for the better organization of the Church. It had been determined by the clergy, who followed the remains of Dr. Cutler to the grave, in 1765, to have an annual convention at Boston, with a view to promote mutual love and harmony among themselves, and to assist each other with advice in difficult cases. The plan was approved by the Bishop of London, and the first meeting took place in June, 1766. The appearance of fourteen clergymen, walking in their gowns and cassocks in procession to Church, was a novelty in America at that time, and was calculated to create an impression of the importance of the body to which they belonged. Dr. Caner, who was appointed moderator, preached the first sermon in King's Chapel." †

† Macgilchrist, June 27, 1766.

*Hawkins' Missions of the Church of England*, p. 234.

*French*, and also profess the Romish Religion, and visit *Canada* once or twice a Year for Absolution. They have a great Aversion to the *English* Nation, chiefly owing to the Influence of Roman Catholick Missionaries, who, instead of endeavouring to reform their Morals, comply with them in their most extravagant Vices, and teach them that nothing is necessary to eternal Salvation, but to believe in the Name of *Christ*, to acknowledge the Pope, his holy Vicar, and to extirpate the *English*, because they cruelly murdered the Saviour of Mankind. He concludes one of his Letters with a Detail of the great Things Dr. *Gardiner*, a Physician of Boston, has done, and is doing, for the Church of *England* in these Parts; particularly his generosity in giving the People of *Pownalborough* the use of *Richmond* House and Farm seven Years, for Mr. *Bailey's* Improvement; his subscribing largely, and soliciting a Subscription for building them a Church and Parsonage House; his publishing, at his own Expense, an Edition of Bishop *Beveridge's* Sermon on the Excellency of the Common Prayer, which has been dispersed to good Purpose; his intention to give a Glebe, build a Church and Parsonage House, and endow it for the support of an Episcopal Minister, at *Gardner's Town*."

"From Sept. 26th, 1764, to Sept. 29th, 1765, Mr. *Bailey* baptized 43 Infants and 3 Adults; and from Sept. 29th, 1765, to Sept. 23d, 1766, baptized 38 Infants and 1 Adult; and in each Year had an Addition of 2 new Communicants."

The clergy of Massachusetts and Rhode Island met in convention in Boston, June 6th, 1767. They drew up a report to the Venerable Society, which contained notices of several missions in those provinces. This report, which was dated June 7th, concluded with an earnest appeal to the Society for American bishops. Mr. *Bailey* signed this paper, with thirteen others of his clerical brethren.\*

Mr. *Bailey* wrote to his brother-in-law, Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, Rector of St. Michael's Church, Marblehead, Mass., under date of November 13th, 1767, as follows: "I find the

---

\* *Hawkins' Historical Notices, etc.*, p. 396.

treasurers at Georgetown are determined to prevent us from drawing the rates belonging to the Church people, unless we can recover them by a law-suit. By what I can find out, there are £400 or £500 already in their hands."

The original Presbyterian, or Congregational Society, in Georgetown, was destitute of a minister for thirteen years, commencing with 1752. During that time, it had been indebted to missionaries of the Church of England for all the regular religious services which it enjoyed. The place was especially included in the mission on the eastern frontiers of Massachusetts Bay, and was visited by Mr. Bailey and his predecessor, as often as was practicable. Indeed, Mr. Bailey states that he had "frequently preached there, and administered the Sacraments, and found the Dissenters so much inclined to the Church, that had they a Missionary resident, they would probably come over to it."

Under such circumstances, the withholding of these rates, contributed by the people, to whom the town was indebted for the ordinances of religion during a considerable part of so long a time, seems to be inexcusable.

Under date of October 30th, 1767, Mr. Bailey, in his report to the Society P. G., etc., "expresses his Satisfaction to find that the poor People, who petitioned the Society for a Minister, continue steady to the Church, as do the poor *Lutherans* and *Calvinists*, and most of the young People among the other various Denominations. From Oct., 1766, to Oct., 1767, he baptized 31 Infants and 1 Adult, and had an Addition of 2 new Communicants."

The Secretary of the Venerable Society wrote Mr. Bailey, towards the close of the present year, and stated that he had been informed, by a person who had visited Pownalborough some months before, that the Church people in that town "had not yet procured a house for him to live in, nor had hardly done anything in pursuance of their engagements to the Society." He gives Mr. Bailey credit for "his great tenderness for his people, in not making any mention of this matter." Fearing that this delinquency might have "put Mr. Bailey to some difficulties, and desirous to give him some present relief, the Society ordered him a gratuity of Ten Pounds."



In the course of the next year, Mr. Bailey received an invitation to remove to Amesbury, Mass., and to take charge of the Church there. Many considerations must have conspired to induce him to accept this invitation, yet he decided to remain in that remote region, among the poor people to whom he had ministered nearly eight years.

The Rev. William Willard Wheeler entered upon the Mission in Georgetown, during the summer of this year, and thus relieved Mr. Bailey of some of the labor imposed upon him, in visiting and officiating at a place some miles from his residence.

Some measures appear to have been taken, in 1769, towards the erection of a Church in Pownalborough. Dr. Silvester Gardiner interested himself much in the enterprise. He solicited subscriptions, and himself contributed largely. In a letter to Mr. Bailey, accompanying the plans, Dr. Gardiner says of the proposed building: "It will be one of the prettiest in the Province, and not expensive, and a bigger one you can't build."

The prospect of the erection of a Church in Pownalborough, seems to have excited the opposition of a few of the citizens. The following letter sufficiently explains itself:—

" POWNALBOROUGH, March 21st, 1769.

" *To Rev. Mr. Walter, Boston:*

"DEAR SIR:—The bearer of this letter, Mr. Ridall, was educated a Lutheran, but has, for some years past, been a communicant in the Church of England. He appeared well affected to our worship, till the Dissenters lately insinuated that the constitution, discipline and worship of the Lutheran Church agree almost exactly with the Independants of this country, and are in no respect like the Church of England. He cannot read English, but understands German very well, and by perusing some authors in that language, declares himself satisfied with the Church, but entreats the favor that you would, by a line, signify which is nearer to the Lutherans, the Independants, or the Church of England, that he may show it for the satisfaction of his countrymen here, who are willing to abide by your determination."

The building of the church was delayed from some unexplained cause, and it was not finished till the autumn of the succeeding year. Mr. Bailey writes, under date of November 5th, 1770: "We performed service yesterday in our new Church. The outside is completely finished, the windows glazed and put up, the floor laid, and a temporary pulpit built. I had a full congregation, and gave them a discourse from Ecclesiastes v. 1 and 2 verses." The church was called St. John's Church, Pownalborough. In writing to the Society in England, he says: "The dimensions of the Church are sixty feet in length, including the chancel, and thirty-two feet in breadth. I acknowledge not only the generosity of Dr. Gardiner, but also the charitable assistance of several gentlemen in Marblehead, and other places. • • I have received no support, except the Society's salary, for two years past, and have, besides, been at considerable expense in forwarding the Church." And again, speaking of the Church, he states that "they were much obliged for it to the liberality of Dr. Gardiner, who gave £50 sterling towards it. He has also built a Church at Gardiner's Town, nine miles up the river, upon the banks of which are near 300 families, destitute of the public worship."

The Church at Pownalborough was, at this time, only fitted temporarily for public worship. The pews were afterwards erected. On the 17th March, 1771, Mr. Bailey wrote to Dr. Gardiner: "I would submit to your consideration, whether it may not be proper to have something done to our Altar place, (*sic*,) that the Sacrament may be administered with greater decency. You doubtless recollect, that when I waited upon your Church Committee at Mr. Powell's, Mr. Gilbert Deblois promised that he would give us a Christening Basin and Vessels for the Communion. Would it be amiss to remind him of it?"

Late in the fall of this year, Mr. Bailey writes: "We have been removed into the parsonage-house this fortnight, and have one room already very comfortable. We have been obliged to board the workmen, and must still keep them till they have done another room, and secured us from the wea-

ther." In another letter, he feels called upon to mention the "kindness of the people since my settlement among them," i. e., removal into the parsonage-house, "for you must understand that I lived, heretofore, out of the Parish."

The Memoir of Mr. Bailey has now been brought up to what may, perhaps, be considered as a turning point in that part of his life which was passed on the Kennebec. We have presented but a brief sketch of his history during the first eleven years of his Mission. This brevity has been caused by the absence of any very striking events during this time. But an opportunity is afforded, at this stage of his history, to take a general view of men and things around him, from the time of his coming. The materials for this view are to be found, mainly, in one of his MSS., written, probably, in 1771. It is entitled, "Some Account of the first Mission on Kennebec River, with various transactions relative to the same, since my arrival, in 1760. In a letter to a friend."

Speaking of the condition of the inhabitants in these eastern regions, when he first came among them, Mr. Bailey says: "The people were thinly settled along the banks of rivers, in a country which afforded a rugged and disagreeable prospect; were, in general, so poor, not to say idle, that their families almost suffered for necessary food and clothing, and they lived in miserable huts, which scarce afforded them shelter from the inclemency of the weather in a rigorous climate. And their lodgings were rather worse than food, clothing, or habitations. I might here add many affecting instances of their extreme poverty,—that multitudes of children are obliged to go bare-foot through the whole winter, with hardly clothes to cover their nakedness,—that half the houses were without any chimneys,—that many people had no other beds than a heap of straw,—and whole families had scarce anything to subsist upon, for months together, except potatoes, roasted in the ashes.

"Now, is it probable, that the inhabitants of such a wilderness country, in such necessitous circumstances, and so far distant from any large town, or cultivated region, should find means, either to support the Gospel, or to provide proper

instruction for their children? Besides, those who were born and educated in these remote parts, were so little acquainted with any religious worship, and had so long enjoyed their native ignorance, that they discovered hardly any inclination for rational or moral improvement. It is true, that these people had either been brought up, heretofore, where the Christian religion had been enjoyed, or were born of such parents as acknowledged the Gospel; but how many melancholy instances have I observed of this truth,—the impressions of religion and morality will quickly grow faint, or entirely vanish, where neither schools or Divine service are maintained. This I most positively affirm, that when I came to this country, there was no settled minister of any denomination in the whole extensive territory. I found Christians of eight different persuasions; multitudes could neither read nor write; heads of families were unbaptized; some had a very weak and imperfect notion of a future state, and fancied that they should enjoy their wives and children in another world; many, I may add, most houses were destitute of Bibles, or any other books; they had no settled principles; and, in short, their morals were extremely deficient. . . . I would therefore ask all sober, candid, and impartial Christians, whether a people, so much under the dominion of poverty, ignorance and immorality, were not proper objects of charity, and whether the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts has done any injury by supporting a Mission for so many years, and for dispersing, by my hands, Bibles and other pious books, to the amount of above £30 sterling, prime cost, in London? . . .

“ And, I would further remark, that, as no other worship has ever been established at Frankfort, but that of the English Church, it cannot be removed without prejudice to the foreigners, as well as the children and younger people, who have been constantly used to our service, and, as many of them cannot read English, they are incapable of understanding, so as to profit by any other. I am conscious that my intentions in coming among this people, were to serve them in the best manner I was able, and I flatter myself that in many instances they have received some advantage. I have ever compassion-

ated their poverty, and have been so far from making any demands upon them, that I have shared with them in many hardships and difficulties. As to the French and Dutch, I have found them, in general, a sober, honest and industrious set of people; and, notwithstanding some have been induced to sign for a Meeting, yet they all, except one or two Calvinists, declare that they had rather adhere to the Church, and besides, they acknowledge that their ministers, when they left Germany, strongly recommended their joining, if possible, with the Church of England. It appears, upon the whole, very hard, and is just matter of complaint, that in a land of religious liberty, and under a government where all religions are tolerated, any should be teased and persecuted on account of their particular modes of worship. Yet this is really the case at Pownalborough; for, can a poor, ignorant man be at liberty to act his sentiments, when he is continually persuaded, entreated, reasoned with, and perhaps threatened, by a gentleman of learning, wealth and influence, to whom he may probably be indebted?

“As I observed before, upon my first arrival in this country, I found no settled minister, and not only a great deal of ignorance, but a considerable degree of backwardness and indisposition to attend Divine service among people of every denomination. This was partly owing to the difficulty of travelling, partly to the want of decent clothing, but chiefly, I conceive, to the want of a due sense of religious worship, for such as had been used to spend the Lord's day in idleness and loitering at home, could not suddenly prevail upon themselves to reform, especially as there was some difficulty and expense in the affair. Few had, however, much to object against the Church of England, and I was frequently assured, by the oldest and most religious settlers, that if Missions were established at convenient distances, especially upon Kennebec River, in such a manner as people might generally attend service, that it would meet with almost universal acceptance, and conduce greatly to serve the interest of religion and morality. These sentiments, so often proposed, together with the increasing demand for my labors, induced me to write in favor of

new Missions, and at length one was established at Georgetown. While I resided at Frankfort, I observed, with concern and compassion, that the French and Dutch children were likely to be brought up in ignorance, for want of a school. This induced me to offer to instruct them gratis, but travelling was then so very difficult, and many were in such necessitous circumstances, that I had but a very few scholars, and when winter came on, nothing of this kind could be continued, and in the spring, I was obliged to change my lodgings, and reside at Richmond, on the other side of the river. The first summer of my Mission, I officiated at Georgetown every third Sunday, and was constrained to endure a great deal of hardship and fatigue, being obliged to travel by water no less than eighteen miles. Once, I remember, on the last of November, after being eight hours on the water, in my way to Georgetown, without anything either to eat or drink, it was my misfortune to be lost in the woods, where I was exposed all night in the open air to a most severe storm of wind, rain, thunder and lightning. And commonly, in my journeys to and from Georgetown, I suffered a great deal with hunger, cold and wet, and in the summer, was often afflicted with extreme heat, and assaulted with armies of flies and musketoes. Sometimes, for a whole season together, I have been obliged to undertake this little, but difficult voyage, alone,—have had the misfortune to be cast away by the violence of winds and waves, and to travel, for miles together, through the woods, over rocks and precipices, with my books and habit, having nothing to eat from morning to night. I think every one must acknowledge that it required no small degree of resolution, prudence and patience, as well as strength of constitution, to conduct matters properly among such an ignorant and unsteady people, and to go through the fatigues of travelling in such a rough and wilderness country."

Had Mr. Bailey been obliged to contend only with the ignorance of the poor people among whom he was settled, he might have pursued his arduous labors with some satisfaction. Like others, who have addressed themselves to the work of extending the Gospel to those who were benighted, he would

have been cheered with the evident, though perhaps gradual, improvement of the subjects of his charge, and he could die content, in the consciousness of having labored in the early stages of a work, which others might be privileged to carry on towards perfection. He could look for an increasing attachment on the part of those for whose benefit he had sacrificed so much, and feel that he would be loved while living, and that his memory would be revered when he was dead.

But the establishment of the courts in Pownalborough, in 1761, introduced a new element into the society of the place. The shire town became the temporary or settled residence of the county officers, and gentlemen of the legal profession. This at once created an aristocracy, small indeed in numbers, but of controlling influence. In education, property, and power, these persons had immensely the advantage of the poor settlers. True, the minister was entitled to rank with this class. If he could, consistently with his duty, think and act with them, his situation would be pleasant. But if he felt obliged to differ from them, they could render his situation very uncomfortable.

We should bear in mind, as accounting, in some degree, for what is to follow, that the scene of the transactions was on the *extremity* of the then Province of Massachusetts, and that from the difficulty of travelling in those days, it was further, practically, from Boston, than it now is from the capital of the nation.

This remoteness from communities of greater advancement, which almost amounted to isolation, permitted a great abuse of power. Amid the poverty which so generally prevailed in this region, few would dare to oppose, in any way, the wishes of men of wealth and influence, to whom, perhaps, many were indebted for supplies for their families, and who, having a part in the administration of the law, might harass and even ruin an obnoxious individual. Mr. Bailey found this to be true. It was his misfortune to incur the ill-will of some of these officials. Two, in particular, distinguished themselves by their enmity to him. One of them was excited mainly, no doubt, by the other, who, it would seem, left but little untried to ruin

Mr. Bailey, and to break up the Church in that region. The *names* of these persons will not be given. In withholding their names, the writer is aware that there is no want of provocation to a different course. The conduct of the persons spoken of, while it distressed the missionary in this region, had of necessity no small effect on the interests of the Church. As it will be necessary, frequently, to refer to these persons, we shall designate the principal as M. and his subordinate as N.

Mr. Bailey records some of the doings of M. in his journals. He brings charges against him of ungentlemanly and even indecent conduct, and of oppression, in his letters to his correspondents, some of whom, at least, were acquainted with the subject of these charges. He makes distinct statements respecting this man in his reports to the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, and complains grievously of him by name in a memorial addressed to the Convention in Boston, in 1772. Not a line is found among Mr. Bailey's papers, which tends to show that his opinion of M. was a mistaken one. Those of his correspondents who possessed the means of correcting these statements if they were erroneous, make no attempt to do so, and the inference is that they were correct. Mr. Bailey says, in "A Letter to a friend," &c., which has been before quoted: "As I presently found that M. still professed himself a Dissenter, I seldom entered into any controversy with him about our different persuasions, and he as cautiously avoided beginning any dispute with me. He used sometimes to attend Divine Service, but more frequently tarried at home, and when he attended, commonly behaved with a great deal of irreverence, especially at prayers." . . . . "I had, presently, sufficient evidence that he used all his endeavours to prejudice the minds of the people against the services of the Church, that he condemned several parts as directly contrary to Scripture, and made an open ridicule of others, which he was not able to confute. And when I received a number of Common Prayer Books from the Society, he took the liberty to scratch out several sentences in all that he could procure to his hands." . . . "From the beginning, as I have already observed, he was very negligent in his attendance upon public



worship, and when present, he generally behaved with great indecency, contriving, by a multitude of boyish tricks, to make the women smile; and sometimes he has taken a primer, instead of a Prayer Book, and read out of it with an audible voice. M. was always extremely industrious in procuring from Boston, and other places, all the little, dirty pieces that have appeared against the Church of England, especially 'The Dissenting Gentleman's Answer to Mr. White's three Letters,'\* the very title of which affrighted simple people from the Church, and prevented them from attending the service. These books he used to recommend and put into the hands of all disaffected persons." • • • "Many low, dirty, and scandalous remarks have been written by this gentleman, both in the great Bible and Common Prayer Book, used in Divine service. Instead of money, M. used often to put into the contribution box, soap, scraps of paper, news letters, and once a pack of cards. It is to be observed that all this was done before the least difference subsisted between us. I bore all this, with many personal reflections, without expressing the least resentment, either to him, or to any other person." • • • "M. took the liberty of dispersing several Common Prayer Books, without my knowledge, having first corrected them agreeable to his taste, and when I afterwards reproved him for the liberty he had taken with me, both in a public and private capacity, he replied that he had treated me just as I deserved, and as for those things he had erased from the Prayer Book, they ought not to be in it. This he attended with a loud and contemptuous laugh; but these were but the beginnings of that temper and disposition of mind he has since discovered. He has laboured all in his power to ruin my interest, to prevent my usefulness among the people; he has unjustly and falsely wounded my reputation; has been contriving to make the most fatal mischief in my family, and labouring to stir up lawsuits against me. And that he might more effectually accomplish his iniquitous de-

---

\* This work must have had a wide-spread circulation, since the Rev. Devereux Jarrat states that at the time his attention was turned towards the ministry of the Church of England, this book was put into his hands, in Virginia, the place of his residence.

signs, did, in my absence at Georgetown, open my desk, and take out divers papers, which he spread abroad with invidious remarks and comments, to my great damage. As to N., he was once a communicant, but it appears at the instigation of M., has left the publick worship for several years, and, though I have frequently written to him with the utmost complaisance, and signified my earnest desire after a reconciliation, yet he still continues inexorable, and treats both me and my letters with the utmost contempt. Upon the whole, I am fully convinced that the above mentioned gentlemen have always, notwithstanding their pretensions, been enemies to the Church; have, in artful manner, plotted against the Society's Mission, and secretly endeavoured to banish that generous bounty from these parts."

"I have never received any salary from the people. My perquisites, such as marriages, contributions, &c., have not amounted, take one year with another, to £50, old tenor, and the last two years they have not been £20, besides presents from particular persons, which is not so much as I have to pay for house rent. I had, indeed, the improvement of Richmond Farm, through the bounty of Dr. Gardiner, for seven years, but the inhabitants of Pownalborough, especially people of substance, almost destroyed the whole profit by large droves of wild horses and cattle, which no fence could resist which we were able to make. And though Mr. MacClennachan was paid for the pasturing of creatures, I never had but one dollar, which a poor man gave me, while my rich neighbours never afforded me a farthing, even when their cattle had destroyed both my hay and garden. Every winter since my arrival, there has been a proposal on foot for building a meeting-house, though they were never able so much as to begin, before the present year, and all the success of their proceedings is now owing to the false and malicious representations of two or three gentlemen. • • I have long been convinced, by the proceedings of our gentlemen, that it piques their pride to have any other minister than one of their own choosing; they are really too self-sufficient to receive one, even from the most respectable and judicious body of men, and are above

acknowledging themselves indebted to any Society of Christians for the support of their religious worship. I must add, that both N. and M. have long employed all their influence and authority, to prevent people from attending Divine Service, especially the latter, who prohibits his servants from coming to church. And they not only contrive means to hinder others, but have practiced a multitude of stratagems to keep me at home, since I moved over to the western side of the river, by detaining every boat and canoe they can get into their power. And especially last Easter, that I might not be able to officiate, they came the Wednesday before, with a number of men and cattle, broke two locks, seized a canoe in my care, and carried it off, it being the only one on this side fit to launch into the water when the river opened. But it is observable that our common people were never disposed to follow the example of our gentlemen; they were, on the other hand, abundantly more kind and generous after their enmity began, and more constant in their attendance on publick worship. My congregation, in good weather, has been near a third larger since the above left going to church. In a word, I am persuaded that these gentlemen had, from the beginning, a settled design of driving away the Mission from Pownalborough, and in order to effect this meritorious design, they have stuck at nothing, however unjust, false and injurious; but as this could not easily be accomplished, my character and influence must be sacrificed to their favorite views."

Mr. Bailey had hardly removed into the parsonage-house, (which was only partially finished,) when M. claimed the land on which both the parsonage and the church were built. He "proceeded so far as to threaten the people if they went to church; he declared that he would build a chimney in it, (i. e., the church,) and place a tenant on the land." The origin of this claim is somewhat obscure. As near as can now be ascertained, it seems to have been this: A person who had been an officer in the Church at Pownalborough, and whose general conduct, both before and after this transaction, appears to have been friendly, claimed the land, as administrator of the estates of some persons deceased. This is the more re-

markable, as Mr. Bailey says not only that "Dr. Gardiner put me in possession of the land above two years since," but that the administrator above referred to, "on my first arrival, showed me this tract, as the parsonage-lot, employed people the next year to work on it as such, and gave me leave to have the buildings erected upon it." How the claim was transferred to M. does not appear. But when it passed into his hands, he lost no time in his efforts to obtain the land. A suit at law for its possession, instituted by M., was decided in his favor, and judgment was obtained. Dr. Gardiner was written to on the subject, who replied: "July 22d, 1772. • • If they serve an Execution it is at their peril, and don't resist the officer, but go to lodgings, leaving everything in the house behind you. Remember what I now write; if they serve an Execution on your house, or the Church, you will make the best voyage you ever did in your life, for they and all their coadjutors can never make the land where the Church and your house stands to be, or ever was, any part of ——'s estate, more than they can prove the sun to be green cheese: therefore I beg to hear no more of this affair, until you are carried by the sheriff out of the house, and then I will see justice done both to you and the Church; but this, you may depend, will never be attempted."

Meanwhile, the members of the congregation became alarmed that the church and parsonage, which had been obtained with so much exertion, (and, as Mr. Bailey says, by great sacrifices on their part,) should be placed in a situation apparently so perilous. Influenced, probably, by their apprehensions, Mr. Bailey, being threatened by M., concluded to take a lease of him for six months, which was afterwards renewed for three months longer. Mr. Bailey undoubtedly believed that this course was the most expedient for him to take. But it unfortunately excited the anger of Dr. Gardiner. The matter was brought even before the Convention of Massachusetts, and caused some angry debate, but was finally dropped. Mr. Bailey states, most explicitly, that he acted under the advice of judicious lawyers in this matter, who, as the case then ap-

peared, thought that he could not, on an appeal to a higher court, get the judgment reversed. A more accurate survey, afterwards, showed that "the Church and thirty-five acres of land were without the limits of the administrator's claim; the parsonage-house was found to be on land of which M. gave him no lease," while the grant from the Plymouth Company was not included in the tract claimed by M. The matter was shortly after settled by the instrumentality of Dr. Gardiner, and the title to the glebe was not again disputed.

Whether or not M. was honest in his part of this business, cannot now be decided. The affair, however, gave Mr. Bailey much uneasiness, and seemed, at one time, to be likely to be fatal to his prospects. There were not wanting circumstances, however, to encourage him, for he reports to the Society "that of the forty-nine persons baptized in the year 1772, twenty-one had belonged to the families of rigid Dissenters. On Trinity Sunday I had five new Communicants, all educated Presbyterians."

Rev. William W. Wheeler resigned his Mission in Georgetown in the spring of 1772. This not only deprived Mr. Bailey of the occasional counsel and assistance of the only Church minister in Maine, but threw the whole burden of that Mission again upon him, from which he had been relieved during the four years' incumbency of Mr. Wheeler.

Rev. William Clark, Rector of St. Paul's Church, Dedham, Mass., wrote Mr. Bailey, under date of July 10th, 1772, with a view of obtaining the parish at Georgetown. Mr. C. was induced to think of this on account of the "support of the Mission" at Dedham, being, at that time, "too scanty," and likely thus to remain, till "the estate in reversion" fell in. Dr. Caner, of Boston, was favorable to Mr. Clark's intentions. But nothing appears to have been done in the matter.

The following extract from a letter of Mr. Bailey, is part of the early history of a parish now arrived at a condition of much strength and prosperity:—

"I have lately (August 16th, 1772) dedicated the new Church at Gardinerstown, nine miles up the river, and the people are very urgent for my preaching frequently among

them. I have likewise received several invitations from Georgetown, but I cannot possibly answer all these demands without neglecting my own people."

The matter of M.'s claim to the glebe was arranged as above stated. Mr. Bailey writes to a friend, that "the settlement of our Parsonage has given us high spirits, but a mortal chagrin to our enemies."

This active persecutor, however, was not yet discouraged. The Church was incorporated by the General Court in 1773, and a parish meeting was called in the spring of that year, by M. and N., during the absence of the two wardens and of Major Goodwin. The warrant contained but two articles,—First: to choose a moderator. Second: to choose a parish clerk, assessors, and a committee for managing parish affairs. All freeholders and other inhabitants, legally qualified to vote in town meetings, were required to attend. From the titles given to some of the officers, e. g., "committee for managing parish affairs," and also from the omission of names of wardens and vestry, it is evident, that this could be no meeting of the congregation attending the Church. As all freeholders, etc., were notified, the intention manifestly was, to form a new religious organization,—its character to be determined by the majority of the voters present. Many Churchmen were "legally qualified to vote in town meetings," and therefore attended on this occasion, as they had a perfect right so to do. M. was the active spirit at this meeting. A moderator of his own selection was chosen, who decided that "no Churchman had any right to vote." "Our people," says Mr. Bailey, "though twenty-four to twelve, offered to withdraw from their meeting, and never more to concern themselves with any parish affairs for the future; provided, they would agree not to tax us towards the Congregational worship, but this was utterly denied us." Upon the withdrawal of the Churchmen, and part of the others, the business was left in the hands of eight persons. "These dissenters, though so few in number, quarrelled, the same evening, among themselves, about fixing the place for their meeting-house; and upon hearing that their lumber had been seized, became wholly disheartened. . . .

There is not a single word in the warrant about a minister or a meeting-house."

This, which was one of several abortive attempts to establish the Congregational mode of worship in the western part of Pownalborough, is spoken of here, that it may be seen how violent and unscrupulous was the opposition of a very few individuals in that place to the Church of England.

Mr. Bailey writes to a friend: "Rev. Mr. Badger preached for me, June 20th. I have likewise had a visit from Monsieur Balele, Romish Missionary to the Indians of St. Francis. We have now at our house, Monsieur Naphew, a Franciscan friar, from Brittany, in France. I have made considerable proficiency in the French language. • • I expect to preach, next Sunday, in a new pulpit. Mrs. Bailey has collected, among the women, £15, O. T., towards furnishing the pulpit-cloth, etc."

The report to the Society, in October of this year, contains the following: "I have baptized, since October last, fifty-five persons, four of them adults; and notwithstanding the violent attempts of my inveterate enemies to injure the Church, my parish, at present, is in flourishing circumstances. Our people have built, at their own expense, an elegant pulpit and reading desk, and their wives and daughters have furnished it with a cushion, and hangings of crimson damask. Our parsonage-house and land, which occasioned me so much concern and expense, are now redeemed from the power of our enemies, and I hope to enjoy them in peace. I would likewise beg leave to recommend the people at Gardinerstown, and the settlements above, on Kennebeck river, to the Society, as objects of their charitable assistance. They are a mixture of various denominations, chiefly very poor, among which, numbers are well disposed towards the Church. Many were formerly under my care at Pownalborough, and several, communicants of good character. It appears probable, that if a Missionary was fixed at Gardinerstown, with proper encouragements, the people, in general, would adhere to the Church. I have officiated twice this summer at the last-mentioned place, and, on the 18th of August, baptized twenty-two persons, eight of them adults. These

infant settlements extend, from Pownalborough, forty-five miles along the river, and contain four hundred families, among which they have no ordained minister of any denomination, to administer the ordinances, and to preserve a proper sense of religion. But such are the necessitous circumstances of the people, the difficulty of travelling, and the expense of living, that no Missionary can subsist upon Kennebeck river, with credit to his profession, without a liberal support; and every difficulty here is rather greater, I conceive, than in the adjoining Province of Nova Scotia, where many of the English entered upon lands already improved by the former French inhabitants. I would further mention, that Dr. Gardiner, who has erected a decent Church at Gardinerstown, and provided a glebe, engages, besides, to give ten pounds sterling, per annum. I am obliged to remark, that we are indebted to the care and vigilance of this gentleman for the redemption of our parsonage at Pownalborough, and its present establishment upon a sure foundation."

That Mr. Bailey had not lost his early passion for writing, appears from a statement which he makes, wherein he says: "I have almost finished a description of the eastern country, in three chapters. The first contains the Geography and Natural History; the second, an account of the Ancient Indians; and the third, the most remarkable events, from its discovery in 1603, to the present day, with a view of its late prodigious improvements in the character of its inhabitants. My account takes in all the country between Casco Bay and Nova Scotia. I have had unexpected assistance, both from gentlemen and books." He also states that "two gentlemen have offered me seven guineas for the copy of Madockawando, for the press, but I refused." That his temporal prospects were brightening at this time, appears from the following extract from a letter to a relative, in August of this year: "I have a wealthy parishioner, Mr. Ayling, from England, who has purchased Richmond farm, to the amount of sixteen hundred and fifty acres, and is on the spot, making great improvements."

In February of this year, Mr. Bailey visited the upper set-



tlements on the Kennebec, travelling the whole distance in a sleigh on the frozen river. His journey extended above Fort Halifax, in the present town of Winslow. Being, on Sunday, among these pioneers, who, until then, had had no religious services, he preached to a congregation of forty persons, and in that region he baptized seventeen, whose names are recorded in his journals.

Three years had now passed since Mr. Bailey removed with his family into the parsonage-house, thus securing the first permanent habitation which they had enjoyed since he had been in his Mission. While the house was in building, he had enclosed about three acres for a garden, and began immediately to cultivate it with great industry. Nearly a dozen pages in one of his journals, are occupied with his "Observations in gardening in the Autumn of 1774, and spring of 1775." These observations are curious in more than one respect. They note particularly, not only the kind of seeds sown, and shrubs and trees transplanted, but also give each day in which the work was done, state the quantity of what was put into the ground, with the precise locality. It would seem, from this record, that there could have been but few plants, either of the ornamental or useful kind, then known in New England, of which a specimen might not be seen growing near the humble parsonage of this frontier Missionary. The neighboring fields and forests were also laid under contribution, and many wild flowers were mingled with the more cultivated ones. Even the sea beach of his native place had furnished one of the two or three species of vegetation which its arid sands can nourish. Tradition confirms, what would be surmised from his journals, that the minister's garden at Pownalborough had few superiors east of Boston.

The following letter, addressed to a female friend a few years after, describes his residence at Pownalborough: "I have at this moment present to my imagination, those romantic scenes which surrounded my habitation, many of which rose under my eye, or were formed by my conducting hand, while the remainder appear in all their native wildness, and are either beautifully irregular, or excite the ideas of admira-

tion and honor. My dwelling was situated on the summit of a towering eminence, between two navigable rivers, which diffused itself into an extensive plain, agreeably diversified with



[View of the Parsonage at Pownalborough.]

clumps of evergreens, and lofty spreading trees, interspersed with grass plats and cultivated herbage. Around the house lay a garden, containing three acres, mostly on a gentle declivity; several regular squares and elegant parterres had been created out of the rocky and stubborn materials, divided into walks and borders, either crowded with thriving fruit trees of various species, or adorned with a multitude of various shrubs and flowers, which added softness, splendour and beauty to the wilderness, and perfumed the air, already pure as the virgin breezes of Paradise, with their blended fragrance. The other parts of this enclosure continued still in all the misshapen rudeness of nature, where she puts on the roughest appearance, and wore an aspect wrinkled, severe, rugged and deformed beyond expression. Here we beheld the prostrate trunk of some enormous tree which sunk beneath the burden of age and infirmities, or else was borne down headlong by the rapid tempest, mouldering into its original dust, while a

numerous offspring were springing up on every side, and exulting in the pride of youthful verdure; there, on the margin of a rocky eminence, covered with thorns and briars, you might discover the breaking precipice with gaping caverns and ragged fragments, tumbling to the bottom, composed a pile of deformity, the habitation of reptiles and vermin. On the western quarter, beyond the limits of the garden and a winding road, lay a large open grove of maples and beeches, with two or three majestic oaks, which reared their venerable heads above the surrounding trees; at a further distance, on the declivity of the hill, is situated a stately forest, sloping into an impenetrable swamp of spruce and cedar, ending in cultivated fields along the flowery banks of Kennebeck, while from the chamber windows we have a prospect of the White Mountains, above fifty miles remote, concealing their glittering summits among the clouds. From the same apartment, to the south, appeared a number of settlements, stretching, for miles together, on the Eastern River, and the waters of Merrymeeting Bay, with the adjacent hills, closes the delightful view. On the northern quarter, at the distance of fifty rods, almost obscured by a rising grove of birches, appears the Church, an elegant building, standing on a gravelly spot of ground, surrounded with a large piece of beautiful turf. From the eastern door in front, through a spacious avenue, we have a fine prospect of the river Muntooscottook,\* which appears, by a deception, almost contiguous to the garden, running at the bottom of a large open pasture; beyond the river the land rises with a majestic grandeur, and, swelling with a stupendous arch, covered, with trees, the horizon." †

It has, we presume, sufficiently appeared, that the "Itinerant Mission on the Eastern Frontiers of Massachusetts Bay" was no sinecure. The territory it embraced was extensive, the inhabitants thinly scattered, and the means of travelling were inconvenient, and oftentimes dangerous. The poverty and ignorance of the people, and the unscrupulous opposition of some

---

\* Or Eastern River.

† See note H.

persons of wealth and influence greatly increased labors which were of themselves sufficiently arduous to have discouraged most men. To all these difficulties were now to be added others. The date of Mr. Bailey's coming into these regions was almost the same as that of the commencement of those measures on the part of the British government, which finally alienated the American colonies. The nature of these measures and their dates, are too well known to the intelligent reader to render it necessary that they should be stated here.

The first instances of political persecution which Mr. Bailey experienced, occurred at a distance from the place of his residence. On the 7th September, 1774, he set off with a friend for Boston. His journal states that he was "insulted the next day.

"Sept. 8th. Lodged at Millican's.\* Ill treated.

"11th. Lodged at Newbury: the country all in commotion.

"14th. Convention Sermon preached by Mr. Seargent.

"23d. Mobbed at Brunswick; got home at night.

"26th. Abroad; fled from the mob. Lodged at George Miers'."

He afterwards writes to a friend: "I was obliged to abscond in the night, to avoid the fury of the mob, and to keep myself concealed two days."

Under date of October 17th, 1774, Mr. Bailey wrote as follows, to the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts:—

"I take this opportunity of writing by Capt. Callahan, one of my Wardens, bound directly from this place to Glasgow, since the unhappy condition of this country renders it wholly unsafe to trust a letter by the way of Boston to London. I have, since my last, visited the upper settlements upon Kennebeck river, to the distance of fifty miles, where I baptized

---

\* In Scarborough.

twenty infants and two adults. Nothing remarkable has occurred in my parish, but I have the satisfaction to observe, that none of my hearers have entered into any desperate combinations against the authority of Great Britain, nor joined in any of those tumults and insurrections which have lately prevailed in other parts of the Province, and even in the neighbouring towns. On my late journey to Boston, I was frequently insulted and mobbed, and immediately after my return, this place was invaded by one hundred men in arms, while the Court was sitting, vowing revenge upon me and several of my parishioners, for opposing the solemn league and covenant. To avoid their fury, I was obliged to flee from my house in the night, and to conceal myself for two days. The mob was at length obliged to disperse, without success, or doing any considerable mischief. In the neighbouring settlements, however, they assaulted both persons and property, brake into houses and stores, abused the inhabitants, and destroyed their substance, and, after being intoxicated with strong liquor, fought among themselves. We are daily threatened with another hostile invasion; and, it may be remarked, that these insurrections are encouraged by some of our magistrates, and the late mob was headed by a member of the General Assembly. In short, nothing can be more dismal than the situation of the Episcopal ministers, and, indeed, of all who have any dependence upon Great Britain. They are daily persecuted with provoking insults, loaded with shocking execrations, and alarmed with the most bloody menaces, and that, not by the meaner rabble, but by persons of the highest distinction, and even those who heretofore were in the greatest repute for moderation, piety and tenderness, have now lost every sentiment of humanity, behave with the wildest fury and destruction, and breathe forth nothing but slaughter and destruction against all who are unwilling to engage in their extravagant schemes. I have observed, with regard to this Province and New Hampshire, where I have a large acquaintance, that the friends of government are chiefly either Episcopalians, or sober, sensible persons of other denominations, who are equally averse to infidelity and enthusiasm; but if the sons of liberty should

prevail, our destruction will be inevitable, and thousands of His Majesty's loyal subjects, who acknowledge the authority of the parent country from principles of conscience as well as grateful inclination, will instantly be reduced to the extremest misery and ruin. Nothing has inspired these opposers of government with greater resolution and fury, than a speech said to be written by the Bishop of St. Asaphs.\* I had an opportunity of remarking the fatal effects of this performance, not only at Boston, but in travelling two hundred miles through a populous part of the country. This has given them occasion to abuse every Episcopalian who cannot acknowledge the sentiments of His Lordship, with the forced construction they are pleased to put upon His words. The shutting up of Boston harbour, and the prevailing violence of this raging faction, have already reduced me to great distress in my private affairs, and it is with the utmost difficulty I am able to procure the necessaries of life."

The winter of 1774-5 passed off without much political disturbance in the "West Precinct of Pownalborough," where the church was situated. From the journals of Mr. Bailey, it seems that the number of attendants on public worship during the three years after the church was built, ranged from fifty to one hundred and thirty.

The news of Lexington battle, (which was some days in reaching Kennebec,) caused considerable excitement among the people. Mr. Bailey states that on the day of the receipt of the intelligence "of Col. Percy's defeat," he was "abroad, and assaulted by a number of ruffians." Two days after this, Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, Rector of St. Michael's Church, Marblehead, Mass., arrived with his family. He had been driven by political persecutions from his parish, and sought refuge with the subject of this Memoir, who had married his sister.

"The circumstances of Mr. Weeks' family determined him

---

\* Bishop Shipley. This production was quoted by Hon. Daniel Webster, in his speech, delivered at Washington, July 4th, 1851, on the occasion of laying the corner stone of the enlargement of the Capitol.

to seek a refuge in the regions of Kennebeck, where he had some possessions in land. He arrived at Frankfort, with his family, on Wednesday evening, April 26th. Notice was immediately given to M. and the rabble, and notwithstanding their wide dispersions, the latter were assembled at the Court-house by sunrise the next morning, to prevent him from landing his furniture. The multitude were evidently convened to support the Committee in their malignant designs upon Mr. Weeks, against whom they had nothing to allege but his profession as a clergyman of the Church of England; and his character, which was not only irreproachable, but exemplary. . . . In the midst of this bustle and confusion, the Committees of several neighbouring towns happened to arrive, when it was agreed to leave the affair of Mr. Weeks to their united determination. After keeping that worthy gentleman under severe examination, standing before them as a criminal above an hour, they dismissed him awhile, for the purpose of mature consultation among themselves; then, calling him in the second time into their important and mighty presence, compelled him to sign an ignominious paper, and then gave him a permit for landing his goods.” \*

In June of this year, Mr. Bailey received an invitation from the wardens of the Church at Falmouth, to officiate there during the absence of Rev. Mr. Wiswell, the Rector of the parish.

The following is found in the MS. “History,” etc., quoted above, and is stated to have occurred in August of this year: “One Harvey, as the rabble were marching along the road by the Church at Pownalborough, loaded his musket, and then presented it at the parsonage-house, where the Rev. Messrs. Weeks and Bailey resided. The latter, with several children, was then looking out of the window, when one of the company demanded of Harvey ‘what inducement he had to behave in this manner?’ He replied: ‘this is a — nest of — tories, and I am going to blow as many of them to the — as possible.’ Having finished this remarkable speech, he snapped his gun several times, but it was Providentially pre-

---

\* MS. History of the Eastern Country, by Rev. J. Bailey.

vented from going off, notwithstanding it was never known, before or after this experiment, to miss fire. And, it is further observable, that the moment this fellow reached the Court-house, he discharged his musket without the least difficulty. The family thus devoted to destruction, were, at the time, wholly ignorant of their danger, and received their information immediately after, from a couple of young fellows, more civil and humane than the rest. It was asserted that Harvey borrowed this gun of M., but what temptation he had to intrust it to a stranger, remains a secret, unless we conclude that he might, with greater safety, engage him in some fatal piece of mischief, than one who had connexions among us.”

“About the beginning of this summer, one Whiting was engaged to officiate at the Court-house. This fellow, now 19 or 20 years of age, had been extremely notorious for his vicious and idle conduct, having first been expelled from the college at Cambridge, and afterwards, (it is reported,) obliged to flee from the seminary at Providence, for stealing the President’s horse. He had been employed for some time as a schoolmaster in Kennebeck, but was represented as a person disposed to ridicule both religion and virtue, yet pretending to a sudden and miraculous conversion, and assuming uncommon zeal in the cause of liberty, he is conceived to be an happy instrument of carrying on the blessed work of ruining the Church; and though it is affirmed that he boldly preached the sermons of President Davies, and other writers of a sprightly and fanatical turn; yet he was highly caressed by our leaders, and extolled as an angel from Heaven to proclaim the everlasting Gospel.

---

\* Rev. J. W. Weeks wrote to the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, as follows:—

“PORTSMOUTH, Sept. 7th, 1775.

“The condition of your Missionaries is truly deplorable: they have enemies all around them, and no friends but God and their consciences. I am now stripped of the comforts and conveniences of life; my wife and a family of eight helpless children are obliged to seek shelter in a wilderness, the horrors of which they had never seen or felt before. And even there they have not been suffered to remain in quiet. Their happiness has been often interrupted by insults, and by the snapping of a loaded gun at Mr. Bailey and me, while walking in the garden. We have no hope, but in the experience of your wonted charity.”—*Hawkins’ Hist. of Missions, etc.*, p. 248.



And though service was constantly performed every Sunday at church, either by Mr. Weeks or Mr. Bailey, yet all who were inclined to favor the present commotions attended his vociferations, and besides, some persons, who desired still to adhere to the Church, went occasionally to meeting, hoping by this seasonable compliance either to avoid the imputation of being enemies to the country, or to escape the persecution they conceived was descending on their neighbours. . . .

“But Whiting was not the only Apostle of Kennebeck. One Alden, a noted Ana-baptist preacher from Great Britain, made his appearance in these parts, and was extremely instrumental in seducing ignorant and credulous people. And, notwithstanding his character, attended his itinerant performances, and it was acknowledged wherever he travelled that he had twice been dismissed from the ministerial office for gross immoralities, and had been tried at the Old Bailey for the crime of perjury, yet he was followed and applauded by the undistinguishing mobility and persons of distinction, as some great prophet, or messenger from heaven. • This fellow preached in almost every settlement along the banks of Kennebeck, and greatly conduced to bring everything sacred and decent into contempt.” •

“The inhabitants of Frankfort, or the West Parish of Pownalborough, continued quiet and composed till about Christmas, 1775, when Mr. Goodwin, a deputy-sheriff and jail keeper, began to spirit up the people. This man was open, generous, positive, and blustering,—served this year as Church Warden, but was intimately connected with M. and N. He suddenly attempted to raise all the young fellows among us in defence of liberty, and engaged them to assemble on New Year’s day, to erect the standard of defiance. Every method of allurements and menace was practised to convene the people upon this important occasion; but about twenty persons had resolution enough to disregard every incitement, and refused to give their attendance. The confusion and uproar which ensued were beyond example; the day was consumed in the exercises of

drinking, swearing, traitorous imprecations, and the most horrible effusions of profaneness and impiety. Several people, in the fervor and wantonness of their zeal, proposed that the minister should be conducted by a sufficient military force from his habitation to the pole, and there be obliged to consecrate this exalted monument of freedom: others, indeed, were so modest as to oppose the motion, and when it was committed to the common suffrage, it was carried in the negative by a trifling majority only.\* . . . . Immediately after this distinguishing event, near one-half of the congregation withdrew from the Church, the minister was stigmatized as a mortal enemy to his country for neglecting to observe a thanksgiving appointed by the Provincial Congress, though the very persons who were loudest in their exclamations certainly knew that he had received no information time enough to give publick notice.

"My Presbyterian neighbours were so zealous for the good of their country that they killed seven of my sheep out of twelve, and shot a fine heifer as she was feeding in my pasture, and my necessities were so great in the following winter that I was obliged to dispose of the remainder of my cattle except one cow. The next spring, as I was endeavoring to cultivate a garden spot, which I had prepared from a rocky wilderness, with great labour and expense, the leaders immediately began to interrupt my honest endeavours for the support of my family. They daily threatened that prodigious numbers of people were assembling in the adjacent settlements to put down the Church and to burn my habitation over my head."

---

\* "It was determined that a liberty-pole should be raised before the Church door, 'to affront' (as it was said) 'the parson, and to express their defiance of the King,' but Mr. Goodwin, a Church Warden, the principal conductor, (under the secret direction, as I suppose, of M.,) being opposed by the Vestry, eight in number, induced the people to erect it on the plains. M., some days before, had engaged to give them a quantity of rum to elevate their spirits upon the glorious occasion. When the appointed day came this gentleman, upon their appearance, according to previous agreement, delivered his present, with the assurance that he would have cheerfully assisted in person had he not been unwell. Capt. Lovejoy insisted upon my being sent for to consecrate the pole by prayer, and, if I refused, it was purposed that I should be whipped around it, but the motion was lost by a majority of two." †

† *Rev. J. Bailey's MS.*

*May 3d, 1777.* A son was born to Mr. Bailey, who was baptized by the name of Charles Hugh Percy.\*

From Mr. Bailey's Journal of this year we extract the following:—

"*May 23d.* Summoned before the Committee.

"*24th.* Examined by the Committee.

"*28th.* Laid under bonds.

"*August 11th.* Forbidden to pray for the King. Only delivered a sermon. Thirty-five present.

"*23d.* On a journey: lodged at Rev. Mr. Bass's, Newburyport.

"*September 10th.* Visited at Georgetown. Baptized ten children.

"*October 28th.* Before the Committee for not reading the Declaration of Independence, for praying for the King, and for preaching a seditious sermon."

In a letter written some time after this to the secretary of the Venerable Society, Mr. Bailey says: "In the universal confusion, tumult, and destruction, which prevailed in the beginning of the war, many persons were driven by the impulses of fear to act against both conscience and inclination. On the one hand, we were assaulted by armed multitudes, pouring out torrents of reproach and execrations, and threatening to make us the victims of their vengeance. On the other, we were besieged by the entreaties and tears of our friends to practice a little compliance, (which, by the way, only made our enemies the fiercer,) while we were confidently told that our brethren in other parts had fully yielded to the requisitions

---

\* A proof of Mr. Bailey's loyalty. The name selected for the child was that of Lord Percy, who fought at Lexington. In a letter received from a descendant of Rev. Mr. Bailey, the following statement occurs: "It was the intention of Mr. and Mrs. Bailey that his name should be *Hugh Percy*, but Mrs. Callahan, the Godmother, seeing so many Patriots in the Church, was afraid to give this name, and called him Charles, the name of her husband. He was baptized Charles Percy, and always signed his name so."

of Congress and the spirit of the times. I had myself all these difficulties to encounter. In particular, the Sunday after the news of the Declaration of Independence arrived, for besides the ravings and menaces of the wild sons of freedom, the more moderate of the same character assured me that every clergyman had both omitted all prayers for His Majesty, and published the Declaration of Independency, while my real friends earnestly besought me to prevent the destruction of our Church. I still refused, answering them that we must conscientiously perform our duty, and leave the Church to the protection of Heaven, and that if all my brethren had departed from their integrity, I could never think myself excused from blame by following their example. I will observe, that though I had then courage to resist, yet perhaps my fortitude at another time might have failed."

Some of the old enemies of the Episcopal Church, and its minister, were not discouraged by their former unsuccessful attempts to establish the Congregational form of worship within the bounds of his parish. Their proceedings caused Mr. Bailey to write to eminent men, lawyers and others, in different parts of the country, on this subject. The persons thus addressed were, Mr. Oliver Whipple, of Portsmouth, N. H., Rev. Jacob Duché, of Philadelphia, and Mr. David Sewall, of York. Mr. Bailey says, that "the mal-contents were only seven in number;" that "they excluded all Churchmen from the privilege of voting, and agreed, in March, 1776, to raise a tax upon the inhabitants,—Quakers as well as Churchmen,—towards the support of the Gospel." "This," he continues, "is the declared purpose, both in the tax bill and in the warrant for distraining. Our people are by no means in affluent circumstances, and, after having generously, according to their ability, contributed to my support, are compelled to pay the above tax with the utmost rigour. The collectors are seizing their cattle by violence, and selling them at publick vendue for a mere trifle." Mr. Bailey states further, that "these men have no meeting-house, no embodied church, no communicants, no minister, and no preaching, except three months in 1775." He writes to one of the above-named gentlemen, that

the persons spoken of "have proceeded to collect the tax with the utmost rigor, and several circumstances of ungenerous severity, such as breaking into barns when the proprietors were absent, taking away cattle by violence, selling them at auction, and multiplying charges, to the great distress of the unfortunate sufferers. . . . Those who retain any sentiments of tenderness and humanity, when acquainted with the circumstances of this eastern country, must compassionate our situation: a people confined to a cold and rugged soil, encumbered with forests, and divided by rivers, exposed to invasions from Canada, deprived of free navigation, prevented from selling, as usual, their timber for the necessities of life, and denied the advantages of receiving provisions from abroad as formerly. These occurrences have reduced us, (especially myself, who depended chiefly upon the Society for support,) to the lowest condition of poverty, and almost to nakedness and famine."

In a letter to Rev. Dr. Byles, in the autumn of this year, Mr. Bailey writes: "I have hitherto performed Divine service every Sunday, though at the risk of my liberty, and even of my life. I have had a warrant after me ever since the 20th of July, for transportation, but by concealing myself during the week time, I have as yet escaped. Mr. Parker and Mr. Bass are the only clergymen beside myself who officiate, but they wholly omit praying for the King, and my principal offence is neglecting to follow their example."

*October 10th, 1777.* To Rev. J. W. Weeks, Marblehead:—

" . . . I have a warrant issued against me ever since the 20th of July, and several officers have attempted to take me, but hitherto without success. I have officiated every Sunday. Warrants are out for a great number of people, some of whom have absconded, and others go armed. John McNamara has been fined twenty dollars, and imprisoned five days, but is now dismissed upon bail. I am a little surprised to find you coupling me with Mr. Bass upon all occasions. The latter, without encountering any persecution or difficulty, complied with the first motion of his congregation, (mostly high sons of liberty,) wholly to drop all prayers for the King. I, on the con-

trary, continued the service, without the least alteration, sometime after you and many of my brethren had made omissions; and indeed I was chiefly induced to do so by your example. It was a long time after you had ceased officiating before I either heard of it, or the law in support of Independency, so that I had already offended beyond the hopes of pardon. Previous to this my parishioners were severely persecuted, both as Churchmen and Tories, which immediately excited the indignation of the friends of government for twenty miles round. These, of every denomination, encouraged me to proceed, and generously contributed to my support; and though I have left out the most obnoxious sentences, I have never omitted to pray for the King, and I have continued to officiate, not to please our enemies, but the Royalists scattered through the country. My constant hearers, (though all, except one or two, are friends of government,) are but a small number in comparison with the rest, and indeed our continuing to assemble for Divine Service is considered by the Whigs as the principal support of our party. They imagine that it gives life and spirit to our opposition, and besides the chief objection against me is my praying for the King. For this single offence I have been threatened, insulted, condemned, and laid under heavy bonds, and for this I am now doomed for transportation. My friend, Mr. Lee, is Captain of a company at New York; Callahan is Captain of a twelve-gun sloop-of-war in the King's service; George Pochard is at Quebec, so that the situation of my affairs is well known at all these places."

The following from one of his MSS. will give an idea of his sufferings at this time:—

"Mr. Bailey, Missionary at Pownalborough, having been concealed in his own house for the space of five weeks, received information that a design was formed against his life. This intelligence determined him to attempt an escape. In consequence of this determination he left his habitation in the evening of October 15th, and was conducted through intricate paths, about two miles, by his brother and Dr. Mayer. It was conjectured that some desperate ruffians were placed at a little distance from the house, either to intercept his flight, or to

destroy him on the spot. A couple of young lads were fired upon as they were riding along the road, the people doubtless imagining Mr. Bailey to be on horseback, returning home. He was constrained to leave his family in circumstances truly distressing; a wife with a young infant, and two girls about eleven, and no kind of provisions or money for their support, except a few garden roots. After spending part of the night at his brother's, he arose before daylight, and, with a couple of young persons, embarked on board a canoe, and under the concealment of a thick fog, escaped to Brunswick, beyond the limits of the county where he resided. He was here in great anxiety, having money for only one day's subsistence, and not finding Dr. Moor arrived with his horse, as he expected, he was obliged to remain several hours at a publick house in cruel suspense, and exposed to the observation of every traveller. At length the appearance of his horse relieved his perplexity, and enabled him to pursue his journey without molestation. The next day he arrived at Falmouth, and was cordially received and kindly entertained by his friends. Some unexpected benefactions raised his spirits and encouraged him to proceed as far as Portsmouth, the capital of New Hampshire; but before he reached this seat of rebellion he was greatly alarmed with the misfortune of General Burgoyne and the army under his command. At York, he encountered the barbarous exultations of the rebels upon this important occasion; and as he entered Portsmouth, the firing of cannon, the ringing of bells, and the vociferation of the populace were circumstances that increased his chagrin. He was, however, highly caressed by the friends of government, who assisted to sympathize with him, and to console each other on the gloomy appearance of publick affairs.

"After travelling to Boston and visiting a multitude of his acquaintance, of various ranks, and of opposite sentiments, and having received many instances of generosity from the Royalists, he returned home about Christmas, and though he had endured great anxiety on account of his family, he had the pleasure of finding them in comfortable circumstances, the

friends of government having liberally contributed towards their support.”\*

In the early part of the following year, Mr. Bailey received a letter from the Rev. Mather Byles, formerly Rector of Christ Church, Boston, but who had left the country. It is dated Halifax, N. S., February 17th, 1778. The following is an extract:—

“I am commissioned to inform you, if you have not already availed yourself of the collection for the suffering clergy in America, that you are entitled to draw upon Messrs. Hoar & Company, Bankers, in Fleet Street, for Fifty Pounds, as your Dividend; and that if you think proper to enclose your draft to Dr. Caner, he will endeavor to procure the money, and transmit, or pay it, as you shall direct. Your letter to Dr. Caner may be directed to the New England Coffee House, or to the care of Watson & Rashley, Merchants, on Garlick Hill, London, or to No. 30 Suffolk St., Westminster.”

Mr. Bailey's daily Journal for the entire year 1777 is missing. From that for part of 1778, we extract the following:—

“*April 19th.* Easter Sunday. 50 present. 15 Communicants.

“*20th.* Chose the same officers.”

It is mentioned occasionally that there was no service in church, but no reason is assigned. The church, however, appears to have been open the greater part of the first four months of this year, with an attendance varying from twelve to fifty-six. A number of infants were baptized by Mr. Bailey in the same time, in various parts of this region.

Mr. Bailey left home on the 19th July of this year, on a journey to Boston, and was absent some four weeks. A full journal of occurrences at this time is preserved, and some things recorded in it are thought worthy of being extracted:—

“*July 20th.* Left the mouth of the Kennebec River.

“*22d.* Arrived in Boston. I was received by Rev. Mr. Parker and his lady with the highest tokens of tenderness and politeness.



*"July 23d.* After breakfast went to visit the famous Dr. Byles, who was detained a prisoner in his own house. He received me, according to his manner, with great freedom, and entertained me with a variety of puns. He was mightily pleased with the letters I brought him from his son and granddaughter, and instructed his daughters, a couple of fine young ladies, to read them. I observed that he had a large collection of curiosities, and the best library I had seen in this country. He is a gentleman of learning and great imagination, has an uncommon share of pride, and though agreeable when discoursing upon any subject, yet the perpetual reach after puns renders his ordinary conversation rather distasteful to persons of elegance and refinement. He gave me a circumstantial account of his trial when condemned for transportation. He carefully preserved his talent for punning through the whole. I recollect one instance: when he was conducted into the apartment where his judges sat with great solemnity, who desired him to sit by the fire, as the weather was cold, 'Gentlemen,' said he, 'when I came among you I expected persecution, but I could not think you would have offered me the fire so suddenly!' After looking at several fine prospects, and hearing two or three tunes on the organ by one of his daughters, I took my leave, with an invitation and promise to renew my visit. I then repaired to Mr. Domett's, and was kindly received by that worthy and benevolent couple. They no sooner perceived the poverty and uncouthness of my apparel, than they contributed towards a reparation, and furnished me with a handsome coat, jacket and breeches. My dress before this recruit was as follows: an old rusty thread-bare black coat, which had been turned, and the button-holes worked with thread almost white, with a number of breaches about the elbows; a jacket of the same, much fractured about the button-holes, and hanging loose, occasioned by the leanness of my carcass, which was at this time greatly emaciated by the constant exercise of temperance; a pair of breeches, constructed of coarse bed-tick, of a dirty yellow colour, and so uncoat (*sic*) as to suffer several repairs, in particular, a perpendicular patch upon each knee of a different complexion

from the original piece; a pair of blue thick-seamed stockings, well adapted to exclude the extreme heat of the season; a hat with many holes in the brim, adorned with much darning in other places, of a decent medium between black and white. My wig was called white in better days, but now resembled in colour an old greasy bed blanket; the curls, alas! had long since departed, and the locks hung lank, deformed, and clammy about my neck, while the shrinking caul left both my ears exposed to publick view. But the generous Mr. Parker soon made me a present of a very elegant wig, which, though it might not furnish my brain with an addition of wisdom, yet certainly enabled me to shew my head with greater confidence. . . .

"*July 27th.* Called upon Mr. Haskins according to agreement. He gave me fifteen dollars.

"*28th.* This morning called upon Mrs. Domett, who gave me fourteen dollars in paper and three dollars and five crowns in silver, which, she assured me, was a present from — young ladies through James —, about 17, and the other 16 years. The same day received five dollars from — and Green, and thirty dollars from the Church Wardens.

"*29th.* Concluded this morning, notwithstanding the contempt which is poured upon the Britons from every quarter, to petition the Council for liberty to depart for Nova Scotia with my family; and, because I perceived that our magistrates could not admit of pleas of conscience, I confined myself to the simple article of poverty. Mr. Parker had in the morning obtained leave of Mr. Powell, the President, to offer my petition. Accordingly, having it prepared, I went down to the Court-house and presented it to that gentleman, who engaged to give me his interest. Drank tea with Dr. Byles and his daughters.

"*August 2d.* This day being Sunday could not assist Mr. Parker for want of a suitable discourse. As I was walking to church in the morning Mr. Lash put a guinea into my hand.

"*4th.* Received this day eight dollars from Mr. Thomas Amory.

"6th. After dinner waited upon Dr. Lloyd. . . . The Dr. at parting gave me nine dollars.

"7th. This morning at Mr. Wallace's, where Mr. William Gardiner introduced me to Mr. Reed, a gentleman who had been carted out of town. He made me a present of twelve dollars. A few minutes before the hour appointed I arrived at Mr. Domett's, and just after I was seated a gentleman rapped at the door and gave Mrs. Domett a paper for me. She informed me that it was Mr. Erskine, an Irish gentleman. Upon opening the paper we found enclosed two hundred and seventeen dollars. This Mr. Erskine gave me at Portsmouth, last November, sixteen dollars. He is nephew to Sir William Erskine, Colonel of the Edinborough regiment, raised for the service against America. He now exerted himself in collecting this money for me among his acquaintance from a principle of pure generosity. . . . When I came home, Mr. Warner sent his compliments, with a very good surtout and twenty dollars.

"8th. This morning took a breakfast at Mr. Domett's, and while I was in that hospitable and lucky mansion had twenty-one dollars sent me by Mrs. Sheaf. . . . I then paid Mrs. Renkin and received my note. . . . Mr. Parker gave me a very sensible letter to Major Goodwin, and his worthy lady furnished me with provisions for my passage. The kindness and generosity of this agreeable pair ought to excite my warmest gratitude, for, not to mention my board and lodging for near three weeks, I received from them in presents to the value of £15, lawful money. About 10 o'clock Dr. Miers and I took our leave, and embarked on board Capt. Smith. . . . About 11 got under sail."

The next night found the vessel in which Mr. Bailey had taken passage at anchor in Portsmouth harbor, having taken shelter there from an easterly storm. On the second day after they had put into this port, Mr. Bailey went on shore to visit Rev. Mr. Stevens, of Kittery, who had befriended him when in college. Here he found Rev. Jeremy Belknap, (afterwards D. D.,) "with his wife, arrived from Dover." "I quickly per-

ceived him," says Mr. Bailey, "to be a son of moderation. It was evident from their conversation that most of the Congregational ministers are in very distressed circumstances on account of the fall of paper money; but when Mr. Belknap complained of his situation, Mr. Stevens informed him that mine was still worse, for I could receive no salary."

\* \* \* \* \*

"22d. Arrived at Pownalborough, where I had the satisfaction of finding my family in good health, though they had greatly suffered in my absence for want of provisions."

Four days after his arrival Mr. Bailey wrote to Mr. Domett, in Boston. In this letter he says: "I am prohibited, in the strongest terms, by Col. Cushing,\* from officiating any longer, and though I have promised to acquiesce, yet he still threatens to impose the oath."

In writing to Mr. John Pickering, Speaker of the House of Representatives, he says, "I was taken into a list on the Transportation Act last summer, and after having had the matter debated several hours in a full town meeting, I was voted not inimical, by a large majority. Our magistrates, being enraged at this disappointment, issued out a warrant, notwithstanding, to apprehend me. The judges and jury, being of their appointment, I knew that there was no possibility of my escaping if I came to trial. This determined me to continue prisoner in my own house, till my health was affected, and I perceived it to be no longer a place of security. I then fled about the middle of October last in the night, and continued roving about New Hampshire and elsewhere till the act expired. I left my family in very distressed circumstances, my wife having a sucking child, suffered greatly for want of provisions before she obtained any relief. I have been unable to receive any part of my salary since June, 1775, which has obliged me to work hard for my subsistence, but these restless spirits will neither suffer me to enjoy a moment's repose, nor to reap the fruits of my labours. When the act for swearing took place, I was immediately pursued on a

---

\* High-Sheriff of the County.

magistrate's warrant, but before it was properly served I was constrained to petition the Council for leave to depart into Nova Scotia; the matter was suspended till the expedition against Newport should be over.

"I returned from Boston a few days since, but am threatened with immediate imprisonment if ever I attempt to officiate again, either in publick or private, by which means I am deprived of every support, except what arises from charity. In Boston I was treated with great compassion and tenderness, both by Whigs and Tories, and received several generous benefactions, even from the former. But during this absence my family severely felt the distresses of hunger and famine, and sometimes had nothing to eat for several days together but an handful of vegetables and a little milk and water, and at other times they remained twenty-four hours without any sustenance at all, till Mrs. Bailey had almost determined to die rather than make her situation known, for it has long been criminal for any person in this country to afford us support, and many have been prosecuted as Tories for no other reason. Human nature cannot but reflect with reluctance upon such unchristian and cruel proceedings, neither is it possible for sufferers to love and esteem those institutions which put it in the power of bad men to indulge their ill nature, their malice and revenge, on innocent and defenceless objects.

"Being afterwards at a settlement about fifty miles from my own habitation, at the requisition of the people to preach and baptize their children, I was assaulted by a violent mob armed with clubs, axes, and other weapons, who stripped me naked in search of papers, pretending that I had conceived a design of escaping to Quebeck."

The following was addressed to Rev. S. Parker, Rector of Trinity Church, Boston, and is dated October 1st, 1778:—

"In order to explain a little the nature of my situation, and to elucidate the character of my persecutors, I beg leave to relate the following incident. The County Court is now sitting, and I am this minute informed that I am presented before the Grand Jury for preaching treason on the Sunday after Easter. When I came to examine the matter I found there was noth-

ing in either of my sermons which tended in the remotest sense to meddle with the present times; this induced me to search the lessons for the day, and I presently found that the sixteenth chapter of Numbers was the lesson appointed in the Morning Service, and that the twenty-sixth verse contained almost the very words sworn to in the deposition upon which they founded their presentment. In order to save you the trouble of opening your Bible I will quote you the words: 'And he spake unto the congregation saying, Depart, I pray you, from the tents of these wicked men, and touch nothing of theirs, lest ye be consumed in all their sins.'"

"The Grand Jury, however, at the instance of Langdon, the attorney, refused to find a bill."

In writing to another friend, Mr. Bailey mentions that he "gave the earliest intelligence of the above-named matter to Rev. Mr. Parker, who presented his letter to the Council, at which they laughed very heartily. M. and N., ignorant of my correspondence, hastened up to Boston with the fellow's deposition on which the complaint was founded, determined to prevent, if possible, the success of my petition, but though wafted upon the wings of malice and ill-nature, their arrival was too late."

The following extract from a letter written in November of this year, shows that the troubles of this poor Missionary were far from being ended: "About the beginning of November I received a permission from the General Court to remove with my family and substance to Halifax, but no opportunity presenting, after a double disappointment in attempting to get away, and the severe season advancing, I ventured again to perform Divine Service, being earnestly intreated by my parishioners, and compelled by the following inducements: I considered that Mr. Cushing had no authority to silence me, as there was no law in this or any of the United States to prohibit persons from preaching, and that no minister of any denomination was required to take the oath of allegiance to qualify him for the discharge of his office; neither has the oath, as far as I can learn, been tendered to any preacher. I reflected that this attempt to prevent the performance of Di-

vine Service must be regarded as a profane and daring intrusion upon sacred things, and not only a manifest invasion of our religious, as well as civil rights, but an impious design, as much as possible, to affect the spiritual interest, and even to injure, if not to destroy, the souls of my parishioners; and further, that such conduct would be received and commented on in any other Christian country, as a crime of the most dangerous, horrid, and malignant nature. I considered myself as under the most sacred obligations to perform the worship of God, and to preach among my people, until prevented by my absence, or restrained by the laws of my country, especially when there is no Religious Society of our own, or any other denomination, where we could possibly attend. I plainly perceived that the young people were strolling about with little regard for the Lord's Day, that all sense of religion was in danger of being expelled, and that nothing could be expected but the fatal consequences of vice, irreligion, and profaneness. I must confess, however, that I found myself in a very distressing dilemma—the inveterate malice of my enemies on the one hand, and the obligations of conscience and duty on the other; here their illegal and arbitrary mandates to restrain, there the dictates of reason and humanity, and even the authority of Heaven to compel me. Could I hesitate any longer? You may depend upon it, this is all I have done to rekindle the indignation of these restless spirits, and I am persecuted afresh, not for being an enemy to my country, but for preaching the Gospel and performing Divine Service among a set of poor and inoffensive people, who are indeed reproached and persecuted for their attachment to me.”

Mr. Bailey states, in a letter to a friend, that “on the Sunday before Christmas, the weather being pleasant for this turbulent season, we had a full congregation, and this indignant magistrate,\* observing a number of people passing by his house in their attendance upon Divine Service, sent directly for one of my Wardens, and with a flaming countenance and haughty tone of voice, and the most insolent airs of authority, ordered

---

\* The High Sheriff.

him to deliver me the following imperious message: 'Tell the Parson that if he presumes to discharge his functions any longer, I will immediately commit him to prison, and that if he do not enter into a written agreement to forbear the exercise of Publick Worship, I will myself appear on Christmas day, attended with a number of resolute fellows, and drag him headlong out of the pulpit.' But he firmly promised, at the same time, that he would never molest me whilst I continued in my own house."

Mr. Bailey sent a letter to this individual, in which he says, "my intentions were immediately to remove upon my receiving permission from the (General) Court. But having met with one or two disappointments, and the winter advancing in all its horrors, I found it impossible to depart till the weather should become more settled; since no one could be prevailed upon to venture either himself, or vessel in such a stormy season; and besides, to undertake a voyage with a woman and young child in any convenience I am able to procure, I must be divested both of humanity and common prudence. Being detained in this manner I was induced to preach at the earnest desire of my parishioners, to whom I am under the highest obligations of gratitude for their kind and generous concern to relieve me in my necessitous circumstances. I considered that it was certainly my duty to comply with their request till my removal; that it could not possibly injure any person alive, nor occasion any damage to my country, for which I shall always retain the warmest affection; and that it was not repugnant to any laws, since preachers of all denominations, as Ana-baptists, Separates, Quakers, prisoners, &c., are allowed to preach without either taking the oath, or suffering any kind of molestation. . . . Will it afford you any satisfaction, on the one hand, to enforce the oath at the expense of my conscience, and the destruction of my interest, or on the other to confine me in a wretched prison, to the ruin of my health, and perhaps my life? . . . I must again repeat my desire of entering into some friendly agreement, and that you will not put me to the trouble and expense of making another application to the General Court."



The next day after this letter was delivered was Christmas. On account of the extreme severity of the weather, divine service was omitted. Mr. Bailey's family, with a few friends, had just sat down to dinner, when the High Sheriff entered the house. A female relative who was present went into the kitchen where this officer was, and endeavored to "mitigate the passion which inflamed him." During the conversation, one of his deputies and a relative joined the principal actor in this business. The former uttered language marked by profaneness and obscenity, which so provoked a faithful man servant that he threatened him with personal violence if it should be repeated. This immediately caused the deputy to attack the servant. . . .

The account breaks off abruptly at this point. The above imperfect narrative has been inserted to fill out, in a measure, the picture of the troubles that Mr. Bailey experienced after he had received permission from the highest authority to leave the country, and was hindered from availing himself of that permission only by unavoidable circumstances.

Mr. Bailey was waiting for a proper opportunity of removing to Halifax. This opportunity did not offer till June of the following year, 1779.

The Church at Georgetown had been under the care of the subject of this Memoir from his first arrival in Kennebec, excepting the four years covered by the ministry of the Rev. W. W. Wheeler. The following from a letter of Rev. J. W. Weeks, in 1778, to the Venerable Society, is a part of the history of that parish :\* "When I was in that part of the country I baptized many children and married several couples. The Church at Georgetown is made up of several wealthy farmers, who are noted loyalists. I offered to preach to them, but they were afraid to suffer me. They were all obliged to pay taxes to the dissenting ministers, and they dared not dispute it." †

The sufferings of many people in Maine during the latter

---

\* Hawkins' History of Missions, &c., p. 255.

† The Churchmen in Georgetown had been deprived of the benefit of their own rates or taxes in 1767. See under that year.

portion of Mr. Bailey's residence there, and the distresses of himself and family are stated in a letter to a friend: "This reminds me, by way of conclusion, to excite in your mind some faint idea of the scarcity which prevails throughout the country. Multitudes of people, who formerly lived in affluence, are now destitute of a morsel of bread, and the remainder are reduced to a very scanty allowance. Several families in the lower towns, and in the Eastern country, have had no bread in their houses for three months together, and the anxiety and distress which this occasions are truly affecting. Great numbers who inhabit near the sea coast, and even at the distance of twenty miles, after being starved into skeletons for want of provisions, have repaired to the clam banks for a resource; while others, who were prevented by their circumstances, or distant situation, from acquiring this kind of food, were still in a more calamitous condition. I have myself been witness to several exquisite scenes of anguish, besides feeling in my own bosom the bitterness of hunger, and the utmost anxiety for the subsistence of my family. I have seen among my neighbours the most striking horrors of nakedness and famine. Many during the pinching cold and storms of winter, exposed to all the roughness and severity of the season, had the misfortune to buffet the turbulence of the weather without shoes or stockings, or even shirts. And when the spring advanced to afford them a kindly warmth, destitute of anything to answer the importunate demands of nature, except a precarious supply obtained from their charitable friends, who had not sufficient to silence their own necessitous cravings. Several families within the compass of my own knowledge have been for a long season deprived of all sustenance agreeable to their palates, or adapted to the nourishment and support of the human body. It was impossible to procure grain, potatoes, or any other species of vegetable; flesh, butter and milk, were equally scarce; no tea, sugar, or molasses, to be purchased on any terms; nothing, in a word, but a little coffee, with boiled alewives, or a repast of clams, and even of this unwholesome diet not enough to gratify the cravings of nature. I have walked abroad after a breakfast of these ingredients, weak and feeble

myself, in hopes to obtain a dinner among my more wealthy acquaintance, and have returned home disappointed of my expectations, and when in other places I have received an invitation to eat, have refused, because I could not find an heart to deprive a number of starving children of their pitiful allowance, who were staring upon me with hollow, piercing eyes, and pale and languid faces."

Two or three letters from his correspondents, and a very meagre Journal for the four first months of 1779, are all the papers referring to the early part of that year that have come into the hands of the writer. That the organization of the parish was preserved amid the gloom which was gathering additional blackness, appears from the following entry:—

. " *April 5th, 1779.* Chose our Church Officers." \*

Some of the occurrences of the last few days he spent in his parish, are thus related in a letter afterwards written to the Secretary of the Society for Propagating the Gospel, &c.: " I however continued to baptize their children, to visit the sick, and to bury the dead, till about a fortnight before I left the country, when the above-mentioned sheriff, with some of his mischievous gang, appeared at a funeral, to apprehend me; but through the vigilance of friends I had timely notice, and escaped the danger." †

---

\* It may be of interest to record the names of the officers of St. John's Church, Pownalborough, in the troublous times spoken of in the text. They are taken from a petition sent to the High Sheriff of Lincoln county, dated December 24th, 1778. The petitioners desire that Mr. Bailey may be allowed to officiate the few Sundays which remained before he should embark for Halifax. This petition is signed by Samuel Goodwin, Herrick Pillul, *Church Wardens*; Peter Pochard, David Bailey, George Goud, Philip Mayer, George Mayer, Louis Houdlette, *Vestry*.

† See Note K.

## CHAPTER VII.

THE materials for continuing this Biography after the last date mentioned in the preceding chapter, are to be found in a "Journal of a voyage from Pownalboro' to Halifax, with notices of some events in the latter place." A portion of this MS. has unfortunately been lost, and it terminates abruptly, but it is thought that the greater part of what remains is worthy of publication.

*"June 7th, 1779.* We arose this morning before the sun and began to prepare for our expulsion, our hearts replete with apprehension, anxiety and distress.

As the rising sun tinged the various objects around us, I beheld the once delightful scenes with bitter emotions of grief. This, in a word, was the silent language of our faces as we looked upon each other, and it was agreeable to the inward impulse. Must we, after all the trouble, harrassment and cruel persecution we have endured for the cause of truth and virtue, must we leave these pleasing scenes of nature, these friendly shades, these rising plants, these opening flowers, these trees swelling with fruit, and yonder winding river, which appears through the umbrageous avenue, to revive and elevate the mind? We must no longer behold the splendid orb of day peeping over the eastern hills to dissipate the fog, and to brighten the field and the forest. We must hear no more the sweet music of the tuneful tribe, amidst the trembling grove, to gladden, charm and animate the desponding heart.

But we quickly perceived other objects approaching to take a mournful farewell, which made a still deeper and more lasting impression on the wounded spirits, I mean a number of our honest, kind and generous parishioners, who came to offer us their last assistance, and to let fall a parting tear! Mr. Jakin, George Mayer, Mrs. Philip Mayer, and other females, were present on this affecting occasion. After taking a very

slender breakfast, we began our departure, and when we left the house and garden, and turned our backs upon these weeping friends, I was obliged to summon the utmost fortitude to contend with the tender emotions of nature. We walked slowly along the shady road, and shut out one enchanting prospect after another, till we met Mrs. Pochard and Mrs. Jakin, who, upon seeing us, were unable to speak; the effusions of sorrow stifled their voices, and all, for some minutes, was a scene of silent woe! We proceeded in this manner through Mr. Jakin's field, and when we were about to take a final adieu, this kind neighbor threw herself upon the ground, and lay sobbing in that humble posture, till we could see her no more. We next called upon Mr. Malbone and his wife, and saw the tears roll down their aged cheeks.

Mr. Pochard and his wife, after we had taken leave of the children, attended us as far as Mr. Ridley's. When we approached his habitation, he came out to meet us, and snatching me by the hand, burst into silent tears.

When the first emotions were a little abated, he began to execrate the villains who had driven me from my friends, my habitation and parish. Upon entering the house, they prevailed with us to take a dish of tea, and to accept of some provisions for our voyage. Col. Taylor presently appeared to bid us adieu, and informed me that our magistrates were ready to abate somewhat of their former rigor. Several of the families, with Mrs. Pochard, followed us to my brother's, where another scene of grief and lamentation appeared. Mr. Burke and his wife brought their child here to be baptized, after which exercise I took my leave of all present, with an aching heart, and embarked in Mr. Ridley's boat, Mr. Jakin and George Mayer attending us down the river."

[A few pages of the MS. are wanting here. In that portion of the Journal which has been preserved, it would seem that the exiles had reached the town of Georgetown, a few miles below their habitation, where they probably expected to pass some days, before taking a final leave of their native country. Here, they found the small schooner which they had engaged for their voyage.] The account continues: "As his

arrival was two days sooner than we expected, it threw us into great perplexity, as our dependence for provision was chiefly on the generosity of our Georgetown friends, and besides, Capt. Smith was still at home, and was not expected till Wednesday morning. To remedy this last inconvenience, John was immediately despatched with a message to Smith, which laid him under the necessity of travelling all night, while we proceeded to Mr. Butler's. When we arrived at this hospitable mansion, we had the disagreeable situation to find all the family in bed. They arose, however, and procured us a supper, and about midnight we went to repose.

*June 8th.* This morning we arose, cheerless, before the sun, and had this benevolent family to attend us. They prepared us an early breakfast, after which they gave Mrs. Bailey a pot of butter and a salmon, and then attended us in solemn procession to the shore. We looked upon each other with disconsolate faces and tearful eyes, till the rapid current carried us round the point, and excluded us from seeing our friends any longer. It afforded us a great deal of concern that we were unable to see Mr. Percy's family before we left the country. We proceeded up the river and paid a short parting visit at Mr. Preble's. This friendly and loyal family gave us their hearty good wishes, and furnished us with some articles of provision for our voyage. Our next remove was to Mr. Carleton's. Upon our arrival, we found that generous and friendly hero gone to the eastern side of Pownalboro', to procure us some provisions.

In the forenoon we carried our beds, and the shattered remains of our fortune, the whole not worth forty dollars, on board our schooner, a little vessel, not more than fifteen tons, with such slender conveniences that we were obliged to make provision for lodging in the hold.

Mr. Palmer brought us several letters from my friends at Broad Bay, containing the tenderest expressions of good will, and the most hearty and anxious wishes for our welfare, and these were attended with some presents to make us comfortable in our troublesome voyage.

Mr. Palmer attended us in our return to Mr. Carleton's,

where we dined, and then went to visit Mr. William and David Gilmore. We passed away a few hours and then took an affectionate farewell, and at parting received some addition to our stores. About six we returned to Mr. Carleton's, and drank coffee in company with twenty-two persons.

The wind blowing fresh from the westward, we were somewhat alarmed by the appearance of a sail standing across the bay for Mr. Carleton's landing. Some of our company concluded that it was either Cushing, or some of his infernal attendants, approaching with a mischievous design to interrupt our voyage. I was extremely anxious for the event, as I had a number of papers on board which would have been reckoned highly treasonable against the States; but when the people landed we perceived it was Mr. Carleton's brother, from Piscataqua, who had excited our groundless fears. He brought no intelligence of a public nature, but gave us an account of a terrible tempest of thunder and lightning, which consumed in the space of thirty minutes a stately synagogue at Somersworth, destroyed eight sheep at a little distance, and twenty five in another flock, brake to pieces an huge rock, and demolished above forty large oak trees within the compass of three miles.

We had long been waiting, with eager expectation, for the arrival of Capt. Smith, and the rest of our company, from Pownalboro'; at length Capt. Smith, Mr. Hitchins and John made their appearance to our great satisfaction. Mr. Palmer persuaded them to attend him directly on board our vessel, which lay near Mr. Justice Stinson's, at the distance of two miles.

Mr. Jakins and the two Mayers, went by water, about an hour after sunset, when the former and Mr. George Mayer, intending to set out for home very early in the morning, took their leave, which added another tender scene to the many we had already passed through, and the honest tears of affection and friendship were shed, on both sides, in plentiful effusions.

About ten Mr. Carleton returned home from Witchcasset, and brought me several articles from Mr. Wood, together with some confused account of the expedition against Virginia.

We spent the rest of this evening in an agreeable manner. The thoughts, however, of leaving such benevolent friends behind, exposed to the rage of persecution and the vengeance of rebels, afforded us at times some uneasy sensations.

*June 9th.* When the morning opened, we perceived that the Westerly winds were died away, and that a dry fog hovered over the land, which afforded us no very pleasing prospect.

Our friends were disheartened at the threatening symptoms of drought, and both corn and grass were beginning to languish in the fields.

Just before sunrise we bid this hospitable family adieu with tender regret, and proceeded along the woods to the ferry below Hell's Gate. During this long and tedious walk we were greatly incommoded with the heat of the season and the innumerable swarms of voracious insects. Upon our arrival at the water, we made a signal for the boat, and were carried on board the schooner, but, to our extreme regret, perceived that Mr. Hitchins had returned back with Mr. Jakins and Mayer.

This man had endured a variety of persecutions for his integrity, and was now reduced to extreme poverty; he had a wife and several small children, but he concluded that it was more prudent to leave them to the mercy of the country, than to run the risk of imprisonment and death, without affording them any assistance. But Mr. Palmer, not knowing his real character, and thinking that he would incommode us in our passage, had compelled him, in a manner, to leave the vessel.

About nine we got under way with a gentle breeze from the south-west, and fell down between Parker's Island and Jeremisquam into Sheepscot River. The country hereabouts made a romantic appearance, fine groves of tall trees, shrubby evergreens, craggy rocks, cultivated fields and human habitations, alternately presented themselves to view, and yielded a profusion of pleasure to the imagination.

When we entered Sheepscot River the rolling ocean presented itself in open prospect, and we perceived a number of vessels sailing at a distance. About two o'clock we got into the sea,



and began to steer towards the east, but the wind failing we made but a slow progress.

We attempted to avoid a fishing vessel in our neighborhood, lest some accident should interrupt our voyage, but we were unable to carry our intention, for she came alongside, and we found the schooner belonged to Dennis Gatchell, of Bodingham, a late convert from rebellion and independence. He gave us a little salt, and pronounced his benediction.

As night approached it grew perfectly calm, and we were obliged to anchor in Cape Newaggen harbour, a little to the west of Booth Bay. This is an excellent station for small shipping. The land rises with an easy slope from the water's edge on the north and partly on the east, while the remainder is surrounded with islands on which were erected fishermen's huts. Between these islands you pass into the harbour through very small inlets.

Soon after our arrival, Mr. Gatchell came in and dropped an anchor near us. As I am always impatient to go on shore whenever it is possible, I persuaded our men to get the boat in readiness, and Mr. Palmer and Mrs. Bailey, her niece and little son, accompanied me; we landed upon the northern shore.

The land, from the water to some considerable distance, was destitute of trees and covered with grass exceedingly green and flourishing, notwithstanding the dryness of the season; the soil, though rocky, is rich, and we observed that the plants and flowers, which grew in abundance, were large and thriving. We followed some of the winding paths towards the east, till the prospect opened into Townsend harbour, which stretches a long way from the sea up to the northward. After we had diverted ourselves awhile with walking among these romantic scenes, we returned near the landing, and reposed upon the grass till evening advanced to spread abroad her cooling and refreshing shades. While we continued here, I observed at some distance, the ruins of an human habitation, with the vestiges of a garden, constructed among the rocks. This, Mr. Palmer informed me, was formerly the abode of an hermit, who, meeting with a cruel disappointment in a love matter,

retired from all society, and spent the remainder of his days, to extreme old age, in this forsaken retreat. Mr. Gatchell came on shore, and entered into a long conversation with us, concerning his former conduct and present sentiments with regard to the American rebellion. He had been both a committee man and a captain of the Militia, till falling in company with the famous Mr. Sands,\* he changed his licentious principles, and from a furious and revengeful rebel, became a sincere and peaceable subject. He declared, that however improbable it might appear, he had heretofore acted from honest, though mistaken principles. He acknowledged, that he, in strict justice, deserved no mercy from a sovereign he had so greatly abused, but still flattered himself with the hopes of forgiveness, from the known lenity of the British Government, and the great humanity of his Royal Master. He gave me several anecdotes concerning the malice and violence of Cushing, which to a stranger would appear to exceed the limits of probability. After supper, the persons belonging to my family took possession of the hold, and spread our beds upon the hard stones which were collected for ballast, a most humble and gloomy situation. We had not long been composed to sleep, before we were aroused by thunder, and saw the lightning flashing through the crevices with tremendous glare, while the rain, pouring through the leaky deck, fell upon us in streams.

*June 10th.* This morning, after a succession of fine showers, which greatly refreshed the face of nature, the wind began to breeze from the north-west. This favourable incident determined us to weigh anchor and to display our sails. We soon ran down to Pemaquid, and saw at a distance, up a large opening to the northward, a number of fine settlements around the ancient port, while to the S. W., we had a pleasing prospect of Damariscove Island, mostly cleared land, with one or two habitations; to the S. E., the Isle of Monhegan rose like a

---

\* *QUERE*—Robert Sandeman? This person founded a religious sect which took his name. Many of his followers were Loyalists. See *Sabine's American Loyalists*. p. 691.

mountain out of the ocean. We discovered a topsail schooner standing to the south, which was afterwards taken, as we understood, by the Blonde frigate. We now approached Pemaquid point, an extensive, narrow headland, running out into the sea for many miles. The shores, I observed, were very high, rocky and rude, covered with a fine appearance of trees, but destitute of any improvements or human habitations. We were obliged to beat all the way, for eighteen miles, up to Broad Cove, in order to discharge Mr. Palmer. In our passage, we passed by a beautiful island in possession of the famous Will Loud, containing several hundred acres of rich land. Opposite to this estate, on the western shore, was situated Round Pond, encircled with a number of elegant settlements.

We came to an anchor a little above Loud's Island, and took our leave, with regret, of our zealous friend, Mr. Palmer. After he was gone, in order to divert our melancholy, while the people were filling their casks with water, we went on shore to a neighboring house, where we met with a friendly reception. About four in the afternoon we set sail, and proceeded almost to St. George's Island, under the assistance of a propitious breeze, but, on a sudden, the wind shifted to the south-east, and blew with some degree of violence, which compelled us to alter our course, and to stand up the river towards the settlements in Broad Cove. Nothing could be more romantic and pleasing than the prospects around us.

As we sailed up the harbour a number of islands of various shapes and sizes, partly cultivated, and partly in their primeval wildness, presented themselves to view in alternate succession, till we had a distant appearance of the Dutch plantations at Broad Bay, lying contiguous on both sides of the river. At length the fine settlements on the Bristol shore suddenly opened upon us, the fields arrayed in virgin green, gently sloping down to the water, exhibited an idea of cheerfulness and joy. The reflection, however, that we were doomed to abandon these pleasant scenes, checked the rising emotions of the heart, and filled our minds with the glooms of melancholy and sorrow.

When we came to anchor, the two brothers conducted us on

shore, and we walked through a range of fields and pastures to the habitation of Mr. Rhodes, who received us with sincere expressions of hospitality. The sun was now descending towards the margin of the western horizon, and every object was brightened with his beams and softened with the cooling breezes of evening. We were soon provided with a dish of tea, which, after our fatigue and sickness upon the water, afforded us a seasonable refreshment. After this grateful repast, we walked among the rural scenes, and surveyed them with a pleasing regret, and having spent the remainder of the evening in conversation, supper and devotion, we went to repose, and slept quietly till the morning.

MR. RHODES.

This generous farmer was born in Germany, and emigrated from those dominions in the early part of his life. By his sobriety, uprightness and industry, he has acquired an handsome fortune, and had the curse of rebellion never fallen upon America, he would live in elegance and plenty without the labour of his hands; but his family, in common with others, has been reduced to a morsel of bread, through the iniquity and distress of the times. This man, by a spirit of industry, has acquired a considerable degree of knowledge, and, though in a remote corner of the world, understands both men and things, to a degree beyond persons in his station of life. He is rather silent, than talkative, yet curious and inquisitive, and listens with attention to whatever is advanced in conversation, which sometimes inclines him to be wavering in religion and politicks, but when he has leisure to indulge his own reflections, he always fixes in favor of the Church and British Government. He is humane, generous and hospitable, but is wholly destitute of noise in his benevolent communications; no man has a greater portion of integrity, or is more disposed to make his neighbors happy. But with all these virtues, and a disposition never to contradict or irritate, he could not escape the malice and vengeance of liberty; but notwithstanding his mildness and moderation. neither threatenings nor persuasion could——[A part of the MS. is wanting.]

*June 12th.* This morning when daylight appeared we got under weigh, with a light breeze from the north-west, which soon carried us out of the harbour. We steered an E. S. E. course, intending to cross the Bay of Fundy, but before we had gained two leagues from St. George's Island, it became entirely calm, during which we caught a considerable quantity of cod-fish. After rolling in the sea for two or three hours, the wind began to breeze from the S. S. E., which obliged us to keep close hauled; but before we could reach the Island of Metinic, a thick fog set in, which excluded us from the sight of any land. This induced us to bear away for the Muscle Ridges, a number of islands lying off St. George's, to the west of Penobscot Bay. In our progress towards a convenient harbour, we were alarmed by the firing of cannon at some distance on the eastern points of the compass. A thick fog, attended by a stormy wind, prevented us from making land till we came almost upon it. We at length discovered an opening, through which we explored a passage without any disaster, and came to anchor a little to the leeward of several small islands. Mrs. Bailey and I immediately went on shore, at a little beach, which opened between the rocks. The land was covered with trees, and the skirts of the upland covered with gooseberry bushes, alexander, and a multitude of curious plants and flowers of luxurious growth and various colors, which formed an elegant border to these wild and romantic scenes. Nothing could be more unequal and deformed than the appearances around us, as we walked along the margin of this island; here we encountered a vast pile of ragged stones, thrown upon each other in the utmost disorder, resembling the ruins of nature; there a rocky promontory, breaking suddenly into horrid precipices, with tremendous chasms and caverns gaping beneath us; on this hand a smooth and even beach, covered with small pebbles, and gently sloping to the edge of the water; on that a level spot adorned with green and enameled with flowers.

After we had diverted ourselves with these various appearances, we returned on board and drank coffee. But curiosity impelled us to visit another island which lay at a farther

distance towards the south-east. The tide was so rapid and replete with eddies and whirlpools, that it was with some difficulty and hazard we reached the destined shore. We found here, a fine, sandy beach with an elegant slope, but the island was so overgrown with immense trees, chiefly yellow birch, and underbrush, that it was almost impossible to penetrate the thickets. We discovered, in our excursions, a number of flowers and plants of the same species which flourish upon the other neighbouring islands. We reached our vessel about sunset, when an heavy mist set in, and the wind began to breeze from the eastern points of the compass.

We passed away the evening in as agreeable a manner as our present situation would permit, being no less than ten persons crowded in the small cabin, amid heat and smoke, till we were almost suffocated, and then were obliged to repair upon deck to breathe a purer air, but here we were incommoded with the chilly fog and a numerous army of mosquitos. After supper we confined ourselves to our imprisonment in the hold, a dark and gloomy situation, where we were tormented with the stench of bilge water, and other disagreeable odors.

*June 13th. (Sunday.)* This morning opened with the same kind of weather as the preceding day, and this season, devoted to Christian joy and festivity, passed away without affording us any agreeable or cheerful incident.

We however endeavored to preserve each other from sinking into melancholy. To persons in our situation, scarce anything could be more disagreeable than to be detained by contrary winds, in the neighborhood of those hostile shores from which we were fleeing. After dinner Captain Smith thought it prudent to remove to a more convenient station, as the air and heavens proclaimed an approaching tempest, and we lay somewhat exposed to the ravages of a north-east wind. In consequence of this determination, we sailed about a mile to the eastern-most of this range of islands, and came to anchor at the entrance of a convenient little harbour, which formed a narrow opening into a large island. On the north shore we perceived a little habitation with a considerable quantity of improved land around it. This was a pleasing sight, as we

had lately seen nothing except water and uncultivated wilds. On the opposite shore, we presently discovered another building contiguous to a large growth of trees, with some little green patches between it and the margin of the water. We had no sooner secured our vessel, than John Hoffman, and the other two Dutchmen, took the boat and went on shore to procure a little milk. They quickly returned on board in high spirits, and with joy sparkling from their eyes, assuring us that a British fleet, with a detachment of land forces from Halifax, had just arrived in the country, and were resolved to take possession of the country and erect a fort in Penobscot Bay. We imagined this report to be too fortunate to be true, especially as the people had it only from uncertain rumour. One circumstance, however, seemed to confirm it; we had, the the preceding forenoon, taken notice of a large square-rigged vessel standing along without the island, which we now had reason to apprehend was one of the royal fleet. These appearances served to amuse us during supper, and furnished abundant matter of conversation and gave rise to a variety of conjectures. They however deprived me, in a great measure, of sleep, and I lay with eager impatience for the morning light.

*June 14th.* After we arose, we began instantly to prepare for going on shore before breakfast, intending to take materials with us for that purpose, but we were detained a little by a miserable object from the house which stood on the southern side of the harbour. The man had famine strongly pictured in his face, and informed us that his wife had been delivered of a child about ten days before, and that she had ever since been destitute of any kind of sustenance, except one gill of Indian meal and a fish. Mrs. Bailey was so moved with her situation that she sent her some relief, notwithstanding we had the greatest prospect of suffering ourselves before we could reach the limits of Nova Scotia. We landed about seven in the morning, and were rejoiced to find ourselves once more delivered from a wretched confinement. We approached the house with some degree of timidity, being ignorant of the people and uncertain what kind of reception they might

give us. Mrs. Bailey was dressed with a small roll upon her head, which induced Mrs. Welch, mistress of the house, and her father to exclaim with the utmost vehemence against the wickedness of the times, and when they perceived that she was a minister's wife, they conceived the wearing of the roll to be an unpardonable crime. It is really surprising that when so many flagrant vices prevail in the country, such as the most daring profaneness, perjury, and a visible contempt for all religious institutions, not to mention the oppression, injustice and inhumanity that is everywhere practiced with impunity, I repeat that it is surprising, that in such circumstances, people should imagine that any particular fashion should occasion the indignation of Heaven against our country, or to imagine that dress or external habit engages the attention of the Deity, more than the conduct of our lives, the words of our mouths, or the sentiments of our hearts. To rail against fashions has always been the employment of little and narrow minds, and is a convincing evidence of a mean and sordid pride, which envies every person who is able to appear in any distinction above ourselves. Mr. Welch, however, discovered a greater knowledge of the world, and reproved his wife for her censorious disposition; this had an happy effect, and we were afterwards treated with as much respect and consideration as we could expect. The weather being very stormy, we were chiefly confined to the house, I, however, frequently ventured abroad in the rain to examine the various scenes around us, especially the vegetable productions, which flourished here in great perfection. The soil of this island is composed of dark, rich earth, intermixed with a vast profusion of clam shells, to the extent of several feet deep, which kind of composition is extremely favourable to vegetation. These appearances are a strong indication that this island was formerly a noted place of rendezvous for the Indians, who resided here in great numbers in their fishing season. Mr. Welch had a pretty garden spot, contiguous to his house, which afforded me some amusement, though, I must confess, I could not survey the various objects and rising plants without many sorrowful emotions; everything about me recalled the pleasing scenes I



had forsaken, the delightful fruits of my labour, and excited a number of uneasy and painful sensations. After I had fatigued myself with walking in the wet and viewing every object worthy of observation, I reëntered the house and diverted myself with the conversation and long stories of father Renkin. He was between seventy and eighty years of age, had read a few authors, just sufficient to excite his vanity, and had some considerable acquaintance with all the ancient settlers in the eastern country, and was able to furnish several curious anecdotes of them and their ancestors. His notions, however, were very contracted, and, like a true Irish Presbyterian, he was better pleased to censure than applaud. We here received a confirmation of the British invasion, and though the people here had always favored the rebellion, they were now extremely forward to make a seasonable submission, since any kind of resistance would only contribute to increase their misfortunes, and, 'besides,' continued they, 'it must be for our interest to receive protection and support from the Britons, as our adherence to Congress can assure us nothing but misery, nakedness and famine.' After dining on shore, and making several excursions abroad, we returned to our vessel about sunset, when the storm began to rage with increasing violence. The noise of the winds, the dashing of the waves against the adjacent rocks, and the falling of the rain upon the deck, were sufficient to prevent us from taking any comfortable repose.

*June 15th.* When we arose in the morning we perceived the weather to be still wet and storming, with the wind about east; and, as there was no prospect of sailing, we determined to spend the day on shore. The people received us with civility, especially as we were able to give them a taste of bread, which was here an extreme rarity. I observed that vegetables upon these islands were at least ten days later in their advance towards perfection than at Pownalboro'; this must certainly be owing to the sea air and the frequency of fogs. I found Mr. Welch very obliging, and disposed to give me all the assistance and entertainment in his power. After dinner, as the girls were walking out, they returned in surprise, and declared they had discovered a barge full of men making towards the

shore on the north-eastern side of the island. At the same time Capt. Smith and Dr. Myers arrived from our vessel, bringing information that a large brig passed by an opening to the northward, between two islands. This intelligence determined Mr. Welch, Capt. Smith, and I, to walk round the island, but to our mortification we were unable to make any discovery, the brig, we imagined, having slipped into Owl's Head, at the distance of a league, — the wind favoring such a movement. As we were returning, on the eastern side of the island, an heavy shower overtook us, and we were alarmed by several loud and rattling peals of thunder, upon which the clouds began to disperse and the Heavens to brighten. But this flattering prospect did not long continue, for as the evening advanced an heavy dark mist overspread both the land and water.

We spent this day more agreeably than the former, and had a variety of incidents to drive away melancholy reflections; for notwithstanding we assumed an air of cheerfulness and resolution, it occasioned us abundance of regret and chagrin, when we found ourselves departing from our native country, to seek a refuge in a foreign region, among strangers, who would probably eye us with suspicion and jealousy; and, besides, compulsion is always attended with uneasy sensations. Men can readily quit the land which gave them birth and education when interest, pleasure, or curiosity entice them; but when they are expelled by faction, or legal authority, the case is extremely different; our pride, in these circumstances, is alarmed, and that natural abhorrence that every mortal has to restraint, embitters our minds, and we repair to the place of our banishment, however delightful and advantageous, with reluctance and aversion. But what rendered our situation still more distressing, was the uncertainty of our return to our country, our friends, and habitation.

About dark we returned again to our prison, and having prepared supper, continued to divert ourselves in the best manner we were able. We however proposed the next morning, should wind and weather permit, to go in search of the British fleet, and then went to repose.

*June 16th.* This morning, when we awoke, a little before sunrise, we had the agreeable information that the weather was fine and clear, and the wind beginning to breeze from the west. This intelligence revived our spirits, but we were obliged to wait for the tide till after breakfast, for it being spring tides, the water had ebbed out so low that we were aground. It was with great impatience that we waited till the element returned to assist our escape; at length, about nine, we came to sail, and passed through a narrow channel, and stood away towards Owl's Head, under favour of a propitious gale, with a view to discover, if possible, some of the British fleet. We stood away to the northward till we had a fair prospect into Owl's Head Harbour, but no vessels appearing, we had some dispute whether we should proceed up Penobscot Bay, or direct our course for Nova Scotia. I was inclined to favour the former proposal, but the rest of our company being anxious to visit Halifax, and Mrs. Bailey expressing her fears that instead of finding British ships, we should fall among rebel cruisers, I gave directions to cross the Bay of Fundy. Nothing could be more flattering than the prospect before us; the sky was serene, with a gentle gale from the west north-west, and a number of small clouds over the land, promised a propitious season. We were, besides, charmed with the various appearances around us, — the ocean, interspersed with a multitude of fine islands, of different shapes and dimensions; to the north, Penobscot Bay opened into the land, with its numerous islands, covered with lofty trees, except here and there an infant plantation, while beyond, the Camden Mountains arose in majestic grandeur, throwing their rugged summits above the clouds; these, as we approached the Fox Islands without, began gradually to diminish till their dusky azure resembled the seat of a thunder-tempest, advancing to discharge its vengeance on some distant shore. But while we were viewing these romantic scenes with a mixture of delight and veneration, and taking leave of our native regions with melancholy regret, the wind suddenly shifted into the S. S. W., and a thick fog covered the surface of the ocean in such a manner as to exclude every object. This incident afforded us abun-

dance of perplexity, as we had to pass through a multitude of islands and rocks, none of which could be discovered at the distance of ten rods. We however ventured to continue our voyage in this uncertain situation. The wind continued to blow a moderate gale, though it remained so scanty that we were obliged to go close-hauled. In the afternoon the weather for several hours was obscure and gloomy, and gave us uneasy apprehensions of an approaching storm, a circumstance no ways agreeable to persons confined to such a little shallop, in so threatening a tract of the ocean as the Bay of Fundy. These apprehensions continued to disturb our repose till about an hour before night, when the sun brake forth in all the brightness of his departing glory, and tinged the summits of the rolling waves with his level beams. At the same time we had a distant view of Mount Desert, at an immense distance, setting like a hillock on the water. All our company by this time were extremely sick, except the Captain, who was obliged to continue at the helm till the returning light began to disperse the shades of darkness. The wind continued somewhat favourable till after midnight, when it died away for more than two hours, then sprang up S. E., almost ahead; about sunrise came to the east, then N. N. E., where it freshened up into a severe gale. It was now tide of flood, and the current proceeding in direct opposition to the wind, a sharp and dangerous sea commenced. After reefing we attempted to scud, but the seas rolling over the vessel obliged us to bring to. The tempest still increased; the wind roared like thunder in the shrouds; the ocean around us was all ragged and deformed, and we were filled with great agitation and dread, expecting every moment to be swallowed up in the immense abyss. We were unable to take any refreshment, and continued till the storm abated confined to our miserable apartments.

*June 17th.* The storm continuing to rage with unceasing violence, we found ourselves in a very uneasy and dangerous situation, for, as I have already observed, the tides at this season were exceeding full, which occasioned them to set into the Bay of Fundy with rapid violence, and the wind blowing hard against the current drove the water into irregular heaps, which

appeared on every hand like enormous rocks or pillars,—here rising in a conic form to an amazing height, and there breaking into tremendous precipices or falling ruins, while immense caverns, gaping from beneath, threatened us with immediate destruction. I was, during these commotions, confined with my family in the hold, but the weather being warm and the vessel extremely tight, we contrived to keep the hatchway partly open to let in fresh air and to prevent suffocation. The consequence of this precaution was a deluge of water; for the waves, breaking over the deck, came pouring upon us, and almost drowned us in our wretched confinement. In attempting to scud before the wind and billows we were in imminent danger—a mighty wave brake over the stern and instantly plunged our trembling vessel under water; this obliged the captain to bring to, upon which alteration we became more secure till the tempest abated. During the continuance of this conflict our situation was extremely uneasy, every soul on board except Captain Smith being dying sick, and unable to afford him the least assistance, which rendered his care and labour abundantly more distressing. We that were imprisoned in the hold were in a most woful pickle, almost stifled with the fumes of bilge water, our beds swimming, our clothes dripping wet, and our minds under the greatest anxiety for ourselves and each other. The thoughts of being driven from our country, our much loved home, and all those endearing connections we had been forming for so many years, and, if we escaped the angry vengeance of the ocean, the expectation of landing on a strange and unknown shore, depressed our spirits beyond measure, and filled us with the sad glooms of despondency and wo. But, as appearances often change in this various world, about two of the o'clock, when the tide began to set out of the Bay again, we were presently indulged with an happy alteration. The wind shifted further to the northward, the seas abated, and we quickly found ourselves able to proceed on our voyage; and still to cheer and animate our spirits, the clouds began to break away, the fog to disperse, and the sun to adorn the waves with his western beams. Wafted by a gentle gale we advanced towards the Acadian shores, and

about three hours before sunset, to our great joy, discovered land; but this pleasing prospect did not long continue, the wind faded into a calm, and, as the darkness approached, an heavy fog covered the mighty deep in such a manner that we could not discover any object at the distance of a rod. Under these disagreeable circumstances we were obliged to stand off to sea in order to avoid the danger of running upon an unknown shore before morning. This unfortunate and unexpected turn in the weather occasioned us great uneasiness, and threw us into our former dejection. To such a number of sea-sick and tempest-beaten mortals, who had been flattered with the prospect of entering into an harbour, this returning to sea was a most grievous mortification; but we had no other remedy except patience, and a very slender dose of that excellent drug. As to myself, it gave me an addition of pain to find that Captain Smith had no assistance in these difficult circumstances, but was obliged to continue at the helm till daylight appeared. The fore part of the night we had the wind at S. S. W., with thick weather.

*June 18th.* Towards morning the wind shifted into the N. E., then east, and afterwards into the S. E., when it began to blow and rain, with most threatening appearances of a storm. This unexpected continuance of bad weather had a very malignant influence upon our whole company. The hands, with Dr. Mayer, the old bachelor, swore bitterly; the captain, notwithstanding his moderation, lost all patience, and loudly complained of the unpropitious season, while we began to imagine that we should never be able to reach our intended port, so many impediments arising to retard our progress. We, however, found some consolation when we perceived that the wind rather abated, and in the afternoon it blew in our favor, so that we rediscovered the land towards evening. But the fog continued to hover over the surface of the water in such a manner that it became wholly unsafe to aim at any harbour. In bearing away from the shore we discovered, through the surrounding fog, several little islands, interspersed with rugged rocks, against which the waves, dashing with violence, occasioned a

frightful roaring. We had the good fortune, however, to escape without damage.

After keeping almost two days between decks, as it was now more calm and moderate, I ventured out of my confinement to contemplate the striking prospect around us. Nothing appeared but a waste of waters in perpetual motion, with a surface rugged and unshapen beyond imagination, for the seas in this Bay of Fundy do not roll with regular succession as in other oceans, with gradual swellings, which rise in extensive order, one behind another, as far as the eye can reach, but here we perceive waves of a thousand various figures and dimensions, resembling a multitude of rocks and broken fragments of nature, torn by some violent explosion, and rudely scattered over an immense desert or barren plain. While we were sitting upon deck and diverting ourselves as well as our situation would admit, one of our hens escaped from her confinement in the salt room and flew about the vessel from one quarter to another, seemingly exulting in her liberty. But alas! this freedom proved the destruction of the volatile and noisy animal, for one of our company attempted to secure her, upon which she immediately flew overboard into the sea, and sat struggling and cackling upon the waves till we could see her no longer. I must confess that in my present circumstances this accident affected me, and I was moved with compassion for the foolish flutterer, when I observed her exposed to inevitable destruction, striving to regain the vessel, and, as it were, calling aloud for assistance, when we were unable to afford the wretched being any relief. How often do we behold animals who fondly boast of reason, hurrying themselves with almost the same giddy precipitation into ruin. How common is it for men, when impatient of legal restraint, and ardent to acquire unbounded freedom,—how frequent is it for people in these circumstances, when they have escaped from every confinement and gained their wished for liberty, to plunge headlong into destruction, and when they become sensible too late of their unbounded rashness and folly, they are desirous from their hearts to reënter that condition they once called

slavery and bondage. In short, I am convinced that no animal in nature makes so pernicious an improvement of liberty as man; for notwithstanding all his boasted pretences to wisdom, if you place him in a situation of unrestrained license, it is a thousand to one if he do not ruin both himself and all his intimate connexions. But enough of liberty for the present, since I had a sufficient surfeit from it in New England, and have seen from that abused principle all the miseries of licentiousness, anarchy, and tyranny, flowing like so many torrents to deluge that unhappy and devoted land. Just about sunset we were favored with another flattering prospect of fine weather; a glim from the western hemisphere inspired us with pleasure, but upon the rising of the fog we were alarmed to find ourselves almost contiguous to a dangerous rock, called the Gurnet, which rose with perpendicular sides, like a large building, above the water. The wind was now beginning to blow gently from the S. W., which, when we had cleared the land as we imagined, was extremely favourable to our purpose. But alas! when we had been running, as we fondly conceived, along the coast to the eastward of Cape Sable, to our great surprise we heard a terrible roaring on every hand. In this scene of apprehension and danger Captain Smith brought to, and upon sounding, perceived ourselves amidst shoals and breakers, in about two fathoms of water, and, as he concluded, just upon that terrible ledge or range of rocks, called the Devil's Limb. To extricate ourselves from this alarming situation, the captain put instantly about, and we stood till daylight across this vexatious Bay of Fundy.

*June 19th.* When the daylight began to disperse the shades of darkness we found ourselves encumbered with a dismal fog, which hovered with almost impenetrable thickness over the face of the ocean, whilst the sky above was perfectly clear, with a fine beautiful azure. At length, after rolling several hours in a dead calm, the wind began to fill the sails, when we discovered a large vessel loaded with lumber standing towards the south. This appearance induced us to make after her, and, if possible, to speak with her, that we might acquire some intelligence, but when she perceived our intention she



crowded all her sails, and ran from us with the swiftest expedition, suspecting us, as we apprehended, for an enemy. About nine in the morning the fog wholly dispersed, and we were favored with a serene sky and a fine breeze from the W. N. W., which happened to be the most propitious quarter of Heaven. Having sailed an hour before this delightful gale we discovered the Seal Island, lying about seven leagues, as we imagined, to the N. E. About eleven we greatly rejoiced at the long wished for prospect of Cape Sable, and it gave us immense pleasure to behold a country under the dominion of our lawful Prince, and where the tyranny of republican villains had not yet extended. I was, however, surprised to find the coast low, with sandy hillocks along the shores, instead of those lofty, rugged promontories my imagination had created. We passed by this Cape a little after the middle of the day, and finding the wind and season favourable, we agreed to proceed for Liverpool, which we hoped to reach by the next morning. The sea was so smooth, and the weather so agreeable, that we continued upon deck, viewing with the highest satisfaction the various objects on the land, which rose in succession to divert our attention from the fatigues of the voyage, while on the other hand we had nothing to employ the sight but a boundless world of waters, inhabited by millions of living creatures, prodigiously unlike in their shapes and dimensions. We now descried several fishing vessels at some distance from the shore. They no sooner discovered us than they bore in with the land, and doubtless conceived themselves very fortunate in making their escape before we were able to overtake them. We perceived by this incident that they mistook us for one of those petty pirates which had lately infested these coasts, and plundered, without distinction, every vessel in their power. Before evening we passed by several fine harbours; the land all along the coast appeared very level, and nothing like mountains arose to diversify the scene. Some lesser eminences, indeed, and a few gentle swellings were discovered, just sufficient to destroy a disgusting uniformity. In many places the land was destitute of trees, and exhibited a pleasing surface of verdure, which softened the dusky horrors

of the woods. The latter chiefly consists of spruce, firs, and hemlock, fit retreats for melancholy and discontent. The season was now so mild, and the motion so easy, that we had a cheerful supper together, and we were happy in the pleasing expectation of entering Liverpool the next morning.

*June 20th, (Sunday.)* I arose this morning before the sun, and found that we were still favoured with a prosperous gale. The land appeared extremely pleasant, and the odor of plants impregnated with the morning dew was agreeable and refreshing beyond measure. The sun began to arise from the bosom of the ocean, and in a few minutes tinged the eastern summit of the swelling waves with the beams of his glory. All nature put on a pleasing appearance, and inspired us with cheerfulness and grateful joy to reflect that we had arrived so near our desired port. But as nothing can be more uncertain and delusive than appearances at sea, we were quickly mortified with a failure of wind. A perfect calm ensued, and we lay tumbling and rolling at about three miles distance from the shores of Malagash. While we were detained in this manner John Hoffman put over a line and caught two fine cod fish, one upon each hook, and continued the sport with the same success till he had procured a dozen. Upon this, the two brothers coming upon deck, reproved him sharply for his wickedness in profaning the Sabbath, and when they could not restrain him they swore a multitude of oaths! Strange, that persons who indulged themselves in the rudest conversation, and who scrupled not to take the Sacred Name in vain, should nevertheless have such a reverence for a day consecrated to His service, as to neglect all kinds of business, however advantageous and necessary. But this is just in the character of New England saints, who worship the Sabbath, while at the same time they treat the Lord of the Sabbath with the most indecent familiarity and disrespect. Thus man, the most inconsistent animal in nature, often strains at a gnat and swallows a camel without any manner of inconvenience.

The wind about eight of the clock begins to breeze from the S. W., and through our impatience we imagine the vessel makes a most rapid progress, while she went scarcely three

miles an hour, and so eager were we to go on shore that we began to dress at the distance of above forty miles from Halifax. The passage over Margaret's Bay to Cape Sambro appeared extremely tedious, and we were constantly employed for eight hours in looking out for the light-house. I had abundance of leisure to make observations on the country during this interval, and the land, which had hitherto put on a most uniform appearance, now began to exhibit a very different face. It seemed to rise gradually from the shore to some distance from the sea, and then to shoot into lofty hills of various forms, covered, according to the best of our observation, with beech, birches, and other species of white wood. As we advanced forward our impatience increased in proportion as the distance lessened, and the captain went several times to the foremast head to make discoveries, but without success. In the afternoon we discovered a sail standing away to the southward, which we afterwards understood to be part of a fleet bound from Halifax to Quebeck, having on board several officers and a number of troops for that department. The wind continuing to blow fresh at S. W., we at length, about an hour before sunset, were favoured with the sight of Sambro Island, and the light-house, to our inexpressible satisfaction. A gleam of joy brightened all our faces, and we manifested every external expression of gladness at the reviving prospect. Before dark this desirable object was full in view, and the ledges upon which it was erected were plainly seen from the deck, and when the daylight disappeared the light in the lanthorn was visible to conduct us into a safe and commodious harbour. However, before we were able to fetch within the light-house, a black cloud arose, and the wind shifted into the N. W., which reduced us to the disagreeable necessity of beating into the harbour. Under this disadvantage we laboured hard till after midnight, and then came to anchor a little within Jebucto Head. Here we imagined ourselves entirely secure from the danger of American rovers, presuming they would not have the impudence to venture so near the Metropolis of an hostile Province; but in these conjectures we were certainly mistaken, for, as we were afterwards informed, the preceding

week, a rebel privateer sailed a considerable way into the harbour, almost within reach of the cannon, and captivated a brig laden with provisions and sugar. The Howard and Buckram, a couple of cruisers, observing this daring manœuvre, pushed immediately out in pursuit of these adventurers, but being furnished with a number of oars, as well as sails, the privateer escaped, while they ran the prize on shore, which by this accident bilged, and most of her cargo was either lost or damaged.

I am persuaded that my countrymen exceed all mankind in a daring and enterprising disposition. Their bold and adventurous spirit, more especially, appears with distinguishing éclat when they are engaged in any unjust and vicious undertaking, and their courage commonly increases in proportion to the badness and villany of the cause they endeavour to support. Let a New England man once throw off the restraints of education, he becomes a hero in wickedness, and the more strict and religious he has been in his former behaviour, the greater will be his impiety in his present situation. It has often been remarked by foreigners, who have been engaged in commerce with our Puritans, that when they first come abroad no people alive have such a sacred regard for religious worship, or the day appointed for that purpose, and none have such a prevailing aversion to profane swearing, and yet they quickly become the most docile scholars in the school of vice, and make the greatest proficiency in every species of profanity. They openly ridicule their former attachment to devotion, and are very ingenious in framing new and spirited oaths, and when they have any extraordinary mischief to perform they always choose to perpetrate it on Sunday.

*June 21st.* No sooner did the morning light begin to soften the horrors of darkness, than I arose and took possession of the deck to observe the weather and to survey the adjacent country. I found that we were overtaken by a dead calm, and the heavens were covered with rolling volumes of black and dismal clouds which shed a dark and dejecting gloom over all the surrounding scenes of nature. But if I was inspired with melancholy sentiments at this dusky prospect, I was perfectly

shocked when I turned my eyes towards the land which stretched along the western quarter. The shore which now engages my attention is the famous Jebucto Head, a most enormous congress of rocky ledges running with a lofty and impregnable front into the sea, while the surface is inexpressibly rugged and broken, covered with shrubby spruce, fir and hemlock, which by their starving and misshapen appearance sufficiently indicate the severity of the climate and the barrenness of the soil. But notwithstanding the unpleasing aspect of this strange region, I could not forbear the returns of gratitude to Providence for safely conducting me and my family to this retreat of freedom and security from the rage of tyranny and the cruelty of oppression. The wind beginning to blow softly as the light increased, we weighed anchor, displayed the canvas and got under way. The sun being risen we perceived that the land on the eastern side of the harbour was in comparison extremely agreeable; the beach was covered with small pebbles, the banks, which were moderately high, resembled the colour of deep burnt bricks, and the trees of various species, tall and well shaped. And what added to the beauty and cheerfulness of the prospect, the forest was in many cases discontinued and finely interspersed with patches of cleared ground, adorned with a lively verdure.

But we were again sadly disappointed in our expectations, for we fondly imagined that upon our entrance into the harbour we should have the whole metropolis in open view, and a number of lofty buildings rising in conspicuous glory, with a respectable part of the Royal Navy lying at anchor before the town. Instead of which flattering instances of power, grandeur and magnificence, we could observe no edifices except the citadel and two or three scattered habitations; and as to shipping we saw only two sail of armed vessels and three or four sail at Major's Beach, for we were ignorant that both the town and the proper harbour were concealed by the interposition of St. George's Island and certain aspiring eminences to the northward. As we sailed slowly up the harbour, the next object which invited our attention, was a large fleet of Indian canoes, coasting along the Jebucto shore and filled with

multitudes of the native Micmacs, and at the same time we espied several of these copper-faced sons of liberty either landing on the margin of a little bay, or climbing up the stupendous precipices. We took notice upon this occasion, that artificial ways were formed up these steepy cliffs for the conveniency of ascending or conveying down timber, which is frequently cut on the summit of these ridges for the public works at Halifax. As we advanced still further from the ocean, the town began gradually to open, and we had in prospect several strong fortifications, as the Eastern Battery, George's Fort, and strong ramparts upon the neighbouring heights, with all their terrible apparatus of cannon and mortars. When we arrived near the above-mentioned Island of St. George's, we had a most advantageous, striking view of this northern capital, stretching a mile and an half upon the eastern ascent of an extensive hill, while a large collection of shipping lay either contiguous to the wharves, or else were riding, with the Britanic colours flying, in the channel, a sight which instantly inspired us with the most pleasing sensations. We expected to be hailed as we passed St. George's Fort, but the people, conceiving our vessel to be some coaster from Malagash, we were suffered to proceed without any inquiry.

We were now all upon deck, contemplating with infinite wonder and satisfaction the various objects about us, but we must however except John Hoffman from this agreeable employ, who was so affected with alternate joy and concern at the sight of his native place, that he retired into the cabin, there to indulge in solitude these conflicting passions. I perceived, that though he was highly rejoiced to behold the country where he was born and educated, yet he was seized with a prevailing anxiety of heart, lest he should find his tender mother, who had long mourned his absence, departed to the shades of death.

These uneasy apprehensions rendered him unfit for company, and threw him at length into visible confusion and distress. We were now indulging in a thousand pleasing reflections as we approached near the centre of the town, and this situation reminded us that it was proper to explore some convenient

place to secure a landing, but previous to this agreeable event it was concluded to investigate the Commodore's ship, and to solicit the naval commander for liberty to go on shore. A boat passing by this instant hailed us and demanded, as they were going swiftly under sail, from whence we came? We replied, from Kennebeck. This answer occasioned a visible surprise in the company, who continued repeating: 'Kennebeck! Kennebeck!' Seeing a number of men on board a sloop, we desired them to point out the Commodore, and received immediate information that there was no such officer in the harbour. This intelligence determined us directly to make towards a wharf, which happened to be near the Pontac.\* We were now plainly sensible that our uncouth habits and uncommon appearance had, by this time, attracted the notice of multitudes, who flocked towards the water to indulge their curiosity. These inquisitive strangers threw us into some confusion, and to prevent a multitude of impertinent interrogations, which might naturally be expected by persons in our circumstances, I made the following public declaration, standing on the quarter deck: "Gentlemen, we are a company of fugitives from Kennebeck, in New England, driven by famine and persecution to take refuge among you, and therefore I must entreat your candour and compassion to excuse the meanness and singularity of our dress."

I that moment discovered among the gathering crowd Mr. Kitson, one of our Kennebeck neighbours, running down the street to our assistance. He came instantly on board, and after mutual salutations, helped us on shore. Thus, just a fortnight after we left our own beloved habitation, we found ourselves landed in a strange country, destitute of money, clothing, dwelling or furniture, and wholly uncertain what countenance or protection we might obtain from the governing powers. Mr. Kitson kindly offered to conduct us either to Mr. Brown's or Capt. Callahan's; and just as we had quitted our vessel, Mr. Moody, formerly clerk to the King's Chapel, appeared to welcome our arrival. But as it may afford some diversion to

---

\**Sic* in MS.

the courteous reader, I will suspend my narration a few moments to describe the singularity of our apparel, and the order of our procession through the streets, which were surprisingly contrasted by the elegant dresses of the gentlemen and ladies we happened to meet in our lengthy ambulation. And here I am confoundedly at a loss where to begin, whether with Capt. Smith or myself, but as he was a faithful pilot to this haven of repose, I conclude it is no more than gratitude and complaisance to give him the preference. He was clothed in a long swingling thread-bare coat, and the rest of his habit displayed the venerable signatures of antiquity, both in the form and materials. His hat carried a long peak before, exactly perpendicular to the longitude of his aquiline nose. On the right hand of this sleek commander shuffled along your very humble servant, having his feet adorned with a pair of shoes, which sustained the marks of rebellion and independence. My legs were covered with a thick pair of blue woolen stockings, which had been so often mended and darned by the fingers of frugality, that scarce an atom of the original remained. My breeches, which just concealed the shame of my nakedness, had formerly been black, but the color being worn out by age, nothing remained but a rusty grey, bespattered with lint and bedaubed with pitch. Over a coarse tow and linen shirt, manufactured in the looms of sedition, I sustained a coat and waistcoat of the same dandy grey russet; and, to secrete from public inspection the innumerable rents, holes, and deformities, which time and misfortunes had wrought in these ragged and weather-beaten garments, I was furnished with a blue surtout, fretted at the elbows, worn at the button-holes, and stained with a variety of tints, so that it might truly be styled a coat of many colours, and to render this external department of my habit still more conspicuous and worthy of observation, the waist descended below my knees, and the skirts hung dangling about my heels; and to complete the whole a jaundice-coloured wig, devoid of curls, was shaded by the remnants of a rusty beaver, its monstrous brim replete with notches and furrows, and grown limpsy by the alternate inflictions of storm and sunshine, lopped over my shoulders, and obscured a face



meagre with famine and wrinkled with solicitude. My consort and neice came lagging behind at a little distance, the former arrayed in a ragged baize night-gown, tied 'round her middle with a woollen string instead of a sash; the latter carried upon her back the tattered remains of an hemlock-coloured linsey-woolsey, and both their heads were adorned with bonnets composed of black moth-eaten stuff, almost devoured with the teeth of time. I forgot to mention the admirable figure of their petticoats, jagged at the bottom, distinguished by a multitude of fissures, and curiously drabbled in the mud, for an heavy rain was now beginning to set in. And to close this solemn procession, Dr. Mayer and our faithful John marched along in all the pride of poverty and majesty of rags and patches, which exhibited the various dyes of the rainbow. The Doctor proceeded with a yellow bushy beard, grinning all the way, while his broad Dutch face opened at his mouth from ear to ear. The other continued his progression with a doleful solemnity of countenance, as if he designed to give a kind of dignity to the wretched fragments of his apparel which floated in the wind. In this manner our procession began, and was supported till we arrived at Capt. Callahan's, near half a mile from the place of our landing. This worthy gentleman, who was formerly my friend and neighbour, was at this time absent on the expedition to Penobscot. Having obtained entrance, we saw no person in the room but Polly Clensy, a young girl whom this family had transported from Kennebeck. After her surprise at our unexpected appearance was a little abated, she ran up stairs to inform Mrs. Callahan of our arrival, but in her precipitation forgot to mention her God-son, Charley, which made her immediately conclude that we had by some fatal accident lost him. This filled the good woman with alarming emotions, and she hastened down with evident expressions of anxiety and tremor in her face, for it was some moments before she observed the little charmer prattling about the room. Indeed, we were all so deeply affected with this happy meeting that we could hardly speak to each other, and a scene of silent confusion ensued till our various agitations began to subside. Mrs. Callahan quickly informed us that she had a dream the preceding night,

which occasioned her no small uneasiness. She imagined in her sleep, that as she was dressing before breakfast, Polly came running up to her chamber in the utmost hurry, and assured her that Mr. Bailey and family were all safely arrived from New England except little Charley, who was missing, upon which information she descended with an heavy heart, and found all as Polly had represented—all the family present except the lovely child. She further fancied in her dream, that in the midst of our mutual inquiries and congratulations, Master Harry Brown came in, and after paying his compliments informed us that his papa was coming immediately to give us joy.

No sooner had Mrs. Cullahan finished her dream than Master Harry came smiling and blushing into the room, and after bidding us welcome to Halifax, acquainted me that his papa was approaching to pay me his compliments. The women, upon this occasion, declared with united voices, that the dream was fulfilled in a very remarkable manner. By this time my old, generous friend, Mr. Brown, was arrived, in company with Captain Martin Gay, a refugee from Boston. These two worthy gentlemen, by their obliging conduct and sensible conversation, greatly relieved our spirits. In a few minutes after, we were favoured with a visit from the polite and generous Doctor Breynton, Rector of St. Paul's Church in Halifax. He addressed us with that ease, freedom, and gentleness peculiar to himself. His countenance exhibited a most finished picture of compassionate good nature, and the effusions of tenderness and humanity glistened in his venerable eyes when he had learned part of our history. He kindly assured us that he most heartily congratulated us upon our fortunate deliverance from tyranny, oppression, and poverty, and he declared that we might depend on his attention and assistance to make us comfortable and happy. The turn of his features, and the manner of his expression, afforded a convincing evidence of his sincerity, and the event afterwards gave me undeniable demonstration that I was not mistaken in my favourable conjectures. Before we parted he informed me that it was expected I should wait upon the Governor at eleven to acquaint

him with my arrival, and to solicit his countenance and protection.

Breakfast being prepared and the table adorned with proper furniture for tea and a loaf of flour bread, our young shaver, who had never seen anything of the like nature and construction before, was so moved with its appearance, that he ran smiling to the table, and, assuming every childish expression of admiration and joy, exclaimed in the fulness of his heart: "Pray, mamma, what is that on Mrs. Callahan's table?" He was told that it was bread. "What bread, mamma; is it baked bread?" for the poor little fellow had never seen or tasted any bread made of flour. This incident greatly affected the whole company, and the good Doctor in particular, could scarcely refrain from tearful emotions. He now begged to be excused for the present, and repaired directly to Mr. Justice Wenman's, keeper of the Orphan House, to procure us, with the assistance of this gentleman, a comfortable habitation. This honest magistrate was so touched with our deplorable circumstances and situation, especially with the anecdote of the child, that he took a guinea out of his pocket, and, addressing himself to the Doctor, "Here," says he, "is something to buy the young chatterbox a little bread for the present."

We had at breakfast an old lady and a very pretty, genteel young Miss, about twelve, natural daughter to the famous Captain Mowatt. Dr. Breynton quickly returned with the most soothing expressions of kindness and friendship. He politely entreated Mrs. Bailey to expel from her mind all uneasy and distressing apprehensions, and repeatedly assured us both, that many persons among them would cheerfully exert themselves to the utmost of their power to make our situation easy and desirable, and cautioned us against indulging gloomy and anxious ideas any longer. He then presented the little Tory, as he called him, with the guinea from Mr. Wenman, and looking upon his watch, declared it was time to wait upon the Governor. At his direction, and in his company, I walked out in my ridiculous habit, attended by that queerest of mortals, Dr. Mayer, who, to render his poverty still more conspicuous, had put on, over his rags and dirty linen, a thread-bare scarlet

coat, brought out of Germany near thirty years ago. In our progress, our kind conductor introduced me to several gentlemen who happened to be in our way, among which number it would be ungrateful not to mention Col. Butler, the agent victualler, and one of His Majesty's Council for this Province, who observing the meanness of my dress, took the Doctor aside and ordered me a suit of superfine broadcloth. The next person of consequence who engaged our attention was Mr. Franklin, formerly Lieut. Governor of Nova Scotia; he had several Indians in his train, arrayed in all their tinsel finery; among the rest a Sachem belonging to the tribe of St. Johns. This fellow, by the oddity of his appearance and the singularity of his visage, immediately struck my imagination, and I was unable to look upon him without a mixture of hilarity and wonder. He was arrayed in a long blue coat, adorned with a scarlet cape, and bound close about his loins with a girdle. He wore upon his head a narrow-brimmed flopped hat, and his face was an entire composition of wrinkles. I was admitted to the honor of shaking hands with this American Monarch, who, eyeing me from head to foot, and perceiving that I had more rags than finery about me, I plainly discerned that his complaisance was mingled with a degree of contempt, for, instead of pulling off his hat, he only touched it with his fingers and nodded his head; though I remarked a few days after, when I was dressed in a new suit of clothes, he approached me with higher marks of veneration, and did not fail to take his hat wholly from his head. Thus people of all nations, both barbarous and polished, reverence and respect their fellow creatures, not for qualities, which belong to human nature, but on account of those ornaments for which they are indebted to other parts of the creation. In our way to the supreme ruler of the Province, the Doctor conducted me into his lodgings at Mr. Fletcher's, where he presented me with a beaver, almost new, and then, crossing the street, introduced me to the Governor. We entered through a gate into a large back yard, where we found two or three servants attending. Acquainting them with our business, they conducted us into an elegant apartment, and after waiting a few minutes his

Honor appeared, and kindly welcomed me to his government, and then, desiring us to be seated, began to ask me a variety of questions concerning New England, and about the eastern country and my own private affairs. I endeavored to satisfy his curiosity in the best manner I was able. I assured him that the inhabitants of New England were in a deplorable situation, torn to pieces by discontent and factions among themselves, heartily tired of the war, sick of their French alliance, reduced to poverty, and sorely distressed for want of provisions. As to the eastern country from which I was happy enough to escape, I informed him that the people were almost universally dissatisfied with the dominion of the Congress; that they were laboring under the horrors of nakedness and famine, and at the same time cruelly harrassed and persecuted by a number of inexorable tyrants, who had got all the power into their hands; and lastly, I gave him a short history of my own adventures among the rebels, and of the injurious treatment I received at their hands. During our conversation, Mr. Buckley, the Secretary, came in and gave me his most hearty congratulations. After the Secretary had retired we continued our conversation about the American rebellion, when I signified to the Governor that I was perfectly acquainted with the capital leaders in the present revolt, and from a thorough knowledge of their tempers, principles and circumstances, I was far from wondering at their proceedings, since I always considered them as proper implements of faction, sedition and turbulence; ambition, avarice and revenge, being their predominant and governing passions. I found the Governor very sociable and strictly inquisitive. At parting he assured me that he would employ his interest to procure me relief and to make my abode in the Province agreeable, and in the conclusion advised me to prepare a memorial of my adventures and sufferings, with a view to its speedy publication. This he suggested as the most eligible method of obtaining some present emolument.

Having taken my leave of the Governor, Dr. Breynton presented me with a couple of Jo's, and, who could believe it, my simple heart danced within me at the appearance of gold,

wicked gold! that has been, and still continues to be, the parent of ten thousand evils. Thou pernicious metal! Who shall presume to declare in thy favour, after all the mischief thou hast occasioned in the world? Thou hast often, by thy all-commanding power, compelled mankind to despise the demands of justice, to spread the flames of devastation, to wield the sword of destruction, to dissolve the tenderest ties of nature, and to commit the most shocking enormities with impunity. I have seen multitudes so bewitched by thy glittering charms as to renounce the most sacred obligations and the softest feelings. Inspired by thee, they have closed up the bowels of compassion, have turned away their eyes from the sight of distress, and have been deaf when the voice of misery pierced the very heavens. For thee, men have renounced the principles of truth and veracity, have proved false to their engagements, have appealed to the Almighty for the confirmation of a lie, have betrayed their country, have conspired against their King, denied their Saviour, and blasphemed their God, and yet, notwithstanding all these and a million other flagrant crimes thou art daily teaching men to commit, yet still thou art respected, courted, followed, and adored with the profoundest veneration.

Parting from this benevolent gentleman while my heart was bursting with gratitude, I took this opportunity of visiting Mrs. Brown and her lovely daughter, neither of whom I had seen since my arrival. Our meeting was affectionate and our declarations of friendship and tenderness perfectly sincere. As soon as the rapturous effusions of benignity and the irregular expressions of mutual ardor began to subside, Mrs. Brown presented me with a bottle of Keppen's snuff, a comfortable repast for my nose, and then ordered me a pair of English shoes, and a couple of black worsted stockings. The sight and possession of the British manufactures gave pleasure to my inward man, and compelled me to smile at both corners of my mouth, while the considerate and bountiful indulgence of my former friends began to smooth the furrows of my face, and I returned back to Mrs. Callahan's, I verily believe, with the loss of several wrinkles. Soon after my return, Mr.

Bennet, another clergyman and Missionary from the Society came to visit us, and made a polite tender of his service. His design was, if I had no family, to offer me a part of his lodgings in the Assembly House. We had what I esteemed an elegant dinner, for it was so long since I beheld a well furnished table, that what others esteemed only tolerable, appeared to me splendid and sumptuous beyond compare. I found myself extremely contented and happy in the society, the pleasing smiles and obliging conversation of my friends, without the dread of any fatal interruption from the unwelcome intrusion of some surly committee man, or unfeeling officer of the Congress, with malice in his heart, vengeance in his face, and destruction in his hands. But I shall take occasion in my next day's journal to draw a more critical contrast between my present and former situation. But I cannot forbear reciting an incident in my own feelings and conduct, which plainly evinced that I had not yet banished New England from my remembrance. This afternoon, as I was sitting at Mr. Brown's, a number of people being persent, some person knocked at the door, upon which I started by an involuntary impulse, and, suddenly springing out of my seat, hastened to the other side of the room. This was attended with visible terror in my countenance, which excited the laughter of the company, for they had sagacity enough to discern the cause of my agitation and affright. Mrs. Brown exclaimed, 'Pray, sir, compose yourself, and recollect that here is no committee man approaching to disturb your tranquillity.' After dinner, Mr. George Light and his brother came to Mrs. Callahan's, highly elevated with the novelty of the scenes and with the freedom and plenty which appeared in this town. They informed us that young Hoffman had the pleasure of finding his mother alive, who received her son with the warmest transport of joy. She had near a twelvemonth before received intelligence of his death, and that he was killed fighting with the rebels at the famous battle of Bunker Hill. Upon which distressing intelligence she arrayed herself in the habit of mourning, and sadly bewailed the untimely fate of her beloved child, and a circumstance which added to

her extreme affliction remains to be recited. This John was the last survivor out of ten children, who had been born by a former husband. Such unexpected revolution of Providence in her favour must have filled her with the tenderest effusions of rapture and exultation. In the afternoon, towards evening, I revisited Mr. Brown, but he being absent, I tarried and drank tea with his agreeable family. I perceived in the course of conversation at this hospitable mansion, that Mr. Nathaniel Gardiner, notwithstanding his impudent and foppish behaviour at Halifax, had not been guilty of so much fraud and breach of trust as we imagined. My friends, in particular, were cautious of trusting him with any great matters, especially as he was in danger of being plundered by the American pirates, however honest and faithful he might be in the main. Mrs. Brown however sent us a pound of the best Hyson tea and some trifles, which were never delivered, except one pound of Bohea. I was now assured that the paper which Captain Callahan had brought to Halifax, giving the history of my famous trials before the committee, and the letters I had intrusted to the care of Gardiner had prepared me a way for a generous reception. Several circumstances, it must be confessed, were a little unfavourable in the present prospect. Governor Arbuthnot, who greatly interested himself in my favour, was removed from the Province, and destined to command the Royal navy in America, and General Massy, who had imbibed the same favourable sentiments, was recalled, and General McLean appointed to succeed him. Never were two gentlemen of more different dispositions. The former was sociable, humane, generous and friendly, and exerted himself beyond measure to oblige and assist the refugees. But the other was opinionated and headstrong, insensible to every softer feeling, and under the pretence that Government was imposed upon, had ordered the rations to be taken away from two or three hundred persons, continuing them to only about twenty refugees.

A gentleman who waited upon Mr. Arbuthnot when he had the perusal of my papers, stated that he could scarcely refrain from shedding tears, and he afterwards declared that he had it in view to procure my enlargement from bondage and persecu-



tion, and just before his departure from Britain he expressed his concern that I was not yet arrived from New England. 'If,' said he, 'the cruel treatment and severe persecution of the rebels should affect his life, there is nothing to be done, but should he survive their malice and make his escape, I will certainly do something for his advantage.'

The Secretary, Mr. Buckley, was extremely moved with the narrative, and offered to send me ten guineas, provided my friends could find any method of conveying them with safety, and this day, meeting Mr. Brown in the street, he caught hold of his hand, and repeated, with the highest emotions of pleasure, 'I heartily congratulate you on the fortunate escape of your friend from his wretched confinement, and you may depend upon my assistance to procure him any benefit in my power.' These incidents were very soothing, and tended to exhilarate my spirits after such a profusion of fatigue, depression, and anxiety. It was, however, some abatement to my felicity when I found no British forces were yet arrived from England, either here or at New York. I had, notwithstanding, some pleasing expectations from the expedition to the eastern country, under the conduct of General McLean. I now understood that he had sailed with about eight hundred land forces, accompanied with six or seven armed vessels. His design was, if he met with a reinforcement from New York, to make a descent upon Falmouth, or otherwise to take possession at Penobscot. In the afternoon I was again in company with the worthy Capt. Gay, who had something very singular and affecting in his story. This gentleman was son to Parson Gay, of Hingham, was captain of the militia in the rebellious town of Boston, and a deacon of Howard's meeting, but being a man of steady principles and unshaken virtue, was early disgusted with the proceedings of his countrymen. He took every convenient opportunity of discovering his sentiments of loyalty, which rendered himself highly obnoxious to the malignant and furious faction in Boston. This obliged him to apply to the King's troops for protection, and having conveyed away his family, excepting his eldest son, to Hingham, he fled with General Howe and his forces to this Pro-

vince, upon the evacuation of the above-mentioned town. Soon after his arrival he placed his son, a very promising youth, about seventeen, under the care of Mr. Allen, an eminent merchant in Halifax. Mr. Gay afterwards repaired to Cumberland, where he had some interest, upon business. During the absence of the affectionate father the son was persuaded one day to go a gunning in company with a son of Mr. Allen, with whom he had contracted a most intimate acquaintance. After they had diverted themselves several hours they returned towards town, when, by some unfortunate accident, Mr. Allen's gun went off and killed his friend Gay dead upon the spot. This melancholy and tragical affair threw the whole family into the deepest grief and consternation. Before these sorrowful emotions had subsided they despatched a messenger with the shocking intelligence to the unhappy father, who met the messenger on the road between Windsor and Halifax as he was returning from Cumberland. This alarming and affecting information must have occasioned the most painful sensations in the bosom of the bereaved parent, but he sustained all the afflictions which Providence was pleased to pour upon him with surprising firmness, resignation, and silent composure. We had in company this afternoon another refugee, one Mr. Atkins, formerly a merchant in Boston, and afterwards a Custom House officer at Newbury. He had suffered almost every species of indignity, was frequently seized by the hand of lawless power, kept under confinement, and threatened with destruction, till he was fortunate enough, about eleven months ago, to enlarge himself from their clutches. He fled along the eastern shore, and arrived at this asylum by the way of Machias. Towards night, having my head confused with a variety of objects and entertainments of various kinds, I repaired to Mrs. Callahan's, where we passed away the evening in conversation, and related to each other our several adventures since our parting last year at Kennebeck. Mrs. Callahan informed us, that having embarked from Kennebeck with one Cermine, a Scotchman, in a little schooner of about ten or twelve tons, they put out to sea, and after coasting along the eastern shore for several days, at length crossed the

Bay of Fundy in a thick fog. It was with extreme difficulty they made Annapolis Gut, where she was fortunate enough to meet her husband, then commander of the *Gage*, and after tarrying at Annapolis some time she went 'round to Halifax by water, where she arrived about six weeks after she left Kennebeck, and has since been settled in tranquillity, and able to live in a comfortable manner without any molestation from rebel committees. She then gave me a short history of her husband's fortune from the time he left his own habitation at Pownalborough.

*June 22d.* This morning, after breakfast, received another visit from the good Doctor, who informed me that he had provided us with an habitation, and desired me to attend him in order to view it. Pleased with this agreeable intelligence I immediately complied with his requisition. In our way we happened to meet with Dr. Prince, a refugee from Salem, a gentleman who had acquired in the space of five years a large fortune by merchandise. To this countryman of mine the Doctor introduced me, and, having acquainted him with my necessitous circumstances, the other generously gave me eight dollars.

The house which the Doctor had procured belonged to Mr. Justice Wenman, keeper of the Orphan House, and stood on the east side of Pleasant Street, which runs straight from the Grand Parade, near the Church, to the water, and is almost a mile in length. This is the most elegant street in the town, and is much frequented by gentlemen and ladies for an evening walk in fine weather. After tea we perceive one gay company after another, in perpetual succession, dressed in their finest apparel, which affords a fine and cheerful appearance. At the gate we have an extensive prospect of the harbour and the adjacent ocean, which is closed by the southern horizon, and can discover every sail coming from the westward the moment it proceeds 'round Jebucto Head. To the northward the street extends adorned with the grand Provo, Assembly House, Church, and private buildings to a vast distance, and is limited by a cross street, three-quarters of a mile from hence. To the west arise beautiful ranges of green fields, in-

terspersed with several remarkable structures, as Fort Massy, the Governor's summer house, the Work House; and beyond these the Citadel Hill, with all its fortifications and warlike apparatus, towers aloft in majestic grandeur, and overlooks both the town and the adjacent country. We enter through a spacious gate into a decent yard, with an avenue to the house, bounded on each side by a little grove of English hawthorns, in this season in all their blooming glory. The house consisted of a convenient kitchen, a tight cellar, a chamber, and an elegant parlour, papered and containing two closets. Before the door was a little porch with a seat. From the two eastern windows we had a most charming prospect of Mr. Wenman's garden, in which were planted such a profusion of willows, hawthorns, and fruit trees of various kinds, that they formed a perfect wilderness, extremely pleasant to the sight and grateful to the smell. And, indeed, when we looked out of these windows we rather fancied ourselves in the midst of a woody country, than in the heart of a populous town. Dr. Breynton introduced me to Mr. Wenman, who, like a true Englishman, gave me a hearty welcome. I found him a large, robust man, near seventy years of age, with scarce a wrinkle in his face; but he assured me that notwithstanding he appeared with such a florid, strong, and healthy constitution, he had been above twenty years afflicted with a complication of disorders, such as the gout, gravel, and stone, besides a troublesome cough, which seized him on a sudden, and continued with such violence that it frequently deprived him of strength. The people being gone to fetch our trifles from on board the schooner, I tarried with Mr. Wenman till their arrival. I quickly discovered him to be an enemy to the American rebellion, and after cursing most heartily the leaders, he proceeded to inform me that this Metropolis contained a multitude of persons disaffected to government, for which reason he seldom went abroad, and that upon such occasions he never visited but two families. He appeared to be a rough, open, and honest Englishman, generous; friendly, and humane, where he imagines an object deserving, but those who are artful, designing, or conceited, can look for no more than bare justice from him, and that they

may expect to receive with the most exact punctuality. When he conveys a favour the matter is done without any ceremony, and, if you attempt to return any compliments or acknowledgements, he would rather appear to be offended, and declare, with a bluntness peculiar to himself, 'I have not done this trifle out of any particular regard to yourself, for I should have shown the same, or perhaps a greater favour, to any other person in the same circumstances.' He assured me that when any person had offended him he never forgave him, for, though he scorned to take any revenge, or to offer him the least injury, yet he immediately broke off all connection with him, and never trusted him afterwards. But notwithstanding this declaration, I am certain that he might easily be reconciled when the offending person had not been guilty of baseness and treachery in his conduct. Whilst we continued engaged in this conversation he made several shrewd remarks upon the behaviour of my countrymen, who formerly used the Halifax trade. Some he acknowledged to be remarkably honest and fair traders as ever he met with in the compass of his acquaintance, but in general he found them to be the profoundest hypocrites in nature, and the cunningest knaves upon earth; for though men advanced in life were averse to swearing, and would pucker up their mouths, and roll their eyes towards Heaven at the mention of an oath, yet they would not scruple to lie, and deliberately appeal to the Almighty in confirmation of a falsehood. He likewise added that he had been acquainted with several young fellows from Boston government, who upon their first arrival at Halifax would not utter a profane oath, or execration, upon the most powerful excitement or provocation, but only when highly exasperated exclaim, 'I vow you are a serpently devil, a'most!' And yet in a few weeks these very conscientious travellers would disengage themselves from all the restraints of education, and exceed the most abandoned sailors in bold and daring impiety. They would both take the Sacred Name in vain, and practice the most horrid curses, and even make a public scoff and ridicule of all religion. When the old gentleman had entertained me with two or three of his long-winded stories, I was diverted from any longer

attendance by the arrival of our people, and having conveyed our treasure, consisting of two ancient feather beds,—through the weather-beaten crevices of which the down issued in great abundance,—one patched quilt, containing a greater variety of colours than the rainbow; half of a very elderly rug, worn to the quick, and half a pair of sheets, and a small chest containing the remnants of poverty, viz.: one silk gown, five battered knives and forks, the same —— ”

The remainder of the Journal is missing.

## CHAPTER VIII.

THE paper of the earliest date after the termination of the Journal, which has come into the hands of the writer of this Memoir, is the following:—

TO MR. JOHN CARLETON, AT WOOLWICH, N. E.

*Halifax, June 25, 1779.* • • “The General Assembly of the Province have given me two hundred dollars, (not square ones,)\* and I have received in private presents nearly three hundred more. The lady of Col. Phips,† upon my recommendation, desires that if the King’s forces should arrive in your neighbourhood, you would be kind enough to point out her farm, and to suggest some method to preserve the cattle and buildings from destruction.”

Gen. McLean commanded an expedition which had sailed from Halifax that summer and landed at Major-bignyduce, now Castine, which place was fortified by the English forces. To this officer Mr. Bailey addressed a letter from Halifax, July 10th, 1779. The object was to furnish a list of loyalists in and near Kennebeck, known or believed to be such by the writer. If Mr. Bailey was correct, the friends of the British government, in that region, were more numerous than has generally been supposed. He gives the names of twenty-seven residing in Bristol and Broad Bay,‡ and classes with them “all the Dutch families in Broad Bay, except ten or twelve families,” eighteen in Woolwich, thirty-two in Georgetown, fifty-three

\* “*Resolved*, That His Honor, the Lieutenant Governor, be requested to grant a Warrant to Rev. Mr. Bailey of £50, to be paid out of the moneys arising from the duties on Import and Excise, for his present Relief.

*Ordered*, That this Resolution be sent to His Majesty’s Council for concurrence.”  
—*Journal of the House of Assembly of Nova Scotia, June 23d, 1779*; p. 18.

† See *Sabine’s American Loyalists*—PHIPS, DAVID. p. 689.

‡ Now Waldoborough.

in Pownalboro', and twenty-two in the towns of St. Georges, Bowdoinham, Hallowell, Topsham and Winthrop. In writing to the Venerable Society under date of July 4th, 1779, Mr. Bailey says: "Sixteen of my hearers are now in the King's service, and the remainder, except one or two families, are distinguished for their loyalty."

Attached to the British forces which held Major-bignyduce was Dr. John Calf, who had married the daughter of Rev. Jedediah Jewett, of Rowley, Mr. Bailey's early and kind patron. Mr. Bailey wrote to him from Halifax. He says: "Being informed that you possess a department in the garrison which gives you considerable influence, I have made this attempt to solicit your interest in case a chaplain should be appointed. I am the rather induced to make this application because your station is within the limits of my Mission, and from a tender regard to multitudes of loyal subjects within the county of Lincoln, who are both my friends and parishioners."

During this summer Mr. Bailey received invitations from two different parishes to become their minister. He thus writes to his brother at Pownalboro':—

"*Halifax, Sept. 6th, 1779.* I have made an excursion into the country, and travelled through all the fine settlements on the Basin of Minas, and never beheld finer farms than at Windsor, Falmouth, Horton and Cornwallis. The latter is the place where the Neutral French had formerly their principal habitation. I have dined upon the very spot where Charles\* Le Blanc formerly lived. Two hundred families are settled in this place, and I am invited to officiate among them this winter, and believe I shall accept their offer till I can return to Kennebeck in safety. They have agreed to furnish me with an house and firing, to give me an horse worth ten guineas, to be at the expense of my removal, and to allow me a weekly contribution, besides presents, which will amount to more than seventy pounds sterling per year, if I reckon the prices at

---

\* This should be René Le Blanc, who was Public Notary for the Acadians. Vide *Halliburton's Nova Scotia*, I. p. 194.



Halifax. But notwithstanding I have been treated with uncommon kindness and respect, no consideration shall ever detain me from visiting my former friends and neighbours when the tyranny of Congress is overpast. I have likewise had an invitation to St. Johns and Cumberland. In the latter department I might be admitted Chaplain of the garrison, worth £180 per annum, but I cannot endure the thoughts of that remote situation, especially among a set of people disposed to revolt."

This new field of Mr. Bailey's labours possessed a varied interest. Its natural scenery is described as extremely beautiful, while the fertility of its soil has given it the title of "the garden of Nova Scotia." Much of its history, too, can hardly fail to excite emotion. Here dwelt, only some few years before, a people who, in many respects, seem almost to have realized the Golden Age of the poets. Simple in their manners, and abundantly supplied, from their own labor, with everything which their few wants required, they sought little or no intercourse with the rest of the world, from which they were, in a great measure, isolated.

But they inhabited a country that had frequently changed masters, and they were not gifted with that policy which would enable them to transfer their allegiance with the results of war, or the treaties of European Powers. Their attachment to their fatherland was strengthened by a community of religion. Their manners and customs, the style of their dwellings and the fashion of their dress and ornaments, reminded the traveller of France, which had its representatives in many respects amid the evergreens, and on the dyked meadows of this part of Acadia. The English supposed, and perhaps justly, that the professed neutrality of these simple inhabitants had been violated by indirect assistance to the French, who attacked Chebucto and other places, and that at times they had joined with them and the Indians in their marauding expeditions. Hence it was determined to transport them to other places. And though perhaps this was managed with as much judgment and feeling as the case admitted, yet hundreds were taken from the old, familiar scenes of their nativity, and

scattered through the other American colonies. Here they could not fail to experience the hatred which would be shown to persons suspected of any previous connection with the Indians, whose barbarous warfare had caused so much waste of blood and treasure in many places, and this antipathy would be sharpened by dislike to the religion of these poor exiles. Upon the departure of these unfortunate people, their houses and church were burned by the English, their domestic animals perished with hunger, and the dykes, which protected their fertile meadows from the sea, fell into decay. Five years after this event a fleet of twenty-two transports, convoyed by an armed vessel of sixteen guns, landed emigrants from New England on the territory that had been occupied by the Neutral French. Two hundred persons from Connecticut settled at Cornwallis. Although, as before stated, the natural features of the country were beautiful, yet the ruin which had befallen the former inhabitants was distinctly visible, and could hardly fail to inspire melancholy emotions.

Stockaded houses were erected, and a small detachment of soldiers were stationed at Cornwallis for the protection of the inhabitants against the Indians. The detachment was afterwards increased, and a regular military post was established with the properly fortified buildings.

The greater part, if not all, who settled at Cornwallis were dissenters from the Church of England. But in three years after their arrival, a Missionary of the Venerable Society was appointed to the region in which that town was situated.

In 1770, a small church was erected at Cornwallis by Col. Burbidge and Mr. Best, at their own expense.\*

Mr. Bailey arrived at his field of labour about Oct. 20th, 1779. The winter that succeeded was one of anxiety and gloom. The community was very much divided in religious matters, the Church people were few, about twenty families, who of course were strangers to their new minister, and there were few to sympathize with him in his loyalty to the King.

---

\* Aiken's Sketch of the Church in the Provinces, p. 26.

His expectations in the way of salary seem not to have been realized, for he writes to a friend: "My emoluments are small. I am allowed a little, inconvenient house and fire-wood, and get beside five or six shillings per week contribution for preaching. I have about ten or twelve scholars, which afford me about eight dollars per month. Every necessary of life is extremely dear in this place."

Affliction also visited him. He was informed of the death of his brother at Kennebec, who had been his Parish Clerk there, and also of that of Capt. Callahan, who, while acting as one of the King's Pilots, lost his life by shipwreck in Halifax harbor. This person had been one of his Church Wardens at Pownalboro'. Added to this was pecuniary disappointment. A mercantile friend in Halifax, to whom he had intrusted bills of exchange on London for £100 sterling, became bankrupt. Mr. Bailey, in writing to Rev. Samuel Peters, formerly of Hebron, Ct., but then in London, mentions the fact of this failure and says: "As I have been obliged to run in debt at Cornwallis for the necessities of life, this affair throws me into an uncomfortable situation."

Mr. Bailey had sacrificed much more advantageous prospects to come to Cornwallis because he considered himself bound in honor to fulfil the engagements he had made with the parish in that town. He writes to Mr. Pochard at Kennebec: "About ten days after my arrival in Halifax, I received an invitation from some principal gentlemen to visit Cornwallis. I accordingly preached among them two Sundays in August, and, finding nothing more advantageous offer, I agreed to remove my family and continue through the winter, but immediately after this engagement I was urged to tarry at Halifax, as an assistant to the worthy Dr. Breynton, for which I was offered £70 sterling per year, besides a school worth an hundred more; and what conduced to render this employment still more agreeable, I was assured, both by Dr. Breynton and the Church officers, that my performances were acceptable to that numerous congregation; and though my being preferred to several other clergymen was a little flattering to my vanity, yet I concluded to adhere to my engagements, and removed

with my family about the middle of October to this distant retreat."

During the summer of 1780 Mr. Bailey writes to his sister-in-law at Kennebec: "I have lately, without any solicitation on my part, been appointed deputy chaplain to the 84th Regiment, part of which keep a garrison at Annapolis." In a subsequent letter to a friend, he says: "Dr. Breynton is included in the appointment and performs the duty" (in Halifax.) The following is an extract of a letter to the Society, P. G., dated Nov. 4th in this year. "I beg leave to inform the Venerable Society that I still continue at Cornwallis, and have officiated without being absent one Sunday since my arrival. I have had a decent and respectable, though not a large congregation. Their contributions towards my support are precarious, and all the articles of subsistence are so excessively extravagant that my emoluments will hardly support my family. The want of books is a misfortune I sensibly feel in my present situation, for I was constrained to leave my library behind when I escaped from New England, and being so remote from the metropolis I can receive no assistance from others."

In December of the same year, Rev. Aaron Bancroft arrived. Mr. Bancroft was afterwards a Doctor of Divinity and Congregational minister at Worcester, Mass. At first Mr. Bailey was suspicious of him, as the Dissenters in Cornwallis are said by him to have sympathized in the American Revolution.

Dr. Hicks, then residing in the West Indies, had formerly been in Mr. Bailey's neighborhood at Kennebec and become acquainted with the prominent persons there. The following extract of a letter to him dated Dec. 22d, 1780, refers to an individual well known in that part of the country. "I fancy you must have been acquainted with John Jones the surveyor of Kennebeck. After having almost exceeded the famous Roderick Random in adventures and escapes, he obtained a Captain's commission in Rogers' corps, and in several excursions from Penobscot he has performed wonders. Among other exploits he seized the tyrant Cushing at his own house, and conveyed him in a ridiculous dishabille to the British fort."

The straitness of Mr. Bailey's circumstances at the com-

mencement of 1781 may be inferred from a statement to his brother-in-law, Rev. Mr. Weeks: "The contest with regard to a school has terminated in my favour, and I have at present ten scholars, the number I was desirous of instructing, but nothing except necessity would have prevailed upon me to continue this laborious and perplexing employment."

In March, 1781, a daughter was born to Mr. and Mrs. Bailey, who was christened Rebecca Lavina.

The Rev. Dr. Caner, formerly Rector of King's Chapel, Boston, Mass., left that place with the British troops who evacuated Boston in March, 1776. In writing to a correspondent in April, 1781, Mr. Bailey states, "by letters from London I am informed that Dr. Caner had retired with his young wife to Cardiff, in Wales."

Several letters are preserved from Rev. Samuel Peters, D. D., then residing in London, to the subject of this Memoir. They are all of a singular character, like the writer. The following is an extract from one, dated London, February 8th, 1781. . . . "What I am next to consider is how I can come at one or two of your sermons, that the public may share with the ingrates of Cornwallis what Sterne would read and devour with pleasure. . . . I have heard much of your sermons as to style, sentiment, and composition, that they are exotics and originals. . . . You will see the Farewell to Kennebeck," but little differenced from the original, which was chiefly done to avoid some words less fashionable now than formerly, and to make even measure, as is the fashion now in ten feet verses. Many verses would have done honour to Young, or Pope, or Milton. The last verse was read aloud in a Coffee House, and drew sighs and tears from many sympathizing persons." Another correspondent in London writes, "I have not yet seen the lines you sent to Mr. Peters, who has made you figure in the Magazines by publishing them."

In reply to the request of Dr. Peters, contained in the foregoing letter, Mr. Bailey writes: "In a former letter you mentioned somewhat about sending you sermons, which, in con-

junction with the desire of several friends in these parts has induced me to transcribe a number and leave them with Mr. Thomas Brown, of Halifax, which he may transmit, if he pleases. I am sensible that they have nothing to recommend them except their novelty. If they should be thought worthy of publication they will make a volume of the same size with Sterne's. You may affix what title you think proper. They were all, except the first two, delivered since the commencement of the rebellion. I had little choice in this collection, for I brought away only about a dozen in my precipitate flight." To Rev. William Clarke, formerly Rector of the Church in Dedham, Mass., but who was then residing in London, Mr. Bailey writes: "It would never have entered into my head to offer any of my sermons for publication had it not been for Mr. Peters. . . . You will find them upon singular subjects, chiefly levelled against the principles of rebellion. These were chosen from about a dozen which I accidentally brought away from New England. All the rest of my sermons, books, &c., were left behind. I cannot forbear remarking that the 5th and 7th discourses were highly applauded by the Whigs, and that party, in consequence of what they termed my bold integrity, made me a present of two hundred and fifty dollars, but these were chiefly Southern Whigs. The 6th, however, gave great offence at Falmouth to the rebellious party, who could endure no strictures upon revenge, perfidy, and baseness." To the letter to Dr. Peters, the Doctor thus replied: "London, Feb. 15, 1782. I received your eight sermons with pleasure and read them. The cost of printing two hundred and fifty is £12, in the size of Sterne. I intend to send you one of them printed the next opportunity." Whether these were ever published the writer of this Memoir has no means of knowing.

A History of Connecticut, which has attracted much attention, has generally been ascribed to Dr. Peters, entirely on internal evidence, as the Doctor never acknowledged it. The letter just quoted contains the following: "Some assassin, last summer, published the History of Connecticut in a lively and sarcastic style. It is said to be the only true and impartial history ever published about New England. We cannot find

out the author, but Harrison Gray, and the Saints of Salem and Boston, like it not. They call it 'a cursed book.' Price 6s., bound."

The occupation by the British, in 1779, of the peninsula of Major-biguyduce, now called Castine, has been before spoken of. Here they erected a fortification to which they gave the name of Fort George. Many loyalists found their way thither, among them some of Mr. Bailey's friends in the eastern country. A desire to be with them, and discontent with the place of his residence, induced him to think favorably of a removal thither. In several of his letters he mentions this wish of his, to which some of the residents at Fort George responded, as appears by a subscription paper drawn up this year for his support, and signed by fifteen persons. Among these names are Jere. Pote, Robert Pagan, Robert Pagan, Jr., and Thomas Wyer, formerly of Falmouth, now Portland. In a letter to the Society, P. G., Nov. 8, 1781, Mr. Bailey says: "I have had several applications from my friends at Penobscot for my removal thither, but, though that settlement has greatly increased, other gentlemen, upon whose friendship and judgment I can rely, advise me not to venture while matters remain in their present precarious situation." In two years after the place was given up by the British.

Events were in progress that led to his appointment as Missionary at Annapolis. This place has been before spoken of, under its French name of Port Royal, as the residence of the adventurers from France in the years 1604 and 1605. During the century that followed, the basin that lies in its front bore on its bosom at various times hostile fleets, and the neighboring hills echoed back the rattling of musketry and the report of cannon, used by those who attacked and those who defended the important fortress which was there established. Martial law alone prevailed for many long years. No Protestant minister had settled himself at this distant post, but Romish priests ministered to the garrison and the neighboring savages in those years, when the French had possession of Port Royal. It was not till 1713 that Nova Scotia finally passed by treaty into the hands of the English, who, in honor to the reigning

sovereign, changed the name of Port Royal to Annapolis. The importance of its position, and its being the residence of the Governor of Nova Scotia, and of military officers of high rank, made it the most noted place east of Boston, excepting Louisburgh. It thus remained until 1750, when the seat of government was removed to the rapidly rising town of Halifax.

The first English Missionary\* at Annapolis was the Rev. Thomas Wood, formerly of New Jersey, but who was transferred from that Province to Halifax in 1756. In addition to the performance of the labors of his Mission he was enabled to visit Annapolis twice in 1762, and in the next year removed to that place. He became so familiar with the Micmac language as to form a grammar of it, and to officiate to the Indians in their native tongue. In 1775 his people subscribed for the erection of a church sixty by forty feet. Three years after, Mr. Wood closed a laborious life among his attached people. The Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, formerly Missionary at Marblehead, Mass., being in England in 1779, obtained the appointment of Missionary at Annapolis. Returning to Halifax in July of that year his anxiety for his family, then at Marblehead, induced him soon after to embark for New York, to arrange for their removal to Nova Scotia. Mr. Weeks did not reach Halifax till May in the following year, where he found his wife and children, who had, in fact, arrived there a few days after his departure from that place the previous autumn. He appears to have visited Annapolis for the first time in June, 1780, and was there perhaps once more a few months after. In June of the following year he probably passed three or four weeks there, returning to Halifax, where his family resided. This neglect to reside at his Mission displeased the Venerable Society. In the latter part of the same summer Mr. Bailey received a letter from Rev. Mather Byles, D. D., dated Halifax, August 11th, 1781, of which the following is an extract: "I think it my duty, without any further delay, to send you the

---

\* But there was probably a chaplain to the garrison at this place, for in one of the returns of the expense of the establishment for one year previous to 1760, is found— "Chaplain 6s. *per diem*, or £121 13s. 4d. *per annum*."—*Halliburton*, II., p. 198. See also Mr. Bailey's letter to Rev. Dr. Peters, October 31st, 1784.



following extracts from a letter which I have received from Dr. Morice, dated Feb. 6, 1781.

“I am to communicate to you the Resolution of the Society, that Mr. Weeks go immediately to Annapolis, and if he should not, then either Dr. Byles or Mr. Bailey must take that Mission. The offer is first made to you.”

“I have informed Mr. Weeks of the above Resolution. His reply was, that ‘he should not remove to Annapolis at present; that the Mission was a matter of indifference to him; and that I might go there if I pleased.’ Accordingly the care of that Mission, if I chose to accept it, would now devolve upon me; but as I determine, for reasons which I shall communicate to the Society, to decline the charge, the design of this letter is formally to resign it in your favour. As the Society seem to have intrusted the conduct of this affair to me, and, I am very sensible will expect a speedy and decisive answer, I should be glad to know by the first opportunity whether the offer, which I look upon myself as now authorized to make you, be agreeable, that I may transmit your reply to that venerable body.”

The answer to this, on the part of Mr. Bailey, was: “If Mr. Weeks declines going to Annapolis, and you are willing to resign your prior appointment in my favor, I shall cheerfully accept of the Mission.” In October, Rev. J. W. Weeks visited Annapolis, it being his second visit this year, and in November he wrote a letter to Mr. Bailey, disapproving of his views with reference to that place. In the spring of the next year the following letter reached Mr. Bailey:—

“HATTON GARDEN, Jan’y 29, 1782.

“REV. SIR:—Your two letters of the 9th November last have been duly received, and were laid before the Society at their meeting on the 25th instant, when the affair of Mr. Weeks being taken into full consideration the Society came to the following determination: Resolved, that as Mr. Weeks refuses to reside upon the Mission of Annapolis, the Rev. Mr. Bailey be appointed in his room. You will therefore consider yourself henceforward as Missionary to that place, whither you

will, with all due speed, repair: and after what has passed respecting Mr. Weeks there is little occasion for me to observe that the Society expect that you will constantly reside there. The people of Granville are to be considered as part of the Mission. . . . Your salary from the Society is the same as it now stands, £50 stlg., but you will receive £70 stlg. from the Government, which, I believe, is paid in Nova Scotia. I should hope that the Chaplainship of the Garrison will be given to you also, as Mr. Weeks can now have no claims to it. All I have further to add on this subject is my hearty prayer for all success in your Ministry, and every degree of prosperity to you and your large family, who, I hope, will receive comfort in that situation, which Mr. Weeks, by multiplying his lucrative employments, seems to have despised.

. . . . .  
 “ I am, Rev'd Sir,  
 Your affectionate brother,  
 and very humble servant,  
 WM. MORICE, *Secretary.*”

In writing to a friend shortly after the receipt of the foregoing letter, Mr. Bailey says: “ I am sorry to find Mr. Weeks wholly excluded from the Society's service. I am informed that he is offended with me, though, I can truly affirm, the appointment was not of my seeking, and even when Dr. Morice informed me last fall that I was to succeed in case Mr. Weeks and Dr. Byles should refuse, I signified, in my reply, that I should prefer Penobscot, could I remove thither with safety, and the Secretary, in his last letter, assures me that Mr. Weeks was dismissed for non-residence, and for despising the Society's favour.”

Mr. Bailey makes the following statement of the amount of his income when at Cornwallis: “ During which time I had no emoluments except fifty pounds from the Society, a deputy Chaplainship for half a year, and the contributions of a few people at Cornwallis.”

The following letter, dated August 5th, 1782, though of some length, seems to be worthy of insertion, here:—

“To ———.

“DEAR SIR:—In pursuance of my engagements I now apply myself to furnish you with some account of my late movements and adventures. I believe you have already received information that before my departure from Cornwallis I was invited to officiate in the Meeting House. In consequence of this invitation I read prayers and delivered two sermons to a more numerous assembly than I had ever seen in this Province. Most of the inhabitants of every denomination attended, gave serious attention, behaved with decency, favoured me with a very handsome collection, and seemed to relish my farewell discourse. But modesty must prevent my enlarging here, even to a friend.

We proposed to advance towards Annapolis on Tuesday, the 24th of July, but an excessive rain on Monday hindered our preparations, so that our departure was delayed till Wednesday morning, when we observed the following order: a cart, with two yoke of oxen, containing all our worldly possessions, began the procession, guarded by a couple of sprightly young fellows, who offered their services; a vehicle for the reception of Mrs. Bailey and her children drawn by two horses next appeared under the conduct of honest John.\* Mrs. Burbidge, in her chaise, with the above-mentioned persons, set off about seven, accompanied with near thirty people, of both sexes, on horseback, who attended us with cheerful solemnity to the distance of fourteen miles on our journey. About eleven we arrived at Marshall's, and with much difficulty provided an early dinner for our large company. At one we parted with our friends. Upon this occasion the scenes were affecting; mutual effusions of sorrow were displayed, and our hearts were agitated with tender emotions. Once I imagined it impossible to abandon Cornwallis with such painful regret, and conceived that we could bid the inhabitants adieu without a single tear of sensibility on either side, but I found myself mistaken. Justice and gratitude compel

---

\* John McNamarra.

me to entertain a more favourable opinion of these people than formerly, and their conduct has appeared in a much more amiable light at the conclusion than at the beginning of our connection. Most of my hearers, and several of other denominations, made us presents before our migration, and we were at no expense for horses and carriages. The distressing ceremony of parting being over, Mrs. Bailey was seated with her little ones in the above-mentioned machine, over which was stretched a covering of canvas, as a defence both from the vivid rays of the sun and the rain of heaven. We now entered a wilderness of vast extent, without a single human habitation for the space of eleven miles, the roads extremely rough, sheltered with tall forests, encumbered with rocks and deformed with deep sloughs; and, to render the scene still more disconsolate and dismal, the winds howled among the trees, thick volumes of clouds rolled from the western hemisphere, and the rumble of thunder announced the horrors of an approaching tempest. We had still in company six persons besides our own family, two of whom pushed forward with Betsy Nye and reached a publick house before the rain. Mr. Starr and your humble servant left the carriages at the distance of four miles from the dwelling of one Potter, lately removed from Cornwallis, at which we arrived a little after sunset, just as the heavy shower was beginning to descend. The sudden darkness of the evening, with the danger of oversetting, gave us very uneasy apprehensions; at length Mrs. Bailey and the children appeared, as did some time after the conductors of the team thoroughly wet to the skin. We were crowded, eight in number besides the family, into a room about sixteen feet square, which proved a miserable shelter against the most impetuous rain I ever knew in this Province. The house leaked so intolerably that I was wet to the skin at the tea-table; we however placed bear skins in such a manner as to preserve a good feather bed from the water, into which we tumbled about midnight, but the incredible swarms of musquitos and sand flies, and the intolerable heat, both of the weather and a large fire, prevented us from sleeping. The next morning we arose before the sun, and during breakfast were tormented

by our unwelcome companions of the preceding night. The weather was remarkably close and muggy, the heavens over-spread with heavy clouds, the mountains and rivers covered with stagnant fogs, and all the surrounding scenes of nature • presaged tempest and thunder. Having prepared our cattle and horses, about five we began to move forward. At the distance of a mile from our lodgings I was invited to a christening, while the carriages proceeded. After the performance of this exercise I took my leave of Mr. Starr, and rode over the sandy, barren plains about two miles, till I overtook our company. By this time the western hemisphere presented an awful front of blackness, and solemn peals of thunder rolled along the gloomy arch. In a few moments, the north-west wind began to muster his forces and impelled the enormous shower to approach with frightful rapidity. Both earth and heaven were instantly involved in clouds and darkness, interrupted with flashes of lightning.

We were fortunate enough to reach a couple of cottages, the only habitations within the extent of four or five miles, just as the torrents were beginning to descend. Mrs. Bailey with her children and part of the company took shelter in one, while myself and the remainder gained possession of the other. It will be needless to describe the progress of the tempest, to picture the furious driving of the rain, or to present to your imagination the accumulated streams, pouring down the hills and smoking along the valleys with impetuous roar. I found no person in the house except the basket maker's daughter, lately arrived from Black Hall. A prettier face I had never beheld in the Province, and her behaviour, notwithstanding the homeliness of her apparel, was sufficient to prejudice a connoisseur in her favour. Having purchased of the rural beauty baskets to the amount of a dollar, and the storm beginning to abate, we quickly remounted and pushed forward with as much alacrity as possible, the roads swimming in water, the fragments of clouds dropping upon us. The sun at length breaking out with increasing splendour, the company upon single horses agreed to push for the next stage at the distance of eight miles. On this occasion Betsy Nye,

who had the preceding day lost her cloak, returned a borrowed surtout. But we had no sooner entered the vast plains to the westward of Black Hall, the only human residence between the place of our departure and Crocker's, when the face of heaven began again to scowl and wear a threatening aspect, and now the waters burst in continued and impetuous showers from the clouds. For five miles together we were attended by these descending floods, till we were completely soaked through our garments to the skin. Poor Betsy on this occasion was an object both of laughter and compassion, her hat hanging over each ear, the water streaming from her disheveled hair, and her clothes clinging to her lean, lanky carcass, exhibited a picture dismally romantic, and, if I may be allowed to assume the vulgar dialect, she resembled a drowned rat. About ten we arrived in this woful pickle at Crocker's, where we dried our clothes with the assistance of a large fire. I suffered great anxiety on account of Mrs. Bailey and the children, who did not appear till after twelve, but they had found means to defend themselves with blankets from the violence of the weather. We presently discovered that Mrs. Crocker was a right notable woman, and, as she claimed some distant cousinship with me, she was very attentive and bustling to accommodate us. After a sociable dinner we parted with two more of our Cornwallikin attendants, and the weather being fine and pleasant, proceeded on our journey.

At the distance of a mile we passed by a very elegant plantation, which suddenly rose upon us amidst the barren wilds. A commodious dwelling stood on the northern side of the road furnished with extensive fields, on the south was a large orchard upon a gentle declivity, sloping towards Annapolis river, which winded in a slow current through beautiful meadows, forming a pretty, romantic island on the western limits of the prospect. Beyond the river through avenues which opened among groves of tall trees we discovered several habitations with adjacent farms. The excessive rains had swollen every inconsiderable stream almost to the magnitude of a river, but such was the nature of the soil that the roads became dry the moment the sun recovered its wonted splendour.

We jogged on this afternoon about ten miles without any accident worth recording, when we met a couple of gentlemen on horseback. The eldest appeared between forty-five and fifty, and immediately accosted us with the most solemn formality in the following words: 'Pray inform me whether the Reverend Mr. Bailey, the Society's Missionary for Annapolis and Granville, is in this company?' This address was delivered in a slow, moderate and calm tone of voice, and when he received a reply in the affirmative, he lifted his hat with great deliberation from his head, and bowed with the most inflexible gravity. I take notice of our first introduction to the presence of this gentleman, who is in many respects a singular and romantic character, because I shall have frequent occasion to mention him in my future communications. I have particular reasons for concealing his name at present, and shall only remark that he is a New England man, a sturdy loyalist, and a recent convert to the Church. We were soon overtaken by Mr. Peter Pineo, who invited us to his habitation, eighteen miles distant from Annapolis, where we all arrived in good spirits, though not a little fatigued with our journey, for we had travelled, with all our baggage, fifty-four miles in two days. We found Mr. Pineo very friendly and obliging, and however he may be esteemed vain, conceited and self-important, yet these shades in his character are without any mixtures of ill nature, insolence, or severity, but rather tinged with benevolence; and his disposition to exalt himself is distinguished by acts of generosity and the most hospitable exertions. The next morning we dismissed our carriages and parted with the remainder of our Cornwallis friends, determining to repose a little till some means of further conveyance should offer. Mr. Pineo sent an invitation to Mr. Morse, the dissenting teacher of Granville, who attended with his lady at dinner, and at the same time Mr. Formality made his appearance with a request to accompany him about five miles to his dwelling. After a serious consultation it was agreed that I should officiate the next Sunday at the meeting-house, and upon other occasions when I found myself disposed to perform service at Granville.

An epicure might amuse you with an account of the splendid entertainment provided upon this occasion, but it is sufficient to observe that our repast was highly elegant and luxurious. As the new convert to Episcopacy and Mr. Morse were of course at bitter enmity, and as the latter is not very remarkable for wisdom or prudence, we had some difficulty to divert them from disagreeable altercations. But whatever deficiencies a connoisseur might discover in the disposition and conduct of the Parson, I am certain that every one must admire the good sense, modesty and discretion of his wife, especially as she has encountered misfortunes sufficient to embitter her temper and to render her gloomy and unsociable. The next morning, it being the fourth day of our journey, my new friend attended us with a team and several horses to convey both our persons and baggage to his habitation. The moment we had prepared for our departure it began to rain impetuously, and continued without intermission till six in the afternoon, when a favourable appearance of fair weather enticed us abroad, but we had not proceeded a mile before the clouds began to discharge their liquid treasures. However, after wading through water and mire we arrived at Mr. —'s habitation about dark, wet, fatigued and chilly. His wife, sister to an intimate acquaintance of mine in New England, received us like a silent, kind-hearted country-woman, and with her daughters, gave us all the friendly assistance in her power, while the husband, standing upright in the middle of the room, straight as the pine tree of Kennebeck, welcomed us to his apartments in a set and ceremonious speech, delivered with his usual gravity and deliberation.

It was Saturday evening, about nine, when we disposed of ourselves in the habitation of Mr. Formality. After tea and prayers we were conducted into the best apartment for repose, and when the fifth morning of our migration began to stain the summits of the mountains we arose, and conducted as most other people usually do on such occasions. When the time of Divine Service arrived we attended. The meeting-house was commodious, and the congregation as large as could be expected upon so little notice. The Parson and his Dea-



cons were among my hearers, and we had several New Lights to grace the audience. The remainder of the day was spent in agreeable conversation and in laying the plans of our future operations. On the sixth day we took a breakfast with Mr. William Clark, one of my Methodistical parishioners, and having procured horses began to prepare for the remainder of our journey, being now about fourteen miles from the town of Annapolis. With considerable fatigue, some danger, and a profusion of mud we crossed the river and landed in a beautiful meadow covered with tall grass and bounded with a rich woodland pasture.

We passed through an agreeable variety of rural scenes above half a mile, till we occupied the county road. About eleven o'clock we arrived at the dwelling of my old friend, Mr. Bass, brother to Parson Bass, of Newbury. Here we met with a cordial reception, and had a very good dinner in the primitive style.

Figure to yourself a New England farmer twenty years ago, about ten miles distant from Boston, able with his own industry to make a comfortable living, besides discharging his tax-bill, paying the midwife, and providing a plentiful and greasy dinner on Thanksgiving sufficient to feast an hundred ploughmen. Produce such a person to your imagination, and you will obtain an idea of Mr. Bass, with this exception, that he exceeds any one you ever saw of the above description, in loyalty and inflexible honesty, mingled with a portion of seemingly accidental wit, which he scatters abroad in his conversation. I had forgot to inform the gentle reader that the ceremonious gentleman waited upon us with great formality to the royal city. When we departed from the hospitable mansion of Mr. Bass this was the form of our procession: our attendant moved forward, pointing out the way, then your humble servant and his little son, while Madam, John and Becky mounted upon the back of another horse, conducted the rear. We halted in our march at the house of one Mr. Sanders, about five miles from town; the man, a strict Churchman, and a great friend to Government. His farm lies upon the declivity of the Southern Mountains, and from his door

you command a very grand and extensive prospect. One hour and a quarter more concluded our tedious journey. It was not till after four of the clock, in a cool and most delightful day, when, having passed through a gloomy wood, we suddenly opened upon an extensive plain overspread with the richest verdure, ornamented with little groves, and beautified with bunches of wild roses, which scattered their delicious fragrance through the air. After crossing this plain the remainder of our progress for the space of a mile was an easy descent towards the north-west, both sides of the road being adorned with little fields, gardens and orchards. Upon an obtuse point of land formed by the bending of the river, the town appeared, rising amidst a forest of fruit trees, while the lofty mountains of Granville terminated the direct view."

In a few weeks after this removal, a son of Capt. Mowatt,\* who had commanded one of the vessels of the British navy, arrived at Annapolis, being sent to Mr. Bailey to be educated.

By a comparison of dates it would appear that Mr. Bailey arrived at Annapolis August 1st, 1782.

The following is a copy of the first letter which he wrote to the Society after his arrival in this place:—

"ANNAPOLIS, OCT. 14, 1782.

"To the Secretary of the

"*Society for Propagating the Gospel, &c.*

"REV. SIR:—Permit me, by your assistance, to present the following representations to the Venerable Society. About three months ago I removed with my family from Cornwallis, and after a tedious journey of five days arrived at Annapolis. Gratitude obliges me to announce the kind and friendly treatment I received from the inhabitants of Cornwallis during the latter part of my residence there. They not only expressed the highest regret at parting, but gave convincing evidence of their affection and esteem. My reception both here and at Granville fully answered my expectations, but the principal persons among my hearers conceive it not to be prudent to

---

\* See Note L.

urge a subscription at present, and it is universally agreed that the Mission has abundantly suffered for want of a resident minister. It is undoubtedly owing to this that enthusiasm, and if possible principles of a more pernicious nature have made such a progress in these parts. I have the satisfaction however to observe that the New England Independents are much better disposed towards the Church here than at Cornwallis. In confirmation of this I would beg leave to mention that yesterday I officiated in a meeting-house at thirteen miles distance from the town, at the united request of the proprietors, who are all Dissenters, and both these and the Presbyterians of Granville occasionally attend our services, though they have preachers of their own. The little town of Annapolis contains one hundred and twenty persons, all except four or five of the Church of England. Several other families of the same persuasion reside in the neighbourhood, besides a considerable number of French Roman Catholics. Granville, it is computed, has above forty families of our communion. To prevent any disagreeable altercation with my brethren at Halifax, who had unjustly taken offence at my appointment, Col. Burbidge, a man of an exemplary character and of prime influence in this Province, waited upon the Governor, with the assistance of my worthy friend Dr. Byles, and demanded for me the Chaplainship of this garrison, but Sir Andrew refused, alleging that Mr. Weeks, the instant he knew of my appointment, applied to him and obtained it. I was however encouraged by the above gentlemen to make a direct application by letter to the Secretary, who seems disposed to befriend me. But the arrival of Governor Parr, before my letters could reach Halifax, must again defeat my endeavors, as Mr. Weeks is upon the spot to renew his solicitations, an advantage which clergymen who reside in the Metropolis must always have over their brethren who live at the distance of one hundred and fifty miles. Annapolis is an agreeable situation, but I am certain that I cannot procure the necessaries of life for my family, especially while the war continues, unless I can be indulged with the Chaplainship of the garrison. The articles of house rent, firing and bread, amount to above £70, and though I had

during part of my continuance at Cornwallis the Deputy Chaplainship of a regiment, and three rations of provisions, of which I was deprived last May, yet the expenses of my removal have encroached upon my salary. In a word, the importance of the Mission and the temper of the people are such that it is requisite that the minister should be able to support himself with decency and to practice hospitality. Suffer me to solicit the influence of the Society in this matter, and it may be urged in my favour that a number of soldiers are sent to reside in the garrison, which must of necessity afford some additional duty. I would likewise acquaint the Society that the school at Annapolis has been supplied for a year past by Mr. Benjamin Snow, who received his education at Dartmouth College, and who was expelled from New England for his loyalty. This gentleman may be recommended for his learning, sobriety and good morals, to the Society's favour. He gives universal satisfaction to the people and is greatly beloved by the children, whom, with my assistance, he catechises three times a week. We humbly request that the Society would admit him for their schoolmaster and allow him to draw for the usual salary. I would beg leave further to state that either there never was any library given to this Mission, or the heirs of Dr. Wood have disposed of the books. If the Society can favour me with some, and send a number of Prayer Books, and pious tracts to distribute among the young people, it will much oblige me."

A few days after the above letter was written, there arrived at Annapolis, from New York, nine transports, convoyed by two men-of-war. These transports contained five hundred refugees, persons of both sexes and all ages, sent by the British Government into Nova Scotia. Mr. Bailey says, in a letter in which he speaks of these individuals: "Every habitation is crowded, and many are unable to procure any lodgings. Many of these distressed people left large possessions in the rebellious colonies, and their suffering on account of their loyalty, and their present uncertain and destitute condition, render them very affecting objects of compassion." He says, in another letter: "Many of them are people of fashion from

every Province on the continent, except Georgia." Mr. Bailey says, under date of Oct. 27th: "I have been busy in making a refugee sermon. I delivered this discourse from Psalm cvii. 2d and 3d verses, to a very respectable audience. Even the Whigs were not unmoved at the representations of our distresses."

The following is Mr. Bailey's first report to the Venerable Society of the condition of his parish in the spring of 1783:—

"ANNAPOLIS, April 30th, 1783.

"*To Rev. Wm. Morice, &c. &c.*

"REV'D SIR:—After presenting my hearty thanks in the most respectful manner to the Venerable Society, I would beg leave to inform them that since my last I have baptized twenty-five persons, buried ten, and married five couples. I administered the Sacrament on Christmas and Easter, but as the weather on both days was extremely unpropitious for traveling, I had only twelve communicants. We have a Church at Annapolis sixty feet long and forty broad, with a steeple and bell, but as the outside only is finished we cannot yet meet in it. However, it is no longer exposed to be destroyed by the enemy. I presume the people will do something this summer towards completing it. About fourteen miles from Annapolis town, on the same side of the river, is a glebe lot of five hundred acres, which rents for £6 *per annum*; another at Granville, of the same dimensions, three miles from Annapolis, is worth forty shillings a year. In this town are five or six little tenements, occupied by poor people, of whom I can at present expect to receive little or no rent. The remainder of the parsonage lot here, which was given by Queen Anne, contains about an acre, which I have enclosed for a garden at a considerable expense. We are greatly obliged to the Society for their assistance with regard to the school, but as Mr. Snow has procured a grant of land he has resigned the school to Mr. John McNamara, a young man who has been educated by me, and during the course of nine years he has lived in my family; and shown himself to be a person of remarkable

sobriety and unshaken integrity, for which he has been imprisoned and cruelly treated while we continued under the dominion of Congress.

"I have not yet had opportunity to make any motion towards obtaining subscriptions. Fifty-two families, exclusive of refugees, by a written paper in my possession, announce themselves of the Church of England, none of whom have subscribed towards my support. Some of them are sober, well affected people, many of them Methodists, but I am sorry to observe that others are very different in their sentiments from the little loyal town of Annapolis. The number of my parishioners will probably increase, as one thousand more refugees are daily expected; but as the circumstances of those unfortunate people are truly wretched and deplorable beyond all modern example, no advantage can be expected from them; their necessities, on the contrary, must demand frequent effusions of pity and beneficence. These destitute and despised wanderers, instead of increasing my emoluments, must daily make demands upon my compassion and charity."

The influx of loyalists from the now independent Colonies continued to be great. Mr. Bailey writes in October: "Since the commencement of this week there have arrived at Annapolis five ships, eight brigs, and four sloops, besides schooners, with near a thousand people from" [New] "York. They must be turned on shore without any shelter in this rugged season." A letter written a month later than the foregoing says: "Fifteen hundred fugitive loyalists are just landed here from" [New] "York in affecting circumstances, fatigued with a long and stormy passage, sickly, and destitute of shelter from the advances of winter, which are now commencing in all their horrors. For six months past these wretched outcasts of America and Britain have been landing at Annapolis, and various other parts of this Province."

To another friend Mr. Bailey writes, with reference to this unhappy class: "Several hundreds are stowed in our Church, and larger numbers are still unprovided for."

“ANNAPOLIS, NOV. 6th, 1783.

“*To the Rev. Wm. Morice, D. D., Secretary, &c. &c.*

“REV'D SIR:—Permit me to lay before the Venerable Society the present State of this Mission. I have baptized since May last twenty-four infants and one adult, and buried ten persons. I officiate at Granville once a month, in a decent place of worship, about fourteen miles from Annapolis. The Dissenters are much upon the decline, and the only minister they had in this country, not being able to find a support among his adherents, has disposed of his interest, and is about to remove to New England. Since my last, of August 15th, above seventeen hundred persons have arrived at Annapolis, besides the fifty-seventh regiment, in consequence of which my habitation is crowded. The Church has been fitted for the reception of several hundreds, and multitudes are still without shelter in this rigorous and stormy season. Near four hundred of these miserable exiles have perished in a violent storm, and I am persuaded that disease, disappointment, poverty, and chagrin, will finish the course of many more before the return of another spring. So much attention is required in settling these strangers, that nothing of a publick nature can be pursued to effect.

“This country, when I removed to Annapolis, contained about fifteen hundred souls, including French Roman Catholics. Between three and four thousand have since been added, and several new settlements formed, so that it will be impossible for one minister to give proper attendance. House rent is extravagantly dear. A small unfinished apartment costs three dollars per week, and the necessaries of life increase in proportion to our numbers. I am settling seventeen families upon the glebe land in this town, which, after another year, may yield from twelve to fourteen Pounds.

“The Governor has not yet admitted me to the Deputy Chaplainship, notwithstanding there is no other clergyman to discharge the duties of that place.” • • •

The following was addressed to Rev. Samuel Parker, D. D., Rector of Trinity Church, Boston, and is dated in November

of this year: "I will give you a sketch of my progress in farming. The best house in Annapolis, with two acres of garden and orchard, cost me £20. I expended £10 more in labour, exclusive of my own. Beside supplying three families in six months with vegetables, and distributing to distressed friends occasionally, produce for winter use amounted to £60, one half of which was stole, so that the remainder is just equal to rent and expenses."

From Mr. Bailey's reports to the Venerable Society in the year 1784, it seems that "the Court House, every store and private building, being crowded with people, he had been obliged to perform Divine Service at several miles distance, or in his own habitation."

The Church at Annapolis was opened for Divine Service for the first time on Easter day of this year. Mr. Bailey says: "Though the weather was wet and stormy, we had a large and decent congregation, which encouraged me to hope that people will be more attentive to Public Worship, now they have a room to assemble in, for it ought to be remembered that at Annapolis we never had a place to meet in sufficient to contain an hundred people, for which reasons multitudes were under the necessity of absenting themselves." "The Church, when finished, will contain five or six hundred persons, and the new settlers, which by far exceed the old, are heartily disposed to contribute towards its completion." In his letter sent to the Society, and dated October 28th, 1784, Mr. Bailey says: "I have the satisfaction to inform them that at Michaelmas a Vestry of the most respectable characters were chosen according to the institutions of this Province, that I was this day inducted by the Wardens, in consequence of a mandate of the Governor, and that we have a prospect of establishing an happy agreement between the old inhabitants and the new, and of pursuing measures for the finishing of the Church." He speaks of his labours in catechising the children, and the very favourable results he had witnessed. Every Wednesday was devoted to this exercise, preceded by Divine Service, at Annapolis. On other days he visited the more distant settlement for the same purpose. And "one hundred children,



exclusive of those in Digby, had learnt the Church Catechism, many of whom were the posterity of rigid Dissenters. or of parents destitute of any religious principles." Mr. Forman, a refugee and an half-pay officer, was at that time the principal schoolmaster at Digby. Lamenting the immorality and profligacy that prevailed, arising from a total disuse of public worship, "he assembled his pupils on Sundays, performed Divine Service, and read a sermon. The schoolmistresses quickly joined him with their scholars, and in a few weeks he was attended by a crowded audience, and a visible alteration in the conduct of the inhabitants ensued."

Mr. Bailey says: "I reckon between thirty and forty communicants at Annapolis, and about twenty at Granville, but I cannot ascertain the number at other settlements." "The Notitia of the Parish for the last twelve months were:—

Baptisms, 26	Marriages, 25	Burials, 28
57	20	do 2
—	—	—
83	45	30

The following are extracts from a letter from Rev. Samuel Parker, D. D., Boston, December 1st, 1784:—

"Your letter of September 21st, arrived here when I was absent at Philadelphia, and it was not till the last of October it came to my hands. Two chests belonging to you had previously been brought up from Pownalborough, with verbal orders to deliver them to me, but no letter to acquaint me what their contents were, or what I was to do with them. •

• • As you express a desire to have your sermons immediately, I opened the chest containing the papers, and find therein a parcel of papers jumbled together in as great confusion as Chaos itself could have made, and the chest no way secured. Among the jumbled heap some that look like sermons, but much defaced, torn, and abused, were discerned, and I have picked out some that look the most entire, and packed in a small box, which I commit to Mr. Worcester's care. • • The contents of the box will supply your present need till the others arrive. I had a good mind to steal some of your sermons, but found upon examination that I could

not take more than fifteen minutes to deliver them, and my people always expect thirty minutes, and, as I must have added one half to them, I thought upon the whole I would not be guilty of a theft, which would turn out to so little advantage. If you were not my Senior, I should take it upon myself to advise you to expend a little more pains in writing your discourses, because, when you are old you may be obliged to transcribe for the purpose of reading them. And, if they were preserved with a little more care, it would be no disadvantage. I congratulate you on your Induction as Rector of St. Luke's, and hope that your latter days will be more easy than the former."

The correspondence which Mr. Bailey commenced on his first removal into the Province with Rev. Samuel Peters, D. D., in London, was still maintained, and in the autumn of this year the former wrote to the latter the following:—

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, Oct. 31st, 1784.

"REV. AND DEAR SIR:—The long expected arrivals from Britain were this day announced at Annapolis, and a friendly letter from Mr. Domette came into my hand by some unknown conveyance. But I am not indebted to your munificence for any favours of that nature. Am I destined to wander unnoticed on the muddy banks of Toowaubscot, and to furnish you with future anecdotes of Nova Scotia, unblessed by your ghostly benediction? In a word, I have received no epistles from you since the beginning of last March. I have written in the interval three letters, and transmitted a large packet, containing a description of this Province by a Dr. Turnbull.

"Ministers of the Church of England have resided at Annapolis, with a few interruptions, for near seventy years past without any Wardens or Vestry. But on Michaelmas, the day appointed by the laws of this Province, I was fortunate enough to convene a respectable number of parishioners, when twelve of the principal inhabitants were chosen. A letter of induction was immediately procured from the Governor, and I was last Wednesday inducted into the Church.

"I am confident that no Missionary in America has so diffi-

cult and laborious a situation as mine. Once a month I officiate at Granville, about fourteen miles from my habitation. To effect this I ride about twelve miles on Saturday, the next day proceed about two miles by water, and frequently have to climb the banks of the river up to my knees in mud. Then, after preaching two sermons, catechising the children, and baptizing a number of infants, I return home on Sunday evening by the same route. My congregation at this place is between three and four hundred. I have made a voyage to Digby, about twenty miles below Annapolis, where I officiated one Sunday and baptized a number of children. At Annapolis I perform Divine Service on Wednesday, and catechise near eighty children. I am visiting all the schools in the country for the same purpose, and am frequently obliged to ride twenty miles, besides crossing rivers, to perform the office of baptism. Besides, a regiment of soldiers augment my duty, and, though I am not favoured with the emoluments of a chaplain, humanity obliges me to perform the whole exercises of that office, while those who grow opulent by these appointments, unattended either with labour or expense, reproach me with officiousness, ridicule my indigence, and pursue me with the most unabating malice. This is highly provoking to a feeling and benevolent mind. I cannot determine how others may act in this situation, but I cannot endure that the infant of a poor soldier should remain unbaptized, that his children or himself should be excluded from instruction, or that he should be committed to his parent dust without Christian burial. Is it not a scandal to any government, or rather ecclesiastical institution, that a person should enjoy the profits of an office without performing even the minutest part of the duty? Though disappointed in my expectations, and deprived of my just perquisites, yet I am happy, amidst my struggles, to support an increasing family with decency, and in having no altercations with my people. It is true that they are a collection of all nations, kindreds, complexions and tongues, assembled from every quarter of the globe, and till lately equally strangers to each other. This circumstance has prevented me from receiving any support from the people, and, in fact both

the original inhabitants and the new imagined, till lately, that I not only enjoyed the perquisites of the Garrison, but had the same salary for Granville as for Annapolis. The Wardens and Vestry, however, give some encouragement to expect their assistance, but I derive small expectations from persons engaged in expensive buildings, and settling themselves in a strange country, especially as the finishing of the church demands their immediate and liberal contributions.

“Mr. Wiswall\* paid us a visit not long ago, with his wife and her youngest daughter, and by a letter just received from Cornwallis, I am informed that he is settled in the parsonage his parishioners have erected for him. The parochial duties of this gentleman are nothing when compared with mine. His parishioners are few in number, and the most remote are not more than four miles from his habitation, and, if I remember right, he neither christens nor marries, except in Church. . . . I have received several epistles during the summer past from my worthy friend Mr. Bass, of Newburyport, who was expelled the Society’s service upon the testimony of brother Weeks. He wrote to that gentleman last winter, as follows:—

“SIR:—I learn that you have been my accuser to the Society, and beg it as a favour, that you would let me know the articles of the charge you alledged against me, and the evidence you produced in support of these allegations.

Your obedient servant,

EDWARD BASS.’

“To which Mr. Weeks returned this answer:—

“REV'D SIR:—I had a line from you a few days ago. If you think so meanly of me as that I should turn accuser, or so highly of me as that I should have more credit with the Society than yourself, you greatly wrong me. I assure you I am not admitted to any of their secrets.

I am, Sir,

Your humble servant,

J. WINGATE WEEKS.’

---

\* Rev. John Wiswall, formerly Rector of St. Paul’s Church in Falmouth, now Portland, Maine.

"Mr. Bass intreats that this letter may be shown to Dr. Morice.

"I understand that Parson Walter has arrived at Halifax, in the quality of a D. D. What is your opinion of this gentleman? The ladies who emigrated from York to Annapolis reprobate him as a fop and coxcomb, and affirm that his whole attention is given to dress, balls, assemblies, and plays.

"But it is the fate of us clergymen to be censured. If we are grave, and assume a little dignity, we are stiff, formal, and proud; if we are free, open, and sociable, we are accused of levity. If we, or our families, are attentive to make a fashionable appearance, we are foppish, extravagant, and slaves to the mode; if careless of dress we are slovens. So it was in ancient days. John, the son of Zacharias, who appeared as unadorned as a Micmac of Nova Scotia, and who rejected the delicacies of appetite, was accused of holding an intimate correspondence with the Devil. While his Divine Master, who pursued a different conduct, was blackened as a glutton, a guzzler of wine, and as a friend to harlots and Custom House officers, the aversion of Jews and American smugglers.

"*November 4th.*—That you may form some idea of my parochial situation and fatigues, I will inform you that I was obliged this day to ride twelve miles through mire, near a foot deep, to marry a couple. But when I arrived at the destined spot, behold, there was no boat to cross the river. After holding a conversation a few minutes from the opposite banks, behold Hymen grew angry, the lovers were greivously disappointed, and your humble servant was under a necessity of returning home without his fee through the same muddy road. Hark! A heavy rapping at the door! 'A gentleman and lady want to speak with you.' Let them walk in. The same couple, now made happy. To-morrow I must travel the same road to bury a Judge, who fell a sacrifice to all powerful rum, which in this country, like death, levels all distinctions."

This letter brought a rather painfully characteristic reply from Dr. Peters, Pimlico, February 22, 1785, from which the following is extracted:—

"Your favour of Octob. 31, 1784, reached me Jan'y 7th, for

which I thank you, although you must have some villains at Halifax, who intercept my letters, which have been two for one I have received from you. This, I hope, will reach you by the grace of Dr. Seabury, now the Right Reverend Father in God, by Divine permission Bishop of Connecticut, consecrated by the Non-juring Bishops of the antient and primitive Church of Scotland, who lost their patrimony and church temporalities, Anno 1688, for adhering to their oaths and being loyal to James II. Such honor have you and all good saints.

“The Bishop will wait on you and give you his benediction, of more value than mine and twenty-six Right Reverend Lord Bishops. His certificate will be of great service to you at St. Peter’s gate, who will admit you at sight of it into Heaven, without touching at Purgatory, because you have resided in Nova Scotia nine years, which must have purged and sweated you more than three hundred and sixty-five days could have done in the Pope’s Prison. . . . Your congregation seems to be composed of Medes, Parthians, and Cretans. One has told me that you let out lots on the glebe at £8 *per annum*, to the amount of £800 *per annum*. The Society expect that Granville should handsomely contribute to your support, as well as where you reside. If Granville omitted” [to do this] “my advice is, that you abide wholly at Annapolis. Your labours are truly hard, and your reward is in Heaven along with our curates here, who bury seven in a day, christen ten to fifteen out and in the Church, marry from three to seven couple per day, visit six or seven persons by night and by day, read and preach three times on each Sunday, and all for £40 to £45 *per annum*. . . . Your observations concerning the censure of the world, which commonly falls on the Clergy, is too true. A clean, fashionable appearance is part of virtue and part of Christianity. A clergyman here had better be guilty of grossly immoral and scandalous practices than wear a dirty shirt, long nails, dirty hands, and a long beard; for this crime alone Mr. Lyon, on Long Island, was dismissed the Society’s service. I have laid Mr. Bass’s letter and its *answer* before the Secretary. The *answer* of Mr. Weeks is mean and vile. Mr. Bass’s letters, by Mr. Tracey,

have been considered. The result is not to his benefit. Mr. Bass was ruined here by people of his own Province and profession, and not by Dr. Gardiner or Col. Frye. Mr. Bass employed as his advocate Mr. Hale, and such as bear dubious characters, and never vindicated himself in proper time. I am sorry for Mr. Bass, but if he will move to a mission in Nova Scotia, I will be his advocate, and will succeed, provided it remains a secret to all but him, you, and

Your faithful

S. PETERS."

To this letter Mr. Bailey replied as follows:—

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, April 29, 1785.

"To the Rev. Mr. Samuel Peters,

"London, Great Britain.

"DEAR SIR:—I have in possession your letter of February 22d, and last evening I waited upon the Right Reverend Father, in whose presence I appeared as a dwarf alongside of a giant.

"I am not yet sufficiently acquainted with this dignified character to venture any remarks.

"If my communications are not so frequent as yours, they certainly exceed in quantity beyond all proportion. I observe with extreme concern and vexation that some designing, malicious and lying villain, either in the singular or plural number, has been very busy in contriving to injure me in your opinion.

"As to the affair of the glebes, I will give you an exact account of the matter. There is in Annapolis town an acre and a quarter of land, formerly the Romish glebe, but after the conquest, confirmed by Queen Anne to the Church of England. Another glebe lies at fourteen miles distance from the town which has rented for six pounds; a third, almost contiguous, containing two hundred and eighty-eight acres, in a wilderness situation; with another at Granville. These lots together rent for twenty-seven pounds, but some of these tenants are unwilling and others unable to pay, and I have

hitherto received more trouble in settling these affairs than profit. And I am informed from good authority that Dr. Breynton and Mr. Weeks claim the glebe in Annapolis as a perquisite to the garrison, and that rents for double the sum of the others.

“I must acknowledge that I received an anonymous letter, with reflections equally severe and untrue. Your comparison drawn so keenly between me and Mr. Lyon, excited at once my resentment and curiosity, and knowing that several Long Island people resided in this town I immediately repaired to company in which were two gentlemen and as many ladies of the most unexceptionable and worthy characters. Without hinting at the letter I had received, I inquired into the character of Mr. Lyon, to which inquiry was returned the following answer: ‘That they were intimately acquainted with the man and his circumstances; that he was a gentleman of sense, but illnatured and avaricious to a supreme degree. The former appeared in the cruel treatment of his wife, a woman of the first family in that part of the country, and in his repairing to taverns an other places of public resort to dispute, wrangle and fight with his neighbours. And as to his covetousness, though he possessed an ample estate, he denied himself and family necessary food and clothing. His house was permitted to tumble into ruins, rather than anything should be expended in repairs, and his children for the same reason were shamefully neglected, and no culture afforded either to their bodies or their minds.’ And though the removal which you mention was probably the consequence of his sordid avarice, yet the above crimes, my informants declare, were exhibited in a formal complaint by his wardens and principal parishioners. Now with regard to severity, a covetous disposition, tavern hunting and drunkenness, I am willing to stand the strictest scrutiny of my most malicious enemies. As to your observations on dress, cleanliness, &c., it must be mortifying to the last degree, and deeply wound the sensibility of a feeling and generous mind to be under a necessity of exculpating himself, even to his dearest friend, or of touching upon so delicate a subject. Every one of our acquaintance will acknowledge that in dress



and hospitality we exceed our circumstances. Our neice and children make as good an appearance as any of their age, and my wife would be offended if represented deficient in point of neatness and elegance.

"As to myself, though always obliged to officiate twice and often three times a week, besides distant excursions, yet I never appear without shaving and clean linen. And even when I am going to catechise the children I seldom or never omit to wear my habit, two or three changes of which I have in good condition, fitted for the different seasons. It is true that when I perform at Granville, the skirts of my garments are frequently tinged with the ooze of Toowaubscot, and my shoes disobliged by the mud, but my face and hands generally escape the contagion. Perhaps you may inquire: 'Why do you dress before you arrive at Granville?' Because no family within miles of the church have invited me to the freedom of their house, and my friend Bass, who lives nearly opposite, gives me a most hearty welcome. I will mention another circumstance. Besides shaving myself two or three times a week, I pay a barber one shilling a week for keeping my head in proper repair. I intreat you not to mistake me. I acknowledge with gratitude your kindness and friendship in giving me these hints.

"I must remark upon what you mention respecting Granville, that I have received very ill treatment from many of its inhabitants. It was never probable that I should please some of their leading men, who admired Fisher, a professed Socinian and Republican. However, my services, though I officiate but one Sunday in a month, are much harder than at Annapolis. I am frequently called upon to attend funerals, lectures and christenings, and yet have never received anything from that people, (one person excepted,) by way of subscription, contribution, or presents. I am obliged to find my own horse, attendants and ferriage. One man, however, has lately offered me the use of his horse. But not contented with this, a number both of the old and new inhabitants assembled in town meeting, and, directly contrary to the standing laws of this Province, voted to take away from me the glebe, which I

had rented for forty shillings sterling per annum, though it had been in the possession of the Society's Missionary for twenty years. Their pretence is that I am minister only for Annapolis, and they have proceeded to rent it out for five years. I am sensible that this violent and illegal measure has not the approbation of the major part, among either Church people or Dissenters. Two justices of each profession are warm in my favour. We have received directions from my worthy friend Col. Burbidge, of Cornwallis, a member of the Society, to bring it before the Supreme Court, and our wardens are determined to support my claim. It is impossible for a place to be more divided in religious sentiment than Granville. I suppose that there may be about four hundred families now, near half of which reckon themselves to be members of the Church of England, though subdivided into Deists, Socinians, Methodists and Whitefieldites. The remainder are Lutherans, Calvinists, Presbyterians, Seceders, Congregationalists, Anabaptists, Quakers, Everything-arians, Mystics and New Lights. A number of illiterate and drunken teachers are daily following each other in rapid succession, like waves of the Atlantic, the last of which always eclipses the glory of his predecessors.

"I am at this moment informed that a principal gentleman at Digby is assured by letters from London that the Society are determined to establish a Mission there, but that no suitable person has yet offered. I heartily wish that our friend Bass, might be admitted, since I am persuaded he would accept it with the utmost cheerfulness and gratitude."

In his report to the Society sent in the spring of this year, Mr. Bailey says he had "officiated twice every Sunday since his last, and continued to perform Divine Service, and catechise the children on Wednesdays, without a single exception."

• "Baptisms, since October, forty; that is, thirty-seven infants and three adults—one negro man; a gentleman of distinction near sixty years of age; and the father of several children. I cannot be exact as to the number of communicants since the inhabitants are yet unsettled, two persons, however, of advanced age were admitted at Easter." He refers to the

statement that he had rented glebe lands to the amount of £800 per annum. This statement had first been communicated to Mr. Bailey in the letter of Dr. Peters which has been quoted. He now says that Bishop Seabury when at Annapolis informed him that he had heard a like report. Mr. Bailey gives the real facts in the case in nearly the same language in which he had stated them in his letter to Dr. Peters. The diversion of the glebe lands in Cornwallis to the use of the poor, and Mr. Bailey's action in consequence, are mentioned as in the letter named. He also says that "illiterate preachers, who style themselves Presbyters of the American Church, have been for several months past travelling through the country, preaching, administering the sacraments, and marrying persons they have seduced. Their success is the greater because they profess to adhere to the liturgy and usages of the Church of England."

Mr. Bailey's report to the Society in the autumn of this year is as follows:—

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, OCT. 28, 1785.

*"To the Rev. Dr. Morice, Secretary to the Society,*

*"Hatton Garden, London, Great Britain.*

"REVEREND SIR:—Permit me to address the Venerable Society with the following information.

"The inhabitants of this county, consisting of various nations and characters, are more settled than at their first arrival. A spirit of industry prevails among the emigrants, and finding that winter wheat succeeds beyond expectation upon new lands, they are making rapid improvements, and, of course, that dissipation and vicious excess which was contracted during the rage of civil discord, will, it is hoped, quickly expire. Their attention to religion, order, and the education of children increases, and the happy effects of instruction appear where regular schools are supported, especially at Annapolis, where constant attendance is given for their improvement. And I cannot do justice to Mr. McNamarra, without affirming that there is not a better regulated school in America than his.

"Our church still remains unfinished, as the ancient inhabi-

tants and the new settlers cannot yet agree, though there is some prospect that their disputes may have a favourable termination.

"The Vestry have lately given me twenty cords of wood, the first donation, either public or private, I have received from the people, and for this indulgence I am chiefly obliged to the late comers. The old inhabitants in general are very unwilling to contribute towards the support of a minister, notwithstanding, it must be confessed that their ability is greater, since they have enriched themselves by selling their produce, by no means at a moderate price, to these unfortunate adventurers.

"My Notitia is as follows, since the beginning of May: three new communicants; baptisms, fifty-one; burials, exclusive of the garrison, two; marriages, since June, only one, since roving preachers of various denominations have taken the liberty to perform this important rite without license or publication. And though prohibited by an express law of the Province, under a penalty of fifty pounds for every offence, yet they pretend that the Governor has given them permission. As I have the fullest evidence that a Mr. Renkin, whom I never saw but once, has, without any visible inducement, misrepresented my affairs to the Society, I would humbly request their attention to a concise representation of my circumstances. I came to this Province with a family, destitute of money, clothing and furniture. I had then to draw upon the Society for two hundred pounds sterling, near half of which I had the misfortune to lose by the failure of a merchant in whose hands it was deposited. At Cornwallis, it being a country town and the people generous, I was able to live without exceeding my income. But when I arrived at Annapolis I found it impossible to support my character with so little expense.

"Dr. Wood had lived in affluence and splendour, and it was expected that I should make the same appearance upon the fifth part of his emoluments, the extravagant prices of necessities considered. About three months after my settlement here the emigration of thousands in distress commenced, which necessarily raised in proportion every article of subsistence, except

pork and flour. The assistance which these sufferers demanded from the humane by no means tended to increase my perquisites.

"There is no parsonage house in the Mission, and I am obliged to pay thirty pounds rent for my present habitation and garden, which with fuel, horse-keeping and a servant, leave a very scanty subsistence for my family. I have always indulged expectations of receiving some emoluments from the garrison. But after having performed the duty with punctuality for more than three years, I have reaped no advantage, and the gentleman at Halifax, who enjoys the profit, has never once officiated here, nor even condescended to thank me for my assistance, and he even pretends that the glebe at Annapolis belongs to him as Chaplain."

In his semi-annual report to the Society in May, 1786, Mr. Bailey gives the following statistics of his Mission:—

"Baptisms in the last half year: 32 infants, 8 adults, (of which four were black persons,)—40. Burials four, two whites and two blacks. Three new communicants."

The affair of glebe lands, belonging to the Mission, is again treated at considerable length.

In a letter to Rev. S. Peters, Mr. Bailey speaks of the attempt of some persons in the town of Granville to divert the glebe lands there to the support of the poor. He now repeats his account of that transaction and says: "But a man of resolution appearing, I gave him a lease at three pounds currency per annum, and the town of Granville unanimously refusing to support the said committee, I have acquired possession without the expense of a law-suit." \* \* "Upon the whole, the present income of the glebes is as follows:—

	Currency.	Sterling.
Granville,	£ 3 0 0	£ 2 14 0
Annapolis	10 0 0	9 0 0
Queen Anne	20 6 0	18 4 6
	<hr/> £33 6 0	<hr/> £29 18 6

“Permit me once more to repeat that it still remains undecided whether Queen Anne’s glebe belongs to the Missionary, or the Deputy Chaplain of the garrison, since Dr. Wood, and others, served in both of these capacities. The records of Annapolis, if any were kept, with the plate and furniture given to the Church by Queen Anne were removed to Halifax by order of Governor Lawrence. . . . All that can be obtained with regard to this matter is, from authentic tradition, that this land belonged, before the conquest, to the Romish priest, and that Queen Anne assigned it to the Protestant minister of the English Church. . . . I must submit to the pleasure of the Society, but if they should speedily lessen my salary, it will greatly distress one who has for twenty-six years faithfully served them, His Majesty, and the Church, in situations peculiarly difficult and often extremely dangerous. And allow me to observe that the other Missionaries whose salaries are curtailed are all Chaplains on half pay, and that their situations are less expensive than mine; for the garrison, the Courts of Justice, and the Packets between the two Provinces, are all circumstances which not only render the entertainment of company unavoidable, but in so small a town as Annapolis, raise the price of provisions.”

Mr. Bailey had received a suggestion from a friend in London that his stipend from the Society was to be reduced. This occasioned the observations in the concluding paragraph of the above letter.

The next communication from the Secretary confirmed his fears. From its date it could not have been received when Mr. Bailey transmitted the above quoted half-yearly report.

Dr. Morice says, in his letter: “The Society have lowered your salary ten pounds a year, to bring it more upon a level with the salaries of their other Missionaries, agreeably to the plan which they adopted last year, and of which I gave you some intimation in my last letter. To a person so well esteemed by the Society, it is hardly necessary to assure you, that it is not from any disapprobation of your services and conduct, which, they wish were as well regarded and rewarded by your own people. This diminution of the Society’s bounty

ought to be an incitement to your congregation to do more for you, and, indeed, to fulfil those obligations to which they are bound in common with other Missions.

“Mr. Viets, of Simsbury, is appointed to Digby, and, if he is not yet arrived, I would recommend him to your notice and assistance.”

In Mr. Bailey's letter to the Society, dated Nov. 6, 1786, occurs the following passage: “I have given constant attention to the duties of my Mission, amidst many difficulties and discouragements. I am happy, however, in having so industrious and good a neighbour, as the Rev. Mr. Viets. He is very acceptable to the people at Digby and the adjacent settlements. Since the tenth of May I have baptized fifty-six persons, four of whom are adults. Burials, only four, and for three years past the proportion of the former to the latter has been nearly as twelve to one. . . . Although I submit without repining to the decisions of the Society, the reduction of my salary has greatly embarrassed me, especially as I could not, with the utmost prudence and economy, avoid being somewhat involved in my circumstances, before that event took place.”

“ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, Jan. 29, 1787.

“To Mr. T—— B——.

“ . . . I presume that you cannot be offended at my application by —— . If you fully understood my necessities, I am confident you would, if possible, afford me some assistance. Could I have supported my family without running deeply into debt, I would never have troubled you with any solicitation. But what can I do, unjustly deprived of the Chaplainship, and curtailed in my salary, with an helpless family, in a very expensive situation? Indeed it is with the utmost difficulty we are able to procure the bare necessities of life. We are obliged to suffer almost the same excess of poverty as at Kennebeck, during the day of rebellion. But this is nothing in comparison with the expectation of processes and imprisonment, which cannot be avoided, unless I can make payment within three months, circumstances which you are sensible, must ruin a

clergyman. Two things I must present to your recollection, that half of my salary, which is but £110, is expended for house rent and fuel; and secondly, that what remains in your hands was saved by selling our furniture, Mrs. Bailey's clothes, and by starvation. God knows my heart, that I cannot endure to distress any of my fellow creatures, especially an old friend, for that reason I neither expect nor desire that you should discharge the whole at one payment."

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, May 10th, 1787.

"*To the Rev. Dr. Morice, Secretary, &c. &c.*

"REV. SIR:—Permit me to inform the Venerable Society, that I have been able to perform the duties of my Mission since my last with some degree of success; that people are more constant than formerly in their attendance upon Public Worship; that the Dissenters are so reconciled to the Church, that they frequently invite me to officiate among them, and to baptize their children; that there is no Methodist or sectary teacher in the county, except one Ana-baptist at fourteen miles distance; that the inhabitants of Annapolis town have cheerfully subscribed to give me twenty Pounds per annum, which is as much as they are able at present; that all party has to appearance subsided; that they have agreed to finish the church, and have raised one hundred and fifty Pounds for that purpose; and that as no person or party appears to be unfriendly, I have a more pleasing prospect of doing service than in any former period. As many people have removed from the several towns in this county upon their farms, Annapolis at present contains only forty families, including negroes; few of them are in affluent circumstances, and many are very poor, but I reckon five times as many in the county under my care, which cannot properly be discharged without much expense and fatigue.

"Baptisms, forty. Deaths, thirty; three or four of whom died of age and sickness, the remainder were drowned, or perished by the severity of the weather, or want of proper food."



“ ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, May 11th, 1787.

“ *To Dr. S. Peters, Pimlico, London.*

“DEAR SIR:—I am at this moment favoured with your letter of February last, and heartily thank you for that kind attention which you have paid to Mr. McNamarra. I should never have troubled you had not his conduct recommended him to every worthy loyalist. As to your information and advice I receive it with gratitude. I have ever regarded you with the warmest sentiments of affection and esteem, and, I flatter myself that kindness must have dictated you to address me again upon so disagreeable a subject. But I assure you, upon the word of an honest man, that I never go abroad without taking particular care to appear in character, except when busy in my garden, and this both my health and the necessities of my family require. Indeed, there is no person here above this employment. But I find that you have no idea of travelling in a new country. It cannot be expected that a Missionary on duty in remote corners should appear as sleek and handsome as a London deacon fresh from a barber's shop.

“‘If you reflect that we are liable to be called, upon a sudden emergency, in all weathers, to distant excursions, where our progress must be continued, partly on foot, partly on horseback, by land and by water, through deep morasses, muddy roads, and unbroken forests, you cannot wonder that we sometimes exhibit a tragic-comic appearance.

“‘Several times in the year past I have been exposed in this manner, amidst violent storms of rain, mire to my horse's belly, wet to my skin, and my clothes rent in climbing over windfalls; and in this pickle to perform the service I went upon and then to return in the same shattered condition. You are sensible that should a clergyman adjourn a sermon, a wedding, or funeral, or a christening, or the visiting of a sick or dying person till fine weather, as other gentlemen may do, who only travel for pleasure, it would still be more criminal. I will give you an extract from my Journal to the present purpose.

“‘*November 15th.* After a severe frosty night we set forward, being four in company, for a wedding, to Clement's, about fourteen miles below Annapolis.

“In the second mile we crossed Allan’s River, a rapid, rocky stream, where we were finely bespattered. Our progress for several miles lay through horrid broken roads, so encumbered with rocks, holes and gullies, roots of trees, and windfalls, and sloughs, that the passage was extremely difficult and dangerous. We were frequently obliged to dismount and lead our horses, wallowing knee-deep, through the mire. The last six miles conducted us over hanging precipices, woody promontories, and three stony beaches, full of honey pots. We crossed Moose River at a critical moment, as the tide was running in with rapidity. A little before sunset we arrived at Mr. Jones’s, a log house, with two small apartments, where I united in matrimony Sheepy Spur and Alicia Van Voorhies, the bride very pretty.

“The house being crowded with people, Capt. Ditmarsh, the bride’s grandfather, invited me to sleep at his house. A little before dark we set forward, and having walked above a mile, we came to a river, where, after wading into the water over our knees, we were under the necessity of returning in a dismal, dark and cloudy evening, along the ragged banks of a rocky beach, every moment in danger of breaking our legs, and of having our eyes scratched out against the branches of trees which had fallen over the bank. We at length recovered the house, where musick and dancing continued till after sunrise. About nine we began to return towards Annapolis, but we had no sooner crossed Moose River, than a cold, disagreeable storm of wind and rain commenced, which quickly rendered these new roads intolerable. Mrs. Spur was thrown from her horse, but her husband, catching her in his arms, prevented her from receiving any harm.

“She was however so wet and fatigued that we were obliged to leave her behind. By twelve we were compleatly soaked to our skins, and, by the plunging of our horses, were covered with mud from the soles of our shoes to the crown of our hats. Before dark I reached my habitation in woful plight.’

“*Memorandum.* Received half a dollar fee, as a reward for my journey, expense, trouble, wear and tear, and in consequence of this soaking I was afflicted with the rheumatism through the winter, though I never omitted duty.

"As to Annapolis town, upon my arrival it contained eighteen families, at present forty-five, only four or five of which, either by fortune or education, have any pretensions to politeness, and these are all very friendly. One has exerted himself to procure subscriptions, and another, acknowledged to be the politest man in the county, has subscribed to give five Pounds yearly. The other families are tavern keepers, disbanded sergeants, Scotch pedlars, mechanicks, farmers and negroes.

"Some are transformed into shopkeepers, and others remain very indigent. There is not a building equal to the houses of middling farmers in New England. It is from a regard to truth, and not from any disrespect that I transmit this account, for I am treated civilly by all. I have not, to my knowledge, an enemy among them, and they have readily subscribed to give me twenty Pounds *per annum*, which is as much as they are able. It is payable in May, and most of them have already discharged the first year, and the fear of my being removed was their principal inducement to subscribe.

"But the inhabitants of Annapolis are not the fifth part of my parishioners, as will sufficiently appear from my Notitia. They are chiefly husbandmen and labourers with miserable habitations. Many families are confined to a single apartment, built with sods, where men, women, children, pigs, fowls, fleas, bugs, mosquitos, and other domestic insects, mingle in society. No less than forty of these huts exist within a mile and a half of Annapolis town. In some of these wretched hovels, the politest clergyman in Europe, was he a Missionary, would be constrained to enter, to eat, and perhaps to sleep, or else to neglect his duty. Brother Viets, when he has compleated his first year, will doubtless be able to confirm the truth of this narrative. In a new country poverty increases for the first seven years, but after ten the inhabitants begin to revive by degrees. This I have learned from former experience. I resided almost twenty years at Kennebeck. The people were miserable enough for several years, but before the rebellion commenced the country was finely improved, the settlers made a decent appearance, and Pownalborough was politer than even the city of Annapolis, and my congregation there rather exceeded my present in useful knowledge and splendour.

Permit me further to observe that Cisebeau and every other settlement have the advantage of Annapolis in people of wealth, consequence and politeness; that the connections I have formed among the inhabitants, the attention I have paid to their children, and my readiness to oblige them upon all occasions, cannot, I presume, induce them to wish for my removal; that I have been regularly inducted into the Parish; that nearly one-half of the town are my tenants, whose interest would be affected by a change; that I have been a long time in the Society's service in the most laborious and difficult situations; that I have endured many losses and sufferings for my steady attachment to the Church and Government; that my age and constitution will not admit of any new harrassments; that I have a large, helpless family, who depend upon me for support; that though I am pretty well seasoned to woods and bad roads, to wet weather and fresh water rivers, yet I cannot endure the salt water without cruel sickness, and was I removed to a Mission near the sea I could not possibly perform the duty; that I have, at much expense and opposition, procured a grant of two hundred acres, two miles from Annapolis, this I am improving and consider the last resource of my family; that at a certain time removals and the forming of new acquaintances are extremely disagreeable, and that the very idea of such migrations is sufficient to suppress the industry of any clergyman advanced in life, to discourage every generous effort, and effectually to prevent his being useful, since he must be acquainted with the temper and circumstances of his people, before he can do much service among them.

"I fully approve of your reflections upon the revolution Bishops, and at the same time conclude that they and their abettors have as great a regard for the Alcoran as the New Testament, according to which all rebellions are damnable, especially when the most damnable methods are pursued to support them.

"I admire Mr. Waggoner's spirit. Forty Pounds could not furnish him with an hovel, fire, and potatoes.

"Brother Viets went to Connecticut for his family before Christmas, and is expected every moment to return, as are

Clarke, Scovil, and Andrews, to New Brunswick. When they arrive it is probable that we shall unite in giving a true account of the country and our situation, and to acquaint Dr. Morice that if he expects the Missionaries should make a decent appearance, they must have a decent support. And though I have never yet worn a pair of leather breeches, yet, if this curtailing business proceeds much further, we shall be obliged to cloath ourselves, like the ancient worthies, not indeed with sheep skins and goat skins, but with the hides of moose, bears, and wildcats.

"The following particulars are absolutely necessary for a clergyman in Nova Scotia:—

"1. That he should have a large, decent house, well furnished.

"2. That he should entertain all genteel travellers in a genteel manner.

"3. That he should feed all the hungry and cloath all the naked who approach him.

"4. That he should reform all disorders in his parish without any authority, or the least support of the civil magistrate, or encouragement from any quarter.

"5. That himself and family should be elegantly dressed, without attempting to rival people of fashion.

"6. That he should keep servants, horses, carriages, books, garden seeds, and farming utensils in the best order, both for his own and every body's service.

"7. He must never be weary, lame, or sick.

"8. He must fly, when requested, to the remotest limits of his Mission, amidst raging elements, and that without dirting, wrinkling, or wearing his garments.

"9. That he suffer himself to be cheated in every bargain, for which, whether he be silent or complains, he is sure to be laughed at.

"10. That it is criminal either to be prudent, or to run in debt.

"As to a Bishop, I can only sincerely declare, that if it depended upon me, Dr. Peters should be the man, and I believe so say all the brethren. • • Permit me to insert a circumstance omitted—at this season of the year you cannot enter

a mile into the woods without being covered with black flies and mosquitos."

The introduction of the smallpox into Annapolis Royal in the summer of this year caused Mr. Bailey no little uneasiness. His wife, deciding to be inoculated, was left in the city, while Mr. Bailey retired into a distant part of the township with the children. From thence he wrote to Rev. Roger Viets, the Society's Missionary at Digby. He says: "Now, Sir, though I am attending to that part of my Mission, which I have perhaps too much neglected, I am sensible that the people in town are uneasy to be so long without public service, and would be highly pleased with a visit from you to officiate among them, and to baptize a number of infants born during my absence. I must therefore intreat you to oblige them and me with your friendly labours. \* \* I cannot think that this forcing a loathsome and dangerous disorder upon our neighbours is agreeable to the dictates of freedom, religion, or humanity. I am, for instance, restrained from taking it from a principle of conscience."

In 1787 the Rev. Charles Inglis, D. D., who had been Rector of Trinity Church, New York, from 1777 to 1783, was appointed the first Bishop of all the British North American Colonies. This drew from Mr. Bailey a letter of congratulation addressed to him, and dated October 26th, 1787.

The usual half-yearly report to the Society P. G. is as follows:—

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, Nov. 12th, 1787.

"To the Rev. Dr. Morice,

*Secretary to the Society, London.*

"REV. SIR:—Permit me to inform the Venerable Society, that the people at Annapolis have cheerfully contributed towards the finishing of our Church, and that it begins to make a decent appearance. But as there was a necessity of repairing it from the foundation, I have been obliged to officiate in the Court House and in private places in the country, by which means a greater number of all denominations have been

able to attend Divine Service. Since my letter of May last, Baptisms have amounted to sixty-one; Marriages, twenty couples; Burials, only five. As this exceeds, in proportion, any former Notitia from this place, it is an argument that the country flourishes, notwithstanding several families have emigrated to the States. But as they were chiefly indolent people, of a restless and roving disposition, or notorious for their criminal conduct, their absence can hardly be perceived in any religious assembly, and their recess may be regarded as a fortunate event to a rising country. A tenant on the glebe having repeatedly refused either to take a lease, or to pay any acknowledgment, I found it necessary, at the instance of the Attorney-General, to bring a writ of ejectment. I have long since dispersed all the Catechisms and Prayer Books transmitted by the Society, and as they are greatly wanted among the people, permit me to solicit a supply."

The statistics of the Mission are not given in the half-yearly report to the Society in May. That letter is occupied mainly in a statement of trouble and expense to which Mr. Bailey had been put in defending the glebe. In his letter to the Secretary of the Society, in November of this year, he informs him that he had "been successful in three several actions, which, it is imagined, will sufficiently prevent any further litigation. Though I have" [he continues] "the countenance of my principal parishioners, yet I am constrained to bear all the expense, except the assistance I received from one generous attorney, and, as I am indebted to a wealthy man, who stimulated the tenants to this contest, I am now exposed to his disappointed malice.

Baptisms, since May last,	-	-	-	53
Burials,	"	-	-	4
Confirmed,	"	-	-	25

"Near an hundred would have offered themselves, had it not been for the following unfortunate circumstance: the Bishop, on his return from New Brunswick, had agreed to give me timely notice. He arrived at Digby on Monday, the

25th of August, and wrote me that he intended to hold confirmation at Annapolis the next Sunday, but the letter was not delivered till a fortnight after. On Saturday, about nine in the evening, he unexpectedly arrived at Annapolis. I was then gone to officiate at Granville. I received a message the next morning to return immediately. It was now eight o'clock and I had twelve miles to ride, so that it was almost time to begin service before I could see the Bishop, but as he had appointed the days for confirmation at Wilmot, Cornwallis, Windsor, &c., it was requisite that it should now be administered at Annapolis. As service was expected at Granville, it was impossible to give timely information. Thus was the Bishop chagrined, the people disappointed, and I mortified by the carelessness of the man to whom the letter was intrusted. I had taken unwearied pains both in public and in private to explain the nature, and to urge the necessity of confirmation, as all the people, except a few Europeans, were wholly unacquainted with this institution."

From a letter from Rev. Samuel Parker, D. D., Rector of Trinity Church, Boston, dated in the autumn of this year, the following is extracted:—

"Young Gardiner\* read the service at Pownalborough last winter and spring, but then went to New York and was ordained by Bishop Provost, and had an invitation to a parish, near Charleston, South Carolina, which he accepted, and has been there ever since. I believe there is no service in any Episcopal Church below Falmouth, where a Mr. Oxnard is a reader."

In writing to Rev. Edward Bass, at Newburyport, March 14th, 1789, Mr. Bailey speaks of the trouble and expense to which he had been subjected in defending the glebe lands. He also says: "Pray inform my kinsman that two years ago not a person in Annapolis ventured to sing in public, but they have now attained to great perfection. The best families have

---

\* Rev. J. S. J. Gardiner who afterwards succeeded Dr. Parker as Rector of Trinity Church, Boston, Mass.



joined to encourage it, and we have for more than a year performed Psalmody in all its parts.

"For your amusement I have enclosed the hymns we sang last Easter and New Year's Day, for the people here expect that I should compose hymns, as well as sermons for the holidays, and through the instigation of some friends I have attempted to court the Muses in my old age, upon several subjects by way of satire, as the character of your demagogues, the trimmer, &c."

"ANNAPOLIS ROYAL, May 25th, 1789.

"To the Rev. Dr. Morice,

*Secretary to the Society, London.*

"REV. SIR:—I would beg leave to inform the Venerable Society that St. Luke's Church at Annapolis is at length completely finished, in consequence of which my congregation, exclusive of the soldiers, is increased to twice the former number; that the Dissenters at Granville have converted their meeting-house into an Episcopal Church of England; that I have received an application from the people of Annapolis district, and officiate in their meeting-house one Sunday in six; that the inhabitants of Clements have declared for the Church, and request my occasional assistance, till they shall be happy enough to obtain a minister. I cheerfully comply with these various requisitions, but find that these distant excursions, as age advances, are extremely fatiguing. And though we have no settled society in this county to oppose the Church, yet a succession of itinerant preachers from the States and elsewhere, create great confusion among the lower people, and are of inconceivable damage to a new country, by drawing multitudes almost every day in the week, at this busy season, to attend to their desultory and absurd vociferations.

"These preachers, however, agree in rejecting the literal sense of the Holy Scriptures, and the Christian Ordinances. Their dependance is upon certain violent emotions, and they discourage industry, charity, and every social virtue, affirming that the most abandoned sinners are nearer to the Kingdom of Heaven than people of a sober, honest and religious

deportment, for such, they alledge, are in danger of depending upon their own righteousness.

"Since November last :

Baptisms, 39 infants and 2 adults.

4 new Communicants.

5 Burials.

. . . . .

"The Bishop in March last desired me to transmit him an account of my expense in defence of the glebes, with proper vouchers. I immediately complied with his requisition, but fear my letter could not reach Halifax before his embarkation for Quebec. I must therefore beg permission to repeat the substance of my communications to the Bishop. Besides all the trouble, excursions, neglect of domestic concerns and abuse, I was obliged to give three lawyers three guineas each, and have been severely harrassed by another law suit, commenced in revenge.

"It is true I have not only been successful in all these disputes, but am happy enough to effect a perfect reconciliation with all my opponents. Myself and family have severely felt the consequences of this litigation."

The letters of Mr. Bailey for six years, *i. e.*, from August 1789 to August 1795, are missing, and but very few of the letters of his correspondents have come into the hands of the compiler of this narrative.

The following is an extract from a communication from Bishop Inglis to Mr. Bailey:—

"HALIFAX, DECEMBER 5, 1789.

"REVEREND SIR:—I am much obliged to you for your *Notitia Parochialis*, inserted in your letter of Nov. 17, which is just come to hand. It gives me great pleasure to find that your Mission flourishes, and especially that so many children and youth attend to be catechised. My greatest hope of reformation arises from them, and therefore I am peculiarly anxious that the Clergy should be diligent in instructing the rising generation."

From the printed abstract of the proceedings of the Society P. G. in 1789, it seems that "in the course of the year Mr. Bailey had baptized 91 infants, and 4 adults; married 12 couple; and buried 9 persons." It is a circumstance worthy of record in the Biography of a Clergyman connected with the Church in Nova Scotia, that Sunday Schools were established in that Province as early at least as this year. This fact rests on the authority of a printed sermon of Rev. Roger Viets, "preached at Digby, in Nova Scotia, April 19th, 1789," in which he says: "But the abuse of the mornings, noons, and evenings of Lord's days is in part obviated by the late excellent institution of Sunday Schools, for the establishment and support of which we are very much indebted to the piety and assiduity of our worthy Prelate, who is never weary in well-doing."

The Rev. Edward Bass wrote to Mr. Bailey from Newburyport, April 5, 1792. He says: "Last summer we had a high Sunday here. Bishop Seabury preached in our Church and confirmed an hundred and thirty or forty persons. Not more than half the people who came to church could get in."

The Abstract of the Society for the year 1793 contains the following reference to the previous year. "Mr. Bailey, the Missionary at Annapolis, besides the regular performance of duty, continues to instruct in the catechism 30 children every Wednesday, and as many in the country every Friday, during the summer season. His last Notitia was, Baptisms 36, Marriages 7, Burials 2, New Communicants 2."

On the 20th January, 1794, Governor John Wentworth notified officially the agents of the garrison at Annapolis that he had appointed Rev. Jacob Bailey Deputy Chaplain of that fortress, the appointment to commence on the first instant, in the place of Rev. Joshua Wingate Weeks, and directed said agents to account with Mr. Bailey for the subsistence allowed by government.

By this order justice was at length done in this matter to the worthy Rector of Annapolis. During many years Mr. Bailey had at times actually suffered from the want of the income attached to the office, the duties of which he discharged,

while others received the emoluments. He tried all proper means to obtain his just rights, and his letters and those of some of his correspondents abound with passages on this subject, some of which have been inserted in this Memoir.

Mr. Bailey says, June 21st, 1782: "Dr. Breynton, on my removal to Cornwallis, offered to resign his Deputy Chaplainship of the 84th Regiment in my favour." This arrangement, though strongly opposed by the friends of Rev. Mr. Ellis, was carried into effect. Mr. Bailey discharged the duties of the office to the garrison at Cornwallis. In December, 1780, he received £20 as part of his salary. Shortly after, "Dr. Breynton," says Mr. Bailey, "seized the fuel and ordered the Quarter Master not to allow me any perquisites except subsistence, about two-fifths of the whole."

\* \* \* \* \*

"After my appointment to Annapolis I received no letter from Dr. Breynton till the latter end of June, when he announced that he took the 84th Regiment into his own hands, on the 24th of the previous April, thus depriving me of the stipend from the 1st January previous."

Depending upon the enjoyment of this income until he should be settled in his new Parish, Mr. Bailey incurred debts to enable him to make a respectable appearance on his removal to Annapolis. The disappointment of course compelled him to devise, if possible, some way of liquidating these debts.

The Chaplainship of the garrison at Annapolis, however, had been held by the former Rector, and was considered as his right. This was simply just, because this clergyman was called upon to do the duties of his office in the fort.

But on application, by one of the principal men in the Province, to the Governor in Mr. Bailey's behalf, the Governor replied, "that the Rev. Mr. Weeks, the instant he knew of Mr. Bailey's appointment as Missionary at Annapolis, applied to him for the Chaplaincy and obtained it." Nor were applications to a succeeding Governor more successful, for Mr. Bailey says: "The Governor of this Province has been three times directed by the Society P. G. to give me the Chaplainship of

the garrison here," but without effect, "although he acknowledges in his letter to me that my claim is indisputable."

In a letter, November 9, 1785, to Mr. Bailey, Dr. Mather Byles says: "Your letters of August 31, and November 22d are safe in my hands. That to the Archbishop I have enclosed in one of my own, from which I have transcribed the following paragraph for your inspection: 'I enclose a letter from Mr. Bailey, the Missionary at Annapolis, who cannot yet obtain the deputation to that garrison. Mr. Weeks, who resides at Halifax, still enjoys that salary which belongs to the acting Chaplain of Annapolis; and which, as Mr. Neyle, the commissioned Chaplain, is settled in England, has for many years been justly esteemed as naturally and inseparably connected with that Mission. In return for this exertion of Dr. Breynton's influence with the Governor, Mr. Weeks has long officiated as the Doctor's Curate, without putting him to the smallest expense, and, even during his absence at this time, receiving no other reward, unless it be the precarious surplice fees of the Parish. So that, as the matter now stands, a Curate is actually supported for Dr. Breynton by money, which is the equitable property of Mr. Bailey. This, Sir, is the exact fact, fairly stated, and such a partial arrangement must be highly displeasing to your Grace. I make no apology for afresh recommending Mr. Bailey, as an oppressed man, to your powerful protection.'"

Nearly two years after this Mr. Bailey writes to Rev. Dr. Peters in London: "I have heretofore informed you that I served almost two years the fifty-seventh regiment as Deputy Chaplain, without receiving the least advantage, the reason of which now appears. Mr. Weeks, not contented that I should perform the duty of Chaplain to the garrison for nothing, with the Chaplainship of this garrison must have the above regiment likewise; and that they might compel me to perform the duty of both, they procured my name to be inserted in the military returns."

The subject of our Memoir received from the Society £50 sterling, which was afterwards reduced to £40, and from the

Board of Trade £70, in all £110. This was afterwards somewhat increased by income from glebe funds and a subscription of the Parishioners of £20. He says that his "predecessor, when articles of living were less than half the present price, had £320 sterling per annum." At that time the duties of Annapolis Parish must have been much less laborious than they were after Mr. Bailey had taken the charge.

For reasons before stated, the expenses of living were large. Perhaps, however, the Missionary there might have succeeded in making the annual expenses of his growing family fall within his scanty income. But a debt of some £50, incurred at the time of his removal from Cornwallis, and which he intended to pay from the salary of the Deputy Chaplainship of the 84th Regiment, hung over him. His creditor pressed him for payment; he threatened, if he did not commence a suit, and Mr. Bailey was obliged to withdraw £10, at intervals, from his inadequate salary, in order gradually to extinguish it. His letters show how sorely this circumstance distressed him.

At length, after twelve years delay, Governor John Wentworth, who was his classmate in college, was enabled, by an act of simple justice, to do him an essential service in conferring upon him the income of an office whose duties he had for so long a time discharged.

The following is part of Mr. Bailey's letter to the Society: "Dec'r 15th, 1795. Permit me to present the Venerable Society with my Notitia for the year past, as I am uncertain whether my letter of June last has been safely transmitted:—

Baptisms, thirty-eight; Marriages, six couples;

Burials six; New Communicants, eleven.

• • • • "We have been able for several months past to assemble in the new church at Clements. It is a very neat and decent building, fifty-two feet by thirty-four, with a gallery and steeple. It is but justice to mention the very liberal exertions of Capt. Ditmarsh and Mr. Palamus towards completing this church."

Mr. John McNamarra, who had been brought up by Mr. Bailey from a boy, and had attained to positions of usefulness and respectability, died in 1798. Bishop Inglis, in a letter to Mr.

Bailey, notices this event: "I very sincerely regret the death of Mr. McNamarra, who was a very worthy, useful man. In him the community has sustained a considerable loss."

Mr. Bailey had written to Bishop Inglis, giving an account of the disorderly proceedings of certain fanatics in and near Annapolis. The Bishop replied at some length in a letter marked by sound Christian counsel. In the course of it he says: "The fanaticism in the time of Charles I. was one principal cause of the dissoluteness that prevailed in the reign of Charles II.; and from which the nation has not yet perfectly recovered. . . . In the year 1791 the New Lights made a prodigious stir, so that I thought it my duty to advert to them in the charge that I delivered at my Triennial Visitation that year. If you have that charge, you can see in it my sentiments on those points where they appear to be most irregular and vulnerable."

The Abstract of the Society for 1800 contains no report from Mr. Bailey, but speaks at length of "an enthusiastic and dangerous spirit among a sect in the Province of Nova Scotia, called New Lights. . . . They have been more particularly troublesome in the parts about Annapolis, Granville, Wilmot, and Aylesford."

The Abstract for the next year states that "Mr. Bailey had baptized during the year, 45; married, 3; buried, 3. Four had been added to the Communion. He requests some prayer books and religious tracts, which the Society have sent him."

In 1806 it is stated in the Abstract, that "Mr. Bailey, the Missionary at Annapolis, has acquainted the Society, that, notwithstanding his advanced age, he has been able to perform Divine Service every Sunday, besides doing duty at the Garrison, and occasionally visiting Clements. His Baptisms for the year are 43; Marriages, 7; Burials, 7. Communicants at Annapolis and Clements, 76. The female school, conducted by his daughter, consists of 34 scholars, 13 of whom are upon charity. They attend catechising on Wednesdays."

Mr. Bailey was Rector of St. Luke's Parish, Annapolis, about twenty-five years, and died of a dropsy July 26th, 1808,

aged seventy-six years, leaving a widow and three sons and three daughters. He retained his faculties, both of body and mind, in a remarkable degree, to the last.\*

It is a subject of regret with the compiler of this Memoir that he has been able to glean but a very few facts touching the last years of Mr. Bailey's life. His connection, for a quarter of a century, with a parish having the relative importance of Annapolis, must no doubt have given him a good degree of influence in Ecclesiastical matters in the western part of the Province of Nova Scotia, and the writer has reason to believe that he was loved and respected in the place of his residence. To the last, however, his temporal condition, remained unimproved. He never was in possession of an income sufficient to maintain himself and family. Still, he was remarkable for the benevolence of his heart and the liberality of his hand. Though oppressed himself by want and debt, his hospitality never ceased to flow, and by this kindness of nature he always retained the personal regard of all who knew him.

To conclude the account of his family:—

Mrs. BAILEY died at Annapolis Royal, March 22d, 1818, aged seventy years.

CHARLES PERCY, the oldest son, was a remarkably handsome person; and when the late Duke of Kent, father of the present Queen of England, was commander of the forces in Nova Scotia, he came on a visit to Annapolis, and observing this lad, among a number of others assembled to bid him welcome, he inquired who he was. This prince was so pleased with his person and address that he prevailed upon his father to allow him to take him under his own care, and to provide for him. Accordingly he first placed him in the Military Secretary's office, and subsequently gave him a commission in his own regiment, (the 1st Royals,) where he served with honor, till the breaking out of the American war, when the regiment was ordered to Canada, he then being a captain, high up on the list. He was killed at the battle of Chippewa, in Upper Canada.

REBECCA LAVINIA died at Annapolis Royal.

---

\* Mr. James Whitman's MS. letter, Nov. 30th, 1847.



CHARLOTTE MARIA is still living.

THOMAS HENRY had the appointment of Barrack Master and Staff Adjutant of Militia, which he held till his death. He died young, leaving a widow and three daughters.

WILLIAM GILBERT was a lawyer, and did a great business. He also died young, and left a small family.

ELIZABETH ANNA married Mr. James Whitman.

Mr. Bailey was below the middle stature. A side view of his countenance is furnished in the profile likeness prefixed to this Memoir, being the only portrait of him now in existence. Although his youth was occupied in the labors of a farm, and he lived beyond the "three score years and ten" allotted to man, yet we find him speaking frequently in his writings of his slender constitution. His love of learning caused him to surmount many obstacles in order to improve his mind, and the advantages he finally enjoyed were without doubt well improved. He strove hard to acquire knowledge, and wrote much, and especially at various times no small amount of poetry. Without attributing to him the possession of genius, he may be said to have been a man of a fair degree of talent and of a large amount of various information.

The abilities which the subject of this Memoir possessed were industriously employed, for he was always busy. Many of his writings have been lost, but enough remain to show how continually his early practice of using the pen was followed throughout his life. These writings are of a very miscellaneous character. His journals and letter books which now exist have furnished the greater part of the materials of the foregoing biography. Beside these are a MS. History of New England, comprising an account of its natural productions and topography, extending to some two hundred pages; a Description of the present Province of New Brunswick, with an Account of the Sufferings of the American Loyalists, who were transported thither; Dramatic Sketches, principally of a political cast; and two or three MS. School Books. Much of his poetry has been preserved. "The Farewell to Kennebeck," with the exception of some stanzas, highly charged with politics, has been given in Note K. In the opinion of the present writer this production has considerable merit. But he

has not been able to find, among his other poetical efforts, any which he thinks are to be compared with this. The ancient maxim that "a poet is born such, while an orator can be made" by industry, contains probably more truth than is generally supposed, and a propensity for versifying has doubtless been often mistaken for that natural poetical gift vouchsafed to but very few in any century.

A number of Mr. Bailey's sermons have been carefully examined by the writer of this volume. From various causes many of these MS. are imperfect in the loss of some, and in a few instances nearly all their contents. This of course renders it the more difficult to express an opinion respecting them. Besides, those which have entirely perished might have been on totally different subjects from those which have been preserved. Of those examined many are of an historical character, illustrating either some particular incidents, or the lives of persons mentioned in the Bible; a few are Thanksgiving Sermons, on various occasions; some are aimed at specified vices; some are designed to enforce the Christian virtues, and some are devoted to the instruction furnished by events in the Saviour's life. A few are either directly based on some of the Fasts and Festivals of the Church, or refer to them. But, as before stated, so large a portion of many of them is lost, that it becomes difficult to judge of these discourses from the fragments that remain. This, however is evident, that they do not exceed contemporaneous sermons in close application of Gospel truth, or in pungent appeals to the hearer.

Whatever may be assigned as the cause, it is very certain that the eighteenth century witnessed a coldness and deadness in religion truly lamentable. This characterized all bodies of Christians, nor did a favorable change become widely established till within the last forty years. Now, it is to be hoped, that while the truths of natural religion are enforced, the Gospel of Christ is faithfully preached by the majority of ministers in Protestant countries.

It is abundantly apparent that Mr. Bailey entered warmly into politics. Considering his situation this can cause no surprise. On his visit to England for Holy Orders he saw, among

other things, evidences of the great military and naval power of that nation, and the opportunities he had of meeting with the dignitaries of the established Church, and other circumstances, strengthened, no doubt, the loyalty which all Americans felt at that time. He was a recipient of the bounty of a Church of England Missionary Society to an extent that to him must have seemed large. That Society, pitying the destitute condition of a poor and ignorant people in America, entirely neglected by their countrymen, who seemed to be willing to let the whole Kennebec valley either sink into infidelity or become the prey of Popish Missionaries, that Society could send its sympathy and aid across the Atlantic, and the subject of this Memoir was the agent for carrying out its benevolent designs. The people of his charge were poor and their learning was scanty. They were also a very heterogeneous collection. A small number of persons, however, consisting mainly of officers of the county court and lawyers, might furnish him with better society. But while some of these were estimable, others were far otherwise. The latter harrassed and persecuted him, and exerted themselves to destroy the Church, of which he was the minister.

The differences between the mother country and America increased. Yet there is satisfactory evidence that after matters had proceeded to considerable lengths, some of the most prominent of the American patriots contemplated only a redress of grievances, and had no desire or serious thought of independence.

It is very easy to perceive that Mr. Bailey, who had witnessed the wealth and vast warlike means that Great Britain possessed, and therefore knew her power, must be confident that the parent country could easily conquer her revolted colonies. The Revolution, therefore, in his view, was little short of madness. Nor could he be favorably impressed with the character of some of the leaders of the revolt in his region. They were men of but little learning or refinement. Some of them disclaimed all religious obligation. Many excesses took place in these eastern regions, and if arguments failed to convert a Tory, the tender mercies of a mob would not be effectual.

The Missionary saw and felt that men raised to power in his neighborhood, under the new order of things, abused that power to gratify old personal grudges. Receiving his main support from a Church Society in England, doubtless he feared that should the Revolution be successful, that support would be cut off,—he would be obliged to abandon his charge, the labor and anxiety of so many years would be entirely lost, and the Church, of which he was minister, become extinct.

When we contrast the treatment received by the Tories in Boston, and other large places, with the persecutions which the friends of Great Britain underwent in the eastern parts of the Province, we cannot fail to see that the officials of the latter region grossly abused their power, and made personal hatred, rather than the requirements of public safety, the measure of their severity. It was desirable, no doubt, that all parts of the country should be united in opposition to the measures of Great Britain, and men were to be drafted from every town in the Province to fill up the Continental army. Aside from this, it could be of little practical importance whether the county of Lincoln was loyal or rebellious. A vast wilderness intervened between it and any of the loyal Colonies. Nor could it in any way be a barrier to attacks from the English from those quarters. British troops occupied Castine more than four years, till the end of 1783. There was nothing to prevent the enemy from taking possession of Kennebec if he were so disposed. An apology for a fort near the mouth of the river, armed with one cannon, which had been an alarm gun at Fort Frankfort,\* was the only hindrance to a British fleet that might see fit to sail to its head of navigation.

The gratification of personal animosity, then, on the part of some of the Whig leaders in Lincoln County, rather than an enlightened and honest love of liberty, appears to have excited them to measures which would not have been tolerated in the more populous parts of the same Province. This could not

---

\* Mr. Bailey says that this fort was "a wooden block house, with one gun, a four pounder."

but be known and felt by Mr. Bailey and his political friends. And making all due allowance for the weakness of human nature, knowing how prone it is to resent injustice and oppression, we think that the facts before stated, while they do not prove to be a sufficient vindication of Mr. Bailey's political course, may still mitigate the censures which any may be disposed to pass on an American, who did not feel the injustice which Great Britain was showing to his country, and therefore did not exercise his influence on what we all now agree to have been the right side.

## NOTES.

---

### NOTE A.

[Page 2.]

IN the "History of Rowley, etc., by Thomas Gage; 1840," is a "Genealogical Register of the Families of some of the First Settlers of Rowley." The first on the list is—

#### BAYLEY.

1. James and Lydia. Had four sons; *John*, born 1642 James, 1650; Thomas, 1653; Samuel, 1658.

2. John and Mary (Mighill). Three sons; *Nathaniel*, born 1675; Thomas, 1677; James, 1680; and two daughters.

3. Nathaniel and Sarah (Clark). Five sons; Joseph, born 1701; Nathaniel, 1703; Josiah, 1705; *David*, 1707; Samuel, 1709; and two daughters.

4. David and Mary (Hodgkins). Seven sons; *Jacob*, born 1731; David, 1735; Pierce, 1738; Amos, 1740; John, 1741; Nathaniel, 1743; Ezekiel, 1748.—p. 438.

The father of the subject of this biography was one of the seven deacons of the First Congregational Church in his native town.—p. 24.

The writer of the above-named History, gives the name of the family as Bayley. But as the subject of this Memoir uniformly spelt his name Bailey, and as his immediate relatives and his descendants did the same, this form of the name has been adopted in this work.

## NOTE B.

[Page 70.]

As the interesting facts, mentioned in this and the preceding paragraph, have never, (so far as the writer is aware,) been distinctly stated by any historian, it is proper that the authority which substantiates those facts, should be given. They form not only a part of the annals of the Episcopal Church in this country, but they are a portion of the history of the United States.

Williamson, who has given, in his *History of Maine*,\* the most detailed account of this colony, says of the colonists: "They left the ships, August the 11th,† and, assembling on the shore, returned public thanks to Almighty God, and listened to a sermon adapted to the occasion." Bancroft says:‡ "The adventurers reached the coast of America, near the mouth of the Kennebec, and offering up public thanks to God for their safety, began their settlement under the auspices of religion." "Purchas§ makes the following statement: *An* 1607, was settled a Plantation in the River Sagadahoc,|| the Ships called the Gift and Mary and John being sent thither by the famous English Iusticer, Sir *John* Popham and others. . . . They chose the place of their Plantation at the mouth of Sagadahoc, in a Westerly Peninsula: there heard a Sermon, read their Patent & Laws & built a Fort. . . . The people seemed affected with our men's devotions, & would say that King JAMES is a good King, his God a good God, and *Tanto* naught, so they call an evil spirit which haunts them every Moone, and makes them worship him for feare. . . . On February the 5, the President died."

The compiler of this Memoir, although well satisfied in his

\* Williamson's *History &c.*, i. p. 198.

† An error in the date, see *post*.

‡ History U. S. 13th Ed. i. p. 288.

§ Purchas' *Pilgrims*, London, 1626, Vol. v. p. 830.

|| Sagadahoc is the proper name of the river from Merry Meeting Bay to the sea. The Kennebec and Androscoggin unite at this Bay, and thence take the first-mentioned name.

own mind, from various reasons, that a minister of the Church of England accompanied this expedition, (as was the case with the first colony which a few months before settled the present State of Virginia,) still supposed it to be nearly impossible to establish this fact beyond a doubt, and entirely so to recover the name of the Clergyman, after the lapse of nearly two and a half centuries. He had stated his reasons in a note, when, just as this work was ready for the press,\* he accidentally discovered that there was an ancient document in existence which would furnish him with much information desired on this point. This document forms one of the Volumes published by the "Hakluyt Society," London: 1849, and is copied from a manuscript in the Sloane Collection, No. 1622, in the British Museum. The larger part of this contemporary narrative was contributed by the writer of this Memoir to the Massachusetts Historical Society, and was published in Volume I., Fourth Series of their Collections. An extract also appeared in the third Volume of the Maine Historical Collections.

The title of the second part is as follows:—

### THE SECOND BOOKE

OF THE FIRST DECADE OF THE HISTORIE OF TRAVAILLE INTO VIRGINIA BRITTANIA, ENTREATING OF THE FIRST DISCOVERERS OF THE COUNTRY, AND OF THE FIRST COLONIE, TRANSPORTED BY S<sup>r</sup> RICHARD GREENVILE, KNIGHT UPON THE ISLAND OF ROANOK, AT THE EXPENCE AND CHARGE OF S<sup>r</sup> WALT: RALEIGH KNIGHT.

AS ALSO OF THE NORTHERN COLONIE, SEATED UPON THE RIVER OF SACHADEHOC, TRANSPORTED AN<sup>o</sup> 1585, AT THE CHARGE OF S<sup>r</sup> JOHN POPHAM, KNIGHT, LATE LORD CHIEFE JUSTICE OF ENGLAND, GATHERED BY WILLIAM STRACHEY, GENT:

PSAL. CII. VER. 18.

"This shalbe written for the Generation to come: and the people w<sup>ch</sup> shalbe created shall praise the Lord."

---

\* In 1850.



(In the title to "the first Booke," the writer says "COLLECTED BY WILLIAM STRACHEY, GENT: 3 YEARES THITHER IMPLYED SECRETARIE OF STATE, AND OF COUNSAILE WITH THE RIGHT HONORABLE THE LORD LA-WARRE, HIS MA<sup>TIES</sup> LORD GOVERNO<sup>R</sup> AND CAPT: GENERALL OF THE COLONY.")

In 1606 a ship was despatched to the northern parts of America by some members of the Plymouth Company, under command of Capt. Chalons.

This ship, which carried thirty-one men and two of the Indians whom Weymouth had delivered to Sir F. Gorges, was taken by a Spanish fleet, and carried to Spain, where she was condemned. After mentioning this discouraging circumstance, the Strachey account proceeds: "Howbeit the late Lord Chief Justice would not for all this hard hansell and Spanish mischief give over his determinacon for planting of a Colony w<sup>th</sup>in the aforesaid so goodly a country upon the River of Sachadehoc, but against the next year prepared a greater number of Planters and better provisions, w<sup>ch</sup> in two shippes he sent thither, a Fly boat called the Gift of God, wherein a kinsman of his, George Popham, comanded and a good shipp called the Mary and John of London, wherein Raleigh Gilbert comanded, w<sup>ch</sup> w<sup>th</sup> 120 persons for Planters brake ground for Plymouth in June 1607."

"Aug. 1. . . . They hoisted out their bote, and the Pilott, Capt. R. Dauiess w<sup>th</sup> 12 others rowed into the Bay wherein their ship road, and landed on a galland Island."

"Aug. 9. Sonday the chief both the the shippes w<sup>th</sup> the greatest pt of all the Company landed on the Island where the crosse stood, the w<sup>ch</sup> they called St George's Island, and heard a sermon delivered vnto them by Mr. Seymour, his preacher, and soe returned abourd againe."

Leaving St. George's Island they stood for the Kennebec. A violent storm nearly caused the shipwreck of both vessels. Before reaching their destination they were driven somewhat to the south-westward and were a part of the time in Casco Bay, whose leading features are described in the account.

"Aug. 15. . . . Came to the eastward, and found the

Island of Sutquin,\* and anchored vnder y<sup>t</sup>, for the wynd was of the shoare, by w<sup>ch</sup> they could not gett into Sachadehoc, yett Capt. Popham w<sup>th</sup> the Fly boat gott in."

"Aug. 16. . . in the morning Capt. Popham sent his shallop to helpe in the Mary and John, w<sup>ch</sup> weyed Anchor, and being calme was soone towed in and Anchored by the Guifts side."

"Aug. 18, they all went ashoare and there made choise of a place for their Plantation at the mouth or entry of the Ryver on the west side (for the River bindeth y<sup>t</sup>self towards the Nor-east and by east) being almost an Island of a good bignes, being in a province called by the Indians Sabino, so called of a Sagamo, or chief Commander under the grand Bassaba."

"Aug. 19, they all went ashoare where they had made choise of their Plantation, and there they had a Sermon delivered vnto them by their preacher, and after the Sermon the President's Comission was read w<sup>th</sup> the Lawes to be observed and kept, George Popham gent was noiated President, Capt. Raleigh Gilbert, James Dauies: Ri: Seymer preacher, Capt. Ric Dauies, Capt Harlow, the same who brought away the Saluadges at this tyme shewed in London from the River of Canada, were all sworne Assistants; and soe they returned back againe."

"Aug. 20. All went to shoare againe, and there began to entrench, and make a Fort and to buyld a storehouse, contyn-  
ewing the 21, 22, 23, 24, 25, 26, 27."

. . . . .  
"Octo. 4. Then came 2 canoas to the Fort in w<sup>ch</sup> were Nahamada and his wife, and Skidwares, and the Bashabaes brother, and one other called Amenequin, a Sagamo, all of whom the President feasted and entertayned w<sup>th</sup> all kindness, both that day and the next, w<sup>ch</sup> being Sondaye the President carried them to the place of publike prayers, w<sup>ch</sup> they were at both morning and evening, attending y<sup>t</sup> with great reverence and silence."

. . . . .

"Octo. 6. . . . After Capt Dauies departure\* they fully finished the Fort, trencht and fortified y<sup>t</sup> w<sup>th</sup> 12 pieces of Ordnance, and built 50 houses therein, besides a Church and a Storehouse, and the Carpenters framed a pretty Pynnace of about some 50 tonne, w<sup>ch</sup> they called the Virginia, the chief shipwright being one Digby of London."

This contemporary account establishes the fact that this colony had a clergyman of the Church of England in their number, that he was their chaplain, was sworn as one of the assistants, and regularly officiated in the church built within their fort. It also gives his name. The common notion that Plymouth, in Massachusetts Bay, was the first place in which any kind of Protestant religious worship was steadily kept up, is evidently unfounded. Thirteen years before a landing was made on "Forefathers' Rock," the wilderness of Maine echoed to the sound of a pure and fervent liturgy.†

It is desirable to correct a misapprehension which has prevailed to some extent, as to the precise spot on the Kennebec, (or Sagadahoc,) where this colony established itself. Williamson‡ says: "Although, according to some accounts, they first went ashore on *Erascohegan*,§ or the western *Peninsula*;

\* In the Mary and John.

† The present writer, while he wishes to show that members of the Church of England made provision at a very early date for the spiritual wants of colonies in America, and also of the savages among whom those colonies were founded, has no disposition to keep out of sight the pious endeavors of any other Christians to promote the same great end. It is only since these pages have been prepared for the press that it has come to his knowledge that Protestant worship and preaching were continued for some time previous to Popham's expedition, in a locality within the present State of Maine.

The colony of De Monts has been spoken of, p. 68. It was made up of Romanists and Protestants. Among the latter was L'Escarbot, who was a Huguenot. He kept a journal, which was afterwards published. In the "little chapell, built after the sauage fashion," L'Escarbot gave public religious instruction to the colonists on Sundays and other times. The name of this worthy man should not be suffered to sink into oblivion. He undoubtedly labored faithfully in his endeavors to promote the interests of religion, and whatever may have been his success, of which we are not informed, he has connected his name in the most desirable manner with the history of ancient "Acadia," and will hereafter receive the commendation of "good and faithful servant" from that Master whose religion he sought to promote.

‡ History of Maine, i., p. 198.

§ Now Parker's Island.

yet it is believed they finally disembarked upon an island two hundred rods eastward, called Stage Island, supposed by them to be better situated for all the conveniences of trade with the natives and of navigation through the year." • • He acknowledges that they afterwards, for various reasons, removed to "the south-east side of a creek, near what is now called Atkins' Bay, which stretches west into the land half a league, and forms a peninsula at the southerly corner of the present" [town of] "Phippsburg." Here, he says, "a few slender cabins were built and a fortification erected."

The present writer has taken considerable pains to ascertain where the idea, that this colony first landed on an island, originated. The earliest book he has met with in which the statement occurs, is "The History of the District of Maine, by" [Gov.] "James Sullivan," published in 1795. He says, p. 53, "they spent a miserable winter, principally on an island called Stage Island." At page 174, he states: "Tradition assures us that Popham's party made their landing on the island, now called Stage Island, and as there are remains of an ancient fort on Cape Small Point, and wells of water of long standing, with remains of ancient dwelling-houses, so it may be concluded that the Plymouth fort was at that place." Four pages previously the historian had said: "On the west side of the river are the remains of an old fort made of stone and earth; there are also eight old walls now to be seen, and the ruins of several houses. Whether these buildings were erected by the English or French is uncertain; but the probability is that the former were the erectors of the works." At pages 169 and 170 the following statement occurs: "On an island already spoken of, called Stage Island, was the landing place of Popham's party. • • Ogilby, in his Collection, which he made in the year 1671, says that they landed on the west side of the river and there began a plantation."

It will be perceived that *tradition* alone is assigned as au-

---

\* "As early as 1642 the Plymouth Company, who had a grant of land on the Kennebec, erected a fort and trading house at Georgetown. By some it is supposed that this fort was at Small Point, and by others at Sagadahock Bay."—*Maine Historical Collection*, ii., p. 200.

thority for the statement of this colony landing in the first place upon an island. Yet tradition appears to have been utterly at fault in pointing out the locality of the fort built by the Plymouth company thirty-seven years after the departure of Popham's colony. Besides, the description of the remains of an old fort on the west side of the river existing in 1795, indicates that that fortress was built by persons of European notions as to the strength of fortifications, rather than by the colony at Plymouth, Mass., who would doubtless deem block houses, built of timber, to be sufficient. Tradition is not uniform on this point. In Massachusetts Historical Collections, Vol. i., 252, a writer contends that *Parker's Island* was the first landing place of Popham's colony.\* Certain indications of early settlers are to be found even at the present day upon Stage Island. Why may not these have been what was left by the garrison established by the Plymouth Company, whose locality is now confessedly unknown? It will be observed in one of the quotations made from Sullivan's History, that although he makes the distinct assertion that the island he names was the landing place of Popham's party, yet that shortly after he quotes Ogilby as stating, in 1671, that this party landed on the west side of the river. Ogilby agrees with all the ancient writers, (for it is only *modern* historians who have assigned this varying tradition as their authority.) Thus Purchas, before quoted, "In a Westerly Peninsula." And the Strachey MS. says: "they all went ashore, and there made choise of a place for their Plantation at the mouth of the Ryver on the West side, \* \* being almost an Island, of a good bignes."

In the autumn of 1852 the writer of this Memoir, in company with a friend, visited the locality spoken of, and indicated on the map, opposite page 77, by the figure 1. Standing upon high ground, near the centre of it, he saw at once that the phrase "being almost an Island, of good bignes," was a very accurate description. And from a pretty thorough examination of this peninsula, it seemed as if the precise situation of the fort built by these early colonists might almost be settled. Conspicuous to all who enter or leave the mouth of the Ken-

nebec, is a two story dwelling-house, built by Major Shaw, standing a few rods from the sea coast, and not far distant from the river just named. Near this house is a crescent-shaped pond of *fresh* water, covering about five acres of ground. The land rises some forty feet on the north of this pond, and then descends by an easy slope to the water of Atkins' Bay, giving sufficient space for the erection of a fort containing "fifty houses, besides a Church and a Storehouse." A large supply of fresh water would evidently be needed for such an establishment as this. At the present day the water in the wells on the peninsula is more or less brackish, which in all probability has always been the case. Such a pond, then, would be of great value to a fortress. This fact, and the adaptation of the land to such a building, seem to be decisive as to the locality of the fort.

The satisfaction of being able to determine with a tolerable degree of accuracy, the precise spot where this, the earliest but one of the colonies in the Northern United States, passed a number of months, will, it is hoped, be a sufficient apology for the space devoted to the discussion of this question. While everything relating to this colony will no doubt prove interesting to members of the Protestant Episcopal Church, the addition here made to the previous knowledge of it cannot be unacceptable to the student of American history.

From some cause or other, historians have done but very scanty justice to the interest that some of the members of the Church of England took in providing for the spiritual welfare of those who attempted to colonize the then inhospitable regions of this western world. We have seen in this Note, that a colony of Episcopalians in Maine, with a clergyman of their Church as their chaplain, and as one of their "Assistants," preceded that of the Puritans in Plymouth by thirteen years. We now propose to show that another part of North America witnessed the celebration of divine worship, and the administration of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper, *forty-two* years before the "Pilgrims" landed on these shores.

In the reign of Queen Elizabeth, Capt. Martin Frobisher made three voyages to the continent of North America. In the attempt to discover a shorter passage to China than that by the way of the Cape of Good Hope, he struck boldly for the west. He finally reached a point far north of Labrador, and in 63° N. latitude discovered the straits which have ever since borne his name. He returned to England, and the next year a motley collection of miners, gold-finers, bakers, carpenters, and gentlemen, with thirty soldiers and forty seamen, were embarked on board of "fifteen sayle of good ships," which reached their former harbor in safety in the summer of 1578. Before sailing from England certain regulations for the guidance of the adventurers were drawn up, of which what follows is an extract:—

"Articles and orders to be obserued for the Fleete, set down by Capt. Frobisher, Generall, &c.

"I. Inprimis, to banish swearing, dice and card playing and filthy communication and to serue God twice a day with the ordinary seruice of usuall in the Churches of England, and to clear the glasse\* according to the old order of England."—*Hackluyt*, (Ed. 1600,) Vol. iii., p. 74.

They arrived at their destination "upon the one and thirtieth of July." "Here every man greatly rejoiced of their happie meeting and welcomed one another after the sea manner with their great Ordinance; and when each partie had ripped up their sundry fortunes and perils past, they highly prayed God, and altogether upon their knees gaue him due, humble and hearty thanks, and Maister Wolfall, a learned man and appointed by her Maieties Councell to be their Minister and Preacher, made unto them a godly sermon, exhorting them especially to be thankfull to God for their strange and miraculous deliuerance in those so dangerous places, and putting them in mind of the uncertaintie of man's life, willed them to make themselves always readie as resolute men to enjoy and accept thankfully whatsoever aduenture his diuine Prouidence should appoint. This Maister Wolfall, being well seated and settled at home

---

\* Hour glass.

in his owne Countrey, with a good and large liuing, hauing a good honest woman to wife and very towardly children, being of good reputation among the best, refused not to take in hand this painfull voyage, for the only care he had to saue soules, and to reforme those Infidels, if it were possible, to Christianitie: and also partly for the great desire he had that this notable voyage so well begunne, might be brought to perfection: and therefore he was contented to stay there the whole yeare if occasion had serued, being in every necessary action as forward as the resoluteest man of all. Wherefore in this behalfe he may rightly be called a true Pastor and Minister of God's word, which for the profite of his flocke spared not to venture his owne life."—*Ibid.*, iii., 84.

On the 30th of August, "Maister Wolfall . . . preached a godly sermon, which being ended, he celebrated also a Communion upon the land, at the partaking whereof was the Capitaine of the Anne Francis, and many other Gentlemen and Souldiers, Mariners and Miners with him. This celebration of the diuine mystery was the first signe, seale and confirmation of Christ's name death and passion euer knowen in these quarters. The said M. made sermons, and celebrated the Communion at sundry other times in seuerraille and sundry ships, because the whole company could neuer meet together at any one place."—*Ibid.*, iii., 91.

No American historian, it is believed, has noticed any of the above interesting facts respecting the religious features in this expedition, though some have spoken at length of Frobisher's voyages, as connected with the discovery and colonization of the American continent.

A discovery of somewhat recent date, on an island near the shores of Maine, promises to give additional plausibility to the theory that the coasts of North America were visited by Northmen some centuries before natives of England or France came hither. In 1808, a gentleman in Bath, Maine, communicated to the Rev. William Jenks, D. D., well known as an accom-



plished Oriental scholar, a sketch of some singular characters found "on the side of a ledge of rock, near the middle of the little Island of Manānas, which is separated from Monhegan Island only by a narrow strait that forms the harbor of the latter." At the annual meeting of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, in May, 1851, Dr. Jenks made a communication respecting the characters referred to. Since that time an accurate transcript has been made of the inscription. The characters are eighteen in number, and Dr. Jenks has now no doubt that they are Runic in their origin. As in the case of the inscription on the rock at Dighton, Mass., "only some six or seven characters are claimed to be Runic, or even Phœnician, Punic, or foreign," should it be established beyond a reasonable doubt that this inscription at Monhegan is Runic, the State of Maine will present greater claims to the interest of the historian and antiquary than has heretofore been allowed to it.

Dr. Jenks says, in Hayward's Gazetteer, p. 64: "We cannot, perhaps, venture to assert that the coast had never been visited by Europeans before the voyage of Cabot, or those of the Spaniards, who, with the French, seem to have been upon it at an early date. But on a small island very near Monhegan, was discovered in 1808, an inscription of rather a curious kind made on the side of a rock. It might possibly countenance the hypothesis, which has of late been entertained with so much approbation and interest by the Danish antiquaries, that America was visited by Scandinavians or Icelanders, long before Columbus. Yet the inscription seems to be too simple to be resolved into Runic characters. On the top of the rock were found three holes, about one foot apart, rather deeply perforated, and calculated to accommodate a tripod. The island is called Manānas, or Menannah, and is described by Williamson; although so far as is known to the writer, the above inscription has never before met the public eye. It is the only one of which he has heard as existing in Maine; and whether it were the result of mere idleness, or made to score a reckoning,\* or has a meaning of a different kind, we will not

---

\* This rock is either granite or gneiss. Is it probable that any one would "score a reckoning" in so hard a substance?

undertake to determine. The holes are an inch deep or more, and near three inches in diameter. The strokes are cut to the depth of nearly half an inch, and are about six inches in length, as our informant\* stated. A spring is near, and the shore about thirty rods off. The ledge of rock is near the centre of the little island, and runs about N. NE. and S. SW."

---

NOTE C.

[Page 74.]

"The ancient colony of New Plymouth, having met with many losses and discouragements in their trade at Kennebeck, in 1661 conveyed their lands to Antipas Bois, Edward Tyng, Thomas Brattle and John Winslow, with all the privileges of the Patent, for the sum of £400 sterling.

"But the frequent wars and commotions which disturbed the Eastern country prevented these gentlemen and their heirs from making any improvements. And besides, this territory, being seldom visited, was generally esteemed only a barren tract, in a severe climate and a remote and wilderness country. At length, Mr. Samuel Goodwin, of Charlestown, (Mass.,) now Major Goodwin of Pownalboro', having obtained some intelligence from his ancestors concerning the above-mentioned purchase, and having procured a twenty-fourth part from his father, engaged with resolution in the affair. But the original Patent, by which they were entitled to reassume the possession could not be found, and a majority of the proprietors imagined it lost beyond recovery; it was therefore his first concern, to acquire, if possible, this necessary instrument; and it was with indefatigable industry, unwearied application, and a great expense, he was able to obtain proper intelligence of said Patent. After searching a multitude of Records, he found it in the hands of Samuel Wells, Esq., one of the Commissioners for settling the bounds between the late Colony of Plymouth and that of Rhode Island. This Patent had been long con-

---

\* The late Major JOSHUA SHAW, of Bath, Maine.

ceeded by an ancient woman with a view, it is presumed, of making some advantage to herself, or family, and it was finally wrested out of her possession by a stratagem, and delivered to the above Commissioners in order to assist in their determinations. Mr. Goodwin obtained an order from the General Court, directing Mr. Wells to resign the Patent, and having in this manner procured the original conveyance, prevailed with a number of gentlemen to be concerned by purchase, and Mr. Bowdoin, Vassal, Hancock, Dr. Gardiner, Hallowell, and other wealthy persons were engaged, and formed themselves into a company, and the first meeting was held, agreeable to a warrant, in 1749.

"Mr. Goodwin, by order of the proprietors, began his surveys in 1750, and continued in that employ through the whole summer, notwithstanding the Indians, by their motions, had terrified all the inhabitants into garrison."

The above is taken from a MS. History of New England, by Rev. Jacob Bailey. As he lived on terms of intimacy with Major Goodwin it is probable that he obtained his information from him. The following also occurs in the same "History, &c.:" "Towards the end of summer, 1751, a number of Protestants arrived at Boston from Germany, who had been enticed from their native country in consequence of pompous advertisements and specious promises. About fifty families of these strangers were prevailed upon by the Plymouth Company to settle under their protection. They, with several others of Irish and English extraction, were conducted to Kennebeck by Major Goodwin, where they began a settlement upon a commodious neck of land opposite to Richmond, and almost thirty miles from the ocean.

"But before they could enter upon their voyage to the Eastward winter came on with uncommon severity, and it was with extreme difficulty they reached Fort Richmond, about the beginning of March, 1752. In order to secure the inhabitants of this new plantation, called Frankfort, from any disturbance, the Plymouth Company agreed to erect a fort about one mile and a quarter above Richmond on the eastern shore, near a famous carrying place from the Kennebeck into

Mundooscotoock, or Eastern River. This fortification was named Fort Shirley, in honour of the Governor; a wall of palisadoes enclosed a square of two hundred feet, two strong block houses, mounted with cannon were erected at opposite angles, and several barracks, for the reception of soldiers."

Rev. Mr. Bailey states in a communication to the *Boston Evening Post*, November 4th, 1773, that it had been asserted "that the first settlers of West Pownalboro' emigrated from Franckfort, in Germany, but upon enquiry it appears that not a single family came either from that city or its jurisdiction. It is true that six or seven families, chiefly of French Protestants, who had been expelled France for their religion, issued from the neighbouring territories; several other Dutch Lutherans were collected from the different parts of the Empire, to which we may add a number of families from about Mount Billiard, who speak a dialect of the French."

The following, extracted from Hawkins's "Missions of the Church of England," p. 356, is inserted here to show that emigrations from the same part of Europe just mentioned, were going on to other parts of the British American Colonies, and also that these emigrants readily conformed to the Church of England. "In 1752, Mr. Moreau" (a Missionary at Halifax, N. S.) "reported that 500 Protestants of the Confession of Augsburg, recently arrived in Nova Scotia from Montbelliard, had joined themselves to the Church of England, and desired to partake of the sacrament of the Lord's Supper. They received copies of the Book of Common Prayer, in French, with the greatest satisfaction, which they showed by kissing the books and Mr. Moreau's hand as he distributed them."

---

#### NOTE D.

[Page 71.]

It seems proper to record such information as is preserved, concerning the first Church Missionary that officiated east of Casco, (now Portland.)

Of the time or place of his birth, we have no knowledge, nor do we know where he received his education.

The first notice we have of him, is in the very laborious and correct edition of Smith's Journal, by Wm. Willis, Esq., of Portland, Maine. Mr. Willis says, on page 83, Note 1: "In November, (1736) the Presbyterian party of the Irish emigrants in Portland, installed Rev. William McClanethan, a staunch supporter of that persuasion from the North of Ireland; but they were unable to support him, and he went to Georgetown and Brunswick and finally to Chelsea"

The following is copied from General Sewall's History of Bath, published in collections of Maine Historical Society, Vol. ii. p. 220. s. "The Church first established in the County of Lincoln, was at Georgetown. The members were Presbyterians. In 1734,\* Rev. William McLanathan was ordained as an evangelist, and officiated there until 1774. The house of worship was near the Mansion house of the late Major Lithgow where Mr. McLanathan usually officiated,† but whether Mr. McLanathan had the pastoral charge of the church, we are not informed." Divisions arose and two societies were established. The Pastor of the second Society, having left the place, Mr. Mac Lanathan officiated for both Societies one year, on a salary of £200.

In the Church Records of Chelsea, Mass. is the following: "Octo. 19th, 1747. Voted, that the town's Committee be desired to request and agree with the Rev. Mr. William Mc. Clenachan to preach for the further term of two months on probation."

On the 13th of *April*, 1748, "Mr. Mc Clenachan was chosen, by a great majority, Colleague with the Rev. Thomas Cheever," Pastor of the Congregational Society in the above-named town. It is afterwards stated in the same Records that the

\* This date cannot be reconciled with the one previously given, 1736. The latter however, must be correct, as it occurs in a journal of daily occurrences, for many years kept by Rev. Thomas Smith, Pastor of the first Congregational Parish in Portland.

† There is reason to think that this building was not erected till many years afterwards, and then for the services of the Church of England. Major Lithgow's house, was built in 1766.

town had concurred with the Church in the above choice "by a very great majority." In the letter prepared to be sent to the Churches invited to assist in the installation of Mr. Mc. C., he is spoken of as "late of Blanford." The installation took place on the 21st December, 1748. . . . .

"Dec. 18th, 1754. The Church met by appointment. Rev. Mr. Mc. Clenachan desired the Church would dismiss him from his Pastoral relation to this Church, and insisted thereon. Upon which, voted, unanimously, not to dismiss him.

"Dec. 25th, 1754. The aforesaid Mr. Mc. Clenachan having dissolved his relation to this Church, by leaving them contrary to the above vote, was received, confirmed,\* and partook of the Lord's Supper under the establishment of the Church of England, by the Rev. Dr. Timothy Cutler." †

On the 21st March, 1755, Mr. Maclenachan was appointed by the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, as their Missionary to the "Eastern Frontier of Massachusetts Bay," and his salary commenced from the Christmas preceding. He must have been in London previous to the former date, and have taken Orders in the Church of England. He did not, however, embark for America till August of that year. He landed in Boston, October 10th of that year, and remained there during the following winter, assigning as a reason for this course that he did not think it safe to carry his family, on the eve of winter, to the place of his Mission, where no house was provided for them. However, in May, 1756, he removed to Fort Richmond, using this ruinous structure, a part of the time at least, as an habitation.

"The Society (P. G.) on complaint of his delays, had stopped his salary: but on his writing from his Mission, promising diligence and expressing his hope to be continued, they restored it December 1756. And on his requesting, in June and October, 1758, to be removed, the Society ordered him £10 each time as an encouragement, fearing from his repre-

---

\* It can hardly be necessary to remind the intelligent reader that this is a mistake. As there was no Protestant Bishop in America until after the Revolution, of course confirmation could not be administered.

† Rector of Christ's Church, Boston, Mass.

sentations that a successor of sufficient resolution and activity could not easily be got." The people of Frankfort stated that he did not stay with them but till Dec. 1758.\* He first went to Virginia, then to Philadelphia, "from which city he sent, June 22d, 1759, his first notification to the Society of his resigning his Mission; and desired to have his salary paid till midsummer, alleging that it wanted but two days of the time. This the Society granted of course: not suspecting that he had left the place of his Mission six months before, which he ought fairly to have told them. And thus he received his salary for four years and a half, besides gratuities of £20, and were but two years and a half upon his post."

Mr. Maclenachan thus left his Mission on the Kennebec without the usual notification to the Society of such an intention, and accepted an invitation to some church in Virginia, but omitted to go there, "though he had received such marks of favour, that he ought to think himself obliged to serve them."

Shortly after his arrival in Philadelphia, the Vestry of Christ Church in that city, chose him assistant to the Rector, Rev. Dr. Jenney.

There being already one assistant in that Church, and one previously recommended as the second, the Rector declined to sign the application for a license to Mr. McL. and signified to the Bishop of London that he disapproved of the candidate.

In answer to a letter of the Vestry of Christ Church, the Bishop of London wrote, March 26th, 1760, refusing to give Mr. McL. the license desired, for the reasons stated, whereupon, an application was made to the Archbishop of Canterbury, to obtain from him what had been desired. This was accompanied by a letter in Mr. McL's favor, from 18 *Presbyterian* Ministers, convened in Philadelphia! To these documents, His Grace replied at some length in a letter to Mr. McL., under date of October 9th, 1760.

In this letter he points out, (among other things,) the ex-

---

\* "Mr. Mac Clenachan officiated among us but a little while, viz.: from May, 1756, to Dec. 1758."—*Copy of a Petition to the Society P. G., among Rev. Jacob Bailey's Papers.*

treme indelicacy of applying to him in a matter which was entirely within the jurisdiction of the Bishop of London, and mildly, yet severely rebukes Mr. McL. for his conduct. The Archbishop says: "ought it not to give you a further distrust of your proceedings, that no one Clergyman of the Church of England in America, hath declared himself to approve them: and that the Convention of Clergymen which met at Philadelphia last May, have strongly expressed their disapprobation of your behaviour both in that Convention and out of it; and have signified that they would not suffer you to preach in any of their pulpits?"

Mr. Maclenachan stated, in his letter to the Archbishop, "that he had been favoured with the occasional use of the State House in which to officiate, and was followed by a multitude of people of all denominations." Mr. Maclenachan is also said to have been the founder of St. Paul's Church, in Philadelphia. He probably removed shortly after to New Jersey, for in a letter from the Rev. Colin Campbell, December 26th, 1761, he laments "that his congregation at Mount Holly, which was very flourishing, has been hurt by some enthusiastical people of Mr. Maclenaghan's party, who pretend that Mr. Maclenaghan is the only preacher of Christ in America, and all the rest are Antinomians." But from another letter, written about six months after, by Mr. Campbell, it appears that these people were "reduced to a sense of their sin in a causeless separation, and are returning daily to their proper fold."

The authorities for the statements in the first part of this Note have been given. For the facts in the history of Mr. Maclenachan, after his ordination in the Church of England, and for some of the language used in narrating them, I am indebted to a letter of Archbishop Secker, published in the "True Catholic," No. LXII., p. 80, s. s., and No. LXIII., p. 129, s. s.; also to Rev. Dr. Dorr's "History of Christ Church, Philadelphia," p. 119, 120, 122, and Bishop Doane's "Sermon at the Consecration of St. Mary's Church, Burlington, N. J.," Dec. 23d, 1834, p. 15, Note \*.

That Mr. Maclenachan was a man of an ardent temperament is sufficiently obvious from the above sketch. His uncommon



powers of pulpit oratory, testified by his admirers and those who bore witness to the crowds who followed him, are also acknowledged in the traditions remaining of him in the town of Chelsea, where he passed six years. But these traditions are unfavorable to him in other respects. The writer has been assured by an aged and intelligent resident of that place, that when he was a boy it was said by the old people of the town, "that when Mr. Maclenachan was in the pulpit he ought never to come out of it, and when he was out of the pulpit he ought never to go into it." The same person also stated that Mr. Maclenachan occasionally indulged in the excessive use of ardent spirits. Mr. Maclenachan had been settled as the colleague of Rev. Thomas Cheever. Mr. Cheever died at an advanced age in less than two years after this settlement. As he felt called upon in the last days of his life to join with others in "a petition to the General Court that they might be erected into a new Parish,"\* it is to be presumed that the conduct of Mr. Maclenachan, even during the early years of his ministry in Chelsea, must have been very objectionable to the venerable pastor and some of his Christian brethren. We know not what induced Rev. Dr. Cutler to receive Mr. Maclenachan among his communicants. He, however, must afterwards have regretted his agency in promoting the change of Mr. Maclenachan's religious relations. Nor was the time of experiencing this regret deferred till the troubles in Philadelphia, occasioned by him in whom he had taken such an interest. For the Archbishop, in the letter to Mr. Maclenachan which has been spoken of, states that it "hath been reported that you had hired a house in Boston for a year, and that you attempted to procure a settlement in Dr. Cutler's Church till you were forbidden his pulpit." Mr. Maclenachan seems to have deliberately deceived his patrons in England, by obtaining from them a salary for a time in which no services were rendered. The influence of a clergyman of such a character, could not have been beneficial to any congregation, and while his residence on the Kennebec must have been irksome to his

---

\* Chelsea Town Records, Dec. 18th, 1749.

pride, it may fairly be presumed that he did little to recommend the communion, of which he was a minister, to the people of his charge, or to promote the progress of morality and religion.

### NOTE D<sup>A</sup>.

[Page 78.]

In the following, copied from an Almanac for 1764, it will be seen that the usual way of travel in the region of the Kennebec was as stated in the text. "Long Reach," there named, is the present city of Bath, or, more strictly, that portion of the Kennebec River which passes in front of that city. The traveller could pursue his journey on land till he reached that place, when, if he wished to go further, he must take a water conveyance. The extract will also prove interesting, it is trusted, as enabling the reader to compare the way of travelling into Maine a century since with that which now exists. At the present time a large steamboat leaves Boston for the Kennebec twice every week in the summer, while a railroad conveyance is afforded twice every day to the same region.

#### ROAD FROM BOSTON EASTWARD.

Lynn—Norwood, . . . . .	7	——, Ring, . . . . .	6
Salem—Pratt, . . . . .	8½	Falmouth—Freeman, . . . . .	8
Wenham—Porter, . . . . .	6	New Casco—Butman, . . . . .	8
Ipswich—Treadwell, . . . . .	6½	North Yarmouth—Mitchell, . . . . .	7
Newbury Bridge—Hale, . . . . .	7½	" " —Woods, Coffin, . . . . .	6
Newbury—Davenport, Choate, . . . . .	4½	Brunswick—Ross, . . . . .	10
Hampton Falls—Sanborn, . . . . .	7	——, Thompson, . . . . .	4
Greenland—Clark, . . . . .	9½	Georgetown—Springer, . . . . .	8
Portsmouth—Stoodley, Foss, . . . . .	5½	LONG REACH, BY WATER, TO	
Old York—Ingraham, . . . . .	9	Pownalborough—Lovejoy, . . . . .	15
Wells—Littlefield, . . . . .	14	Fort Western, . . . . .	16
——, Storer, . . . . .	2	Fort Halifax, . . . . .	17
Kennebunk—Kimball, . . . . .	5	Norridgewalk, . . . . .	27
Arundell—Patten, . . . . .	2	Great Carrying Place, . . . . .	30
Biddeford—Ladd, . . . . .	7	Chaudiere, Quebec.	
Scarborough—Milliken, . . . . .	8		

## NOTE E.

[Page 79.]

Petition to the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts:—

“**REVEREND SIR:**—We, the inhabitants of Franckfort on the Kennebeck River, beg leave to express our acknowledgments of the Society’s goodness in sending a Missionary to this truly necessitous place, without the assistance of whose compassion we and our posterity are in danger of losing all sense of religion, or else of being seduced by Popish Missionaries, who not only have been industrious heretofore in these parts in seducing His Majesty’s subjects and settlers upon this Frontier, but probably upon a peace will revive their attempts. We therefore humbly pray the Society will be pleased to supply this Mission now vacant by the removal of the Reverend Mr. Mc. Clennachan, who indeed officiated among us but a little while, viz., from May, 1756 to December, 1758, though we did everything in our power to make his continuance easy. We are indeed very poor, being a frontier settlement, hitherto prevented from cultivating our lands to advantage by being exposed to the incursions of a barbarous enemy, yet we shall continue to provide for a minister to the utmost of our ability if the Venerable Society will please to send us one. Particularly we shall contribute at least as much as we have heretofore done, which, including the cultivated land and estate put into our former Minister’s possession, was not less than twenty £stlg. per annum. We have a glebe of two hundred acres of good land, and as soon as we enjoy the blessings of peace we promise to build a Church and Parsonage house, and till that happy time comes we can have Richmond fort for a mansion house for the Minister, and the chapel belonging to the garrison for a church, and the farm round the fort for a glebe, which is already under cultivation and very valuable. We hear one Mr. Bailey, a sober, prudent and well disposed young man, is willing to undertake this Mission, and with the approbation of the Rev. Clergy of Boston will proceed to England for Holy Orders,

and offers himself to this service. We pray the Society will favour this motion, as the gentleman, by what we can hear of him, will be likely to continue, and perhaps spend his days among us.

Humbly hoping the Society's indulgence to this our request, we beg leave to subscribe ourselves, Rev. Sir,

Your very distressed, tho' most obliged  
and obedient servants,

FRANKFORT ON KENNEBECK RIVER, }  
Nov. 24, 1759. }

A true copy.

Timothy Whiden.  
his

Martin ✕ Haley.  
mark.

Abraham Wyman.

Samuel Marson.

Stephen Marson.

Simon Wyman.

Elias Cheney.

Abner Marson.

Samuel Hinds.

Mauris Wheeler.

his

Mark ✕ Carney.

mark.

William Storey.

Abiathar Kendall.

Jonathan Bryant.

Francis Ridall.

Samuel Oldham.

his

Dennis ✕ Loins.

mark.

his

Wm. ✕ Moor.

mark.

James Goud.

Jacques Bunyon.

Peter Pechin.

Frederick Pechin.

George Pochard.

Christopher Pochard.

Abraham Pochard.

Adam Couch.

Anos Paris.

John Paris.

Obadiah Call.

James Widden, Jr.

Lazarus Noble.

David Thomas.

his

Joseph ✕ McFarling.

mark.

Benj. Noble.

Daniel Goodwin.

James Wyman.

John Henry Layer.

John Peter Shoul.

John Heron.

John George Goud.

Charles Estinay Houdlet.

George Goud.

Daniel Goud.

Frederick Jacqueen.

Ludovicus Cassimire Mayer.

Philip Mayer.

George Mayer.

John McGown.

Michael Stilphen.

Thomas Low.

John Andrews.

Daniel Malbone.

John Pochard.

Philip Fought.

## NOTE F.

[Page 80.]

The family of Mrs. Bailey were among the first in social rank in the then Province of New Hampshire. Her father was a physician, and also a colonel. At that day professional men were regarded with a degree of esteem and respect which has now to a great extent diminished and military office brought an extensive influence. Besides being the daughter of a gentleman so favored by position, the family of Mrs. Bailey, on the mother's side, consisted of individuals who became extensively known, or whose descendants performed important parts in the history of their country. It is thought proper by the writer to add the genealogy. He is indebted for it to J. Wingate Thornton, Esq., of Boston, Mass., a descendant, who has prepared a very full and accurate genealogy of the Wingate family, which must be highly interesting to all persons of that name, or who are in any way connected with that family.

JOSHUA WINGATE, born at Hampton, N. H., Feb. 2d, 1669; married Nov. 9th, 1702,\* Mary Lunt, of Newbury, Mass. (He commanded a company at the siege of Louisburg, C. B., and was afterwards for several years Colonel of Hampton Regiment of Militia. Died, Feb. 6th, 1769.)

*Children.*

1. Rev. Paine Wingate, m. Mary Balch. Harvard College 1759; afterwards U. S. Senator, and Judge of Superior Court of New Hampshire. Died in 1838.

2. Sarah, m. Dr. Edmund Tappan, of Hampton, N. H.

3. Mary, m. Deacon Timothy Pickering, of Salem, Mass., father of Hon. Timothy Pickering, grandfather of Hon. John Pickering, the distinguished Lexicographer and Oriental scholar.

4. Joshua, m. Dorothy Frees.

5. Jane, m. Rev. Stephen Chase,† of New Castle, N. H.

---

\* Also Coffin's History of Newbury, p. 321.

† Spoken of in the previous Memoir, p. 12.

6. Abigail, m. John Stickney.
7. Anna, m. — Marston, of Hampton, N. H.
8. *Martha*, born March 30. 1718, m. *Dr. John Weeks*, of Hampton, N. H., Nov. 10, 1737.
9. Love, m. Rev. Nathaniel Gookin, of Hampton, N. H.
10. Elizabeth, m. Dr. John Newman, of Newbury, Mass.
11. John, born January 24, 1724-5; Har. Coll. 1744; died at Hampton, N. H., Sept. 4, 1812, unmarried.

(8.) *MARTHA WINGATE* m. *Dr. JOHN WEEKS*, Hampton, N. H.

*Children.*

1. Joshua Wingate, m. Sarah Treadwell. Rector of St. Michael's Church, Marblehead, Mass., &c. &c.
2. Comfort, m. Dr. Coffin Moore.
3. Martha, m. Benjamin Randall.
4. Mary, m. Adon Nye. 2d husband—Brackett.
5. SARAH, m. REV. JACOB BAILEY.
6. John, m. — Brackett.
7. William, m. — Haynes.
8. Ward Cotton.
9. Joanna, m. Folsom.
10. Abigail, "dyed an infant."

---

NOTE G.

[Page 82.]

From the following letter, it would seem that one Episcopal Clergyman at least penetrated into the remote and uncultivated region of the Kennebec. The season of the year when this clergyman made this journey is generally so unpleasant, that we are the more surprised at his undertaking.

" April 21st, 1763, }  
GEORGE TOWN. }

"REV'D SIR:—The Rev. Mr. Jas. Dorner, from So. Carolina, but last from Portsmouth and Casco, will call upon you

in a few Days. A Brother *Clergyman*. He means upon the *Establishment*. As the Winter has been bad, (and consequently y<sup>r</sup> Journey hither, almost, if not Altogether Impracticable,) He will officiate in his Journey at *Go. Town*, which may possibly be an Alleviation to you, &c. He will proceed to pay his compliments to you, and in the Interim

Yr. Unknown Friend  
and Brother in Christ,

JAS. DORMER.

"N. B.—He produces Satisfactory Credentials to y<sup>e</sup> principal People here, and takes not a Farthing for Services Done.

"*To The Rev. Mr. Bailey, at Pownal Borough.*"

#### NOTE H.

[Page 104.]

It is known that the portion of the Kennebec Valley, near Mr. Bailey's residence, had, in former years, been frequented more or less by Indians. The residence of the Sachem, Kennebis, from whom the river is supposed to have derived its name, "was upon Swan Island, in a delightful situation; and that of Abbagadussett, between a river of his name and the Kennebeck, upon the northern borders of Merry meeting bay."\* Both of these localities are within six miles of the former site of the Parsonage-house in Pownalborough. In the present town of Pittston, but a few miles further in another direction, two old burying grounds have been discovered. The mode of interring the bodies found in these places, shows conclusively that they were Indians.†

These facts are mentioned as an introduction to the following extract from a MS. "Geographical description and Natural History of the Eastern Country," written by the subject of this Memoir:—

"On the Western side of the Kennebeck, about thirty-two miles from its exit, there is a round hill, which rises above the

\* Williamson's History of Maine, i., 467.

*Ibid.*, 493.

surrounding level near fifty feet perpendicular. The hill is one entire pile of stones, covered with herbage, and several stately oaks, which make a fine appearance from the water. There is some probability that it was erected by art, and what conduces to confirm this opinion is that not a single stone is to be found on the adjacent plains. It is a noted retreat for serpents and other vermin; and it is remarkable that two hills of a similar aspect, and the same materials, may be seen in Gardinerston, about three miles distant. It is conjectured that these were raised by the natives in former ages, as the monuments of some distinguished victory, or else were designed to cover the bodies of some mighty heroes." In a letter to Rev. Jeremy Belknap, D. D., after having read the 1st volume of American Biography by that writer, Mr. Bailey says: "I had for more than twenty years been making collections of everything curious respecting the original inhabitants, but in consequence of my compulsory emigration from Kennebec, I had the misfortune to lose most of my papers. • • I have observed near the river Kennebec some appearances of Indian antiquity." He there describes the hills before mentioned nearly in the terms used in his MS. "Geographical description." The additional particulars are, that this hill was "about forty rods from the river," was "nearly of a circular form, and its base may occupy half an acre," and that "the stones of which it is composed resemble the stones on the beaches of the river." He continues: "In Pownalborough, half a mile from the river Kennebeck, I enclosed three acres for a garden, in a situation rude, rocky, and broken, beyond expression. There was, however, a spot containing about half an acre, which had been cleared of stones at some distant period; they had been thrown together on each side, and growing in these heaps were found hemlock trees of an enormous size."



## NOTE I.

[Page 118.]

An expedition of eleven hundred men under Col. Benedict Arnold had been detached by Gen. Washington from the army at Cambridge, Mass., to enter Canada by the way of the Kennebec and Chaudiere Rivers, through the wilderness of Maine. That detachment in a number of small vessels entered the former river on the 20th September, 1775, and the same evening came to anchor opposite the fort in Pownalborough. About eight miles higher up, the transports in which the troops came were abandoned for batteaux, which had been built for them by Maj. Reuben Colbourn. Most of this army remained a number of days at Fort Western, in the present town of Augusta, before commencing their fatiguing and dangerous journey. Mr. Bailey's Journal for September of this year is in existence. Entries are made against every day to Sunday 17th, inclusive, when it seems that he had a congregation of 72 persons. The remaining week is left blank. On Sunday, 24th, 60 persons attended Divine Service. The following week is also left blank. The Journal of the next month is as full as usual. In a MS. History of the Eastern Country, Mr. Bailey gives a tolerably full account of Arnold's expedition after the arrival of the soldiers in Kennebec, but his statements do not vary much from other narratives. As blanks are left in his Journal, as above noted, on the days when the troops were in his neighborhood, he probably absented himself from his house, and his information must have been derived from other persons.

In the "History" above-named, Mr. Bailey says, just before giving the account of the expedition against Canada: "It was not long before that party of Norridgewocks, which Colbourn had allured to the army, quitted their station in disgust and returned to Kennebeck, finding more satisfaction in ranging the streams and the forests than in all the boasted freedom of Congresses and Continental armies."

This contemporary statement confirms an account given to the writer of the present Memoir some years since, by one of

the oldest settlers in Kennebec. His account was communicated to S. G. Drake, Esq., and is noticed in "The Book of the Indians," Eighth Edition, Boston: 1841. Book iii. p. 156.

---

#### NOTE J.

(Page 117.)

"On the 7th of October another special court was convened at Pownalboro' for the trial of Tories, when Mr. Jones and eight others belonging to Vassalboro', with Mr Blanchard, of Woolwich, were brought prisoners before the above-mentioned judges. Mr. Langdon undertook to plead in favor of the criminals, and his character being so distinguished in the present times, the court readily admitted him to engage, conceiving that so strenuous an advocate for American measures could offer nothing disagreeable to their Honors.

"But in this opinion they quickly perceived themselves mistaken, for Langdon, in his applications to the jury, discovered an inclination to humanity and justice, for which friendly exertions he received a most severe reprimand both from Bowman and Arnold; the former even threatened him with the lawless vengeance of a mob.

"The first person admitted to trial was one Mr. Ballard against whom there appeared nothing but a few words expressing his attachment to the King and government, under which he was educated. The matter being debated with great solemnity and illnature by the court, it was at length committed to the decision of the jury, as an affair of the utmost importance to the security and salvation of the country. The jury would have presently found this harmless person guilty of treasonable designs against the American States, and have sentenced him to a perpetual expulsion from his estate, his family, and his friends, had not Mr. John Patten, his brother and son been more compassionate than the rest. This worthy man alleged that he could not, without offering violence to integrity and conscience, consent that a neighbour should be sent several thousand miles into banishment for no other crime than a few expressions unfavourable to our publick proceed-

ings. Both parties were, however determined not to resign the contest, but marked the altercation with mutual obstinacy for twenty-two hours. In the conclusion they presented themselves before the court and desired their interpretation of this question: 'Is speaking a few exceptionable words counteracting the struggles of the American States for freedom?'

"The judges all replied that every inadvertent word, or any expression that tended to censure the American measures was certainly counteracting them, except Justice North, who added that 'even thinking or conceiving that the publick administrations were unjust or injurious, was evidently a crime which deserved the severe sentence of transportation.' Such stupid and iniquitous decisions as this must excite the indignation of every honest man, and inspire the most hearty contempt of the present government, and plainly evinces that it is founded in absurdity — and cruelty. These explanations of the law gave no satisfaction to the Pattens, but rather confirmed them in their opinion. The elder endeavouring to support his sentiments by some quotations from the Gospel, was silenced by a quick reply from Justice Hobly: 'Sir, we have nothing to do with Scripture in this place, but must form our determinations agreeable to the laws of the state!' The judges, perceiving that they had not a jury agreeable to their designs, dismissed the court, and though Mr. Jones and the other prisoners had been at great expense they refused to admit them to trial, and in conclusion, bound them over to appear on the 4th November, keeping them during the interval under the cruel torments of anxiety and suspense. It is observable that when Justice North espied the Pattens entering the court, he was heard to say, 'We shall not be able to carry our point, while we have such inflexible men upon the jury,' and Mr. Bowman declared 'that these honest men shall either be persecuted by the mob, or else prosecuted as enemies to their country.' The arbitrary proceedings of these magistrates alarmed several conscientious people, who perceived themselves obnoxious, and some to avoid their unjust and merciless tyranny, abandoned their habitations and families and fled out of the country to more distant parts of the Province.

"Among the number we may reckon Mr. John Carlton, of Woolwich, who had been cleared by an unanimous vote of the town, but was pursued by a warrant from these inexorable and avaricious judges. He had the good fortune to conceal himself from their malicious scrutiny, till the season of persecution was over.

"Mr. Stinson, of the same district, was pursued by the same virulent combination, but arming himself to resist the officer who attempted to break into his house with violence, his wife was so terrified at the commotion that she fell in travail and quickly expired.

[The account of the troubles of Rev. J. Bailey at this time, is inserted in the Memoir, pp. 117-119.]

"On the seventh of November a third Tory Court was held at Pownalborough, but no jury appearing, the magistrates were obliged to adjourn to the sixteenth of December. The town of Vassalborough, in the meantime being touched with a little compassion, reconsidered their votes and excluded Mr. Ballard, the Moors, and the Towns from further trial, on condition of their defraying all former expenses, which amounted to one hundred dollars apiece.

"No evidence at all appeared against Mr. Blanchard, and, when the sixteenth of December arrived, the day appointed for the trial, as Justice Howard was attempting to begin his journey from Fort Western, he encountered a terrible fall upon the ice, by which accident he was so wounded, that his attendance at Court was prevented, and there being no other of the Quorum to supply his place, Court was adjourned without day, and as the 'Transportation Act' expired on the first of January, nothing further could be attempted with respect to Mr. Jones.

"In the beginning of winter our persecuting rebels were engaged in another employment, which for a season engaged their whole attention. Capt. Callahan, being driven away by their unjust and cruel persecutions, they determined to take advantage of an obscure act of the present government to seize his estate. The act upon which they proceeded was expressly confined to such persons as had absconded and left

the country in debt; but Callahan, before his departure, had taken care to settle all his affairs, and there was not a single person who had any demand upon his estate. Bowman, however, as Judge of Probate, proceeded to administer, having first taken every method, both by himself and his creatures, to irritate Mrs. Callahan. Some of the messages which were sent to this worthy woman were not only highly illiberal, but scandalously low, dirty and obscene. No gentleman would chuse to treat a female of an infamous character in so scandalous a manner; yet this man is considered as an eminent magistrate, and would be offended if represented otherwise than really genteel and polite. But how such conduct can be reconciled with the profession of Christianity and the knowledge of letters, or the principles of humanity, I cannot conceive. Mrs. Callahan was summoned into a Probate Court, where Bowman sat, swelling in gloomy solemnity, surrounded with accusers and other dark and designing instruments of his indignation. Each one, by his language and appearance had divested himself of every humane and tender sentiment, their principal concern was to display a savage roughness and —, in order to intimidate people and worry the innocent object of their depredations.

“This lady was required by the Justice to render in an account upon oath, of all her lands and effects, but she, being properly instructed by Taylor, her attorney, refused to comply, upon which refusal, Bowman ordered her immediately to prison; she then appealed from his sentence to the Council in Boston, having first procured sufficient bondsmen to prosecute the appeal: but notwithstanding this security, the Judge, by his sovereign authority proceeded to appoint Justice Thwing to settle the estate. The latter, having received his commission, took to his assistance as appraisers, Samuel Emerson, a professed enemy to Capt. Callahan, Richard Kidder, a ductile tool of the faction, and Philip Call, a neighbour, who had received repeated favors from the obnoxious family. These men entered upon there office with uncommon alacrity, and were determined to exceed both law and justice, as well as humanity, in the execution of their trust. They seized the very flax

which Mrs. Callahan had raised and dressed with her own hands, the fowls about the door, and even a canary bird and the cage. Such a mean and unmanly littleness distinguished all the proceedings of our magistrates, such a boyish and ungenerous spirit of revenge appeared in the whole of their conduct, as must render their memory the contempt abhorrence of all; who have any remainder of virtue and humanity in their composition. Mrs. Callahan was so affected with their barbarous treatment that she could not endure to tarry in the country, and, in order that she might have it in her power to obtain justice from the General Court, she set out for Boston, a journey of about one hundred and seventy miles, about Christmas, the snow being very deep and the weather extremely severe."

---

#### NOTE K.

[Pages 126 and 173.]

A poem of some forty stanzas, on his leaving the scene of his labors, was written by Mr. Bailey, probably about the time when that event occurred. It gives a tolerably vivid picture of the scenery near his residence, and enumerates many pleasing objects which owed their culture to his own industry.

#### A FAREWELL TO KENNEBECK,

JUNE, 1779.

Adieu, ye fair domestick scenes  
Of balmy sweets and flowery greens  
And yond' aspiring grove;  
Farewell, ye smiling, chearful seats,  
Ye solitary, calm retreats  
Of innocence and love.

No more your gentle beauties rise,  
No longer to my wishing eyes  
Their pleasing charms impart;

Since doom'd in foreign lands to roam  
Far distant from my much lov'd home,  
With anguish at my heart.

. . . . .

Again my mournful song pursue,  
These grateful objects still in view,  
And every rising scene ;  
My eye with pleasing anguish meets,  
This artless group of blended sweets  
Array'd in virgin green.

When first the blushing morn arose  
To rouse me from the night's repose  
My cares were fixed on you ;  
With rapid haste I wandered forth  
To mark the progress of your growth  
Amidst the glittering dew.

And when the fair, declining day  
Darted his horizontal ray  
To stain the distant hills,  
I felt the gentle vernal breeze  
Rush in soft murmurs thro' the trees  
And play along the hills.

Taught here to wonder and adore  
The wisdom, goodness and the power  
Which in these beauties shine,  
I learned my glowing heart to raise  
In humble gratitude and praise  
To the Great Source Divine.

Adieu, to all my pleasing toil ;  
No more to smooth the rugged soil  
I spend the happy hours ;  
No more employ my hand and care

. . . . .

Along the winding walk to rear  
The tender, smiling flower.

No more for me the lovely rose  
Her open blushing charms disclose,  
Nor breathes her sweet perfume;  
I now renounce my boasted skill  
To plant the snowy daffodil,  
Nor teach her where to bloom.

See there the humble crocus bring  
The earliest tribute of the spring  
Amidst surrounding snows;  
And there the columbine is seen  
In richest robes of cheerful green  
Adorn'd with various hues.

Behold that parti colour'd bed  
Of pinks, their grateful odours shed  
To please on every side;  
The spotted lily towers on high  
And spreads her glories to the sky  
In fair, majestic pride.

In yonder walk let us survey  
The opening tulip, proud and gay,  
In naked beauty rise;  
Foe to the shelter of a shade,  
She stretches her defenceless head,  
Ting'd with unnumber'd dyes.

See there reviving to the sense,  
Emblem of infant innocence,  
Pansies of different hue;  
Here maiden violets strike the sight,  
In yellow, or the purest white,  
Or dressed in heavenly blue.



There stands the bright immortal flower  
In clumps along the bending shore  
Crown'd with a silver plume,  
Amidst the biting frosts and snows,  
With undiminish'd lustre glows,  
In one eternal bloom.

There pushes forward into view  
The mighty wonder of Peru  
Exulting from the ground;  
Blossoms of scarlet, snow and gold  
Mix'd with their gloomy leaves unfold  
And spread their glories round.

Behold a plant majestic rise,  
Erect and tow'ring to the skies,  
Shaggy and rough to sense,  
He stares with round, expanded face  
Full on the sun's meridian rays,  
Picture of impudence.

The poppies here in rich array  
The boldest, glaring tints display  
Of summer's glowing pride;  
The radiant aster, soft and clear,  
The latest blossoms of the year,  
From me their splendours hide.

Ye trees which 'round the borders stand,  
Planted by my laborious hand,  
And nurs'd with fondest care,  
I view the swelling fruit which grows  
In clusters on your pendant boughs,  
Delicious, rich, and rare.

But I, by stubborn fate's decree,  
Am doom'd your grateful shades to flee

With sorrow most profound ;  
Lo, there the hostile sons of war,  
With fierce, indignant rage prepare  
To tear you from the ground.

Ye lofty pines that tower on high,  
That wave and threaten in the sky,  
'Till wintry storms descend,  
And while the winds tremendous war  
In all the rage of hostile power,  
Before the tempest bend.

There hemlocks rear their lofty head,  
And wide their shaggy branches spread,  
In gloomy pride abound ;  
While from their trunks the solemn owl,  
Responsive to the wolves' grim howl,  
Makes all the woods resound.

With reverent awe my eyes pursue  
That ancient oak in open view  
Extending wide his arms ;  
With thunders oft thou didst engage,  
And stood the loud, conflicting rage  
Of all the northern storms.

In pensive thought I often rove  
Thro' the tall forest and the grove,  
When vernal beauties rise ;  
And when the summer's charms decay  
I then your trembling leaves survey,  
Stain'd with autumnal dies.

Teach me, ye Muses, to describe  
The wonders of the winged tribe  
And sing their power to please,  
While music from their artless throats  
In tender, wild harmonious notes  
Mix with the whispering breeze.

Adieu, ye plains and mossy rocks,  
Frequented by the browsing flocks;  
    And yonder distant hills,  
Ye fountains clear and murmuring floods,  
That stream along the dusky woods,  
    Or fall in tinkling rills.

Ye verdant banks of Kennebeck,  
Which numerous plants and flowers bedeck,  
    Thou great majestick stream,  
To swell whose silent, sullen tide  
A thousand lesser rivers glide,  
    No more my favorite theme.

Oft have I seen thy waters pour,  
And with rough horrors foam and roar  
    Adown the precipice,  
And with impetuous fury force  
Along the winding shores its course  
    To mingle with the seas.

My throbbing heart with sorrow glows  
And feels a multitude of woes,  
    When thro' yond' shady trees  
I view that solemn House of Prayer,  
And at the sight let fall a tear  
    My anguish to appease.

Rejoic'd to see each others face,  
We met in this devoted place  
    To learn the heavenly way,  
Till impious and insulting foes  
With mad, envenom'd zeal arose  
    Their vengeance to display.

Those sturdy sons, who never fear  
The hottest wrath of Heaven to dare,  
    Who glory in their shame,

Forbid that we our hearts should raise  
 In public prayer and songs of praise  
 To the Eternal Name.

I feel a thousand anxious fears,  
 And oft bewail in silent tears  
 My friends' unhappy fate,  
 Involv'd in scenes of deep distress,  
 Expos'd, despairing of success,  
 To Whigs' revengeful hate.

In fervent strains I must implore  
 The smiles of that propitious Pow'r  
 Who pities human woes;  
 May He attend your plaintive grief,  
 Afford protection and relief,  
 And bless you with repose.

O Lord, with speedy justice rise  
 And frown upon these enemies  
 To virtue's sacred name,  
 But save the honest and the good,  
 And fill the sons of rage and blood  
 With penitence and shame.

Once more with heavy parting sighs  
 We roll around our misty eyes;  
 My partner calls to mind  
 Her babes beneath the heaving ground,  
 And mourns and weeps with grief profound  
 To leave their dust behind.

---

NOTE L.

[Page 191.]

The name of Capt. Henry Mowat is still disliked, if not detested, by many, on account of his commanding the expedition which, in Oct., 1775, reduced Falmouth, now Portland,

to ashes. It may be well to say, in passing, that Mr. Bailey was on a visit at that place at the time it was burned, and that he has left a written account of the transaction, which throws a fuller light upon it than is contained in the published narratives, as it relates occurrences that were either unknown to, or suppressed by, those who have heretofore undertaken to describe it.

Although Capt. Mowat acted upon positive orders from Admiral Graves, in burning Falmouth, yet he has been condemned with as much warmth, as if he merely gratified his own private antipathies.

And the historian of Maine\* publishes a letter written by this officer to the people of the place doomed to destruction, in which, by italicising words, he evidently wishes the reader to notice that ignorance was a characteristic of the writer as well as cruelty. All this may be as has been thus represented. But as an act of simple justice to the memory of Capt. Mowat the following letter to Mr. Bailey, which accompanied the child of the former, is here inserted. The reader may be assured that it is copied *exactly* as it was written. Reminding him, that according to the usage of that time, many more words began with capital letters than at present, the letter is submitted to his perusal, that he may decide whether or not is it the production of a brutal or ignorant man.

“HALIFAX the 11<sup>th</sup> Aug<sup>t</sup>. 1782.

“REV<sup>d</sup>. SIR,

I have for some time been in expectation of receiving Your answer to my Letter by Mr. Lovett on the Subject of my Child; but having been given to understand by him and other friends of yours that I may assure myself of your receiving my Boy, I have at last determined to send him, and I have made choice of his going by water, as I cannot accompany him myself by land—a satisfaction I wished much to have enjoyed, and what I have had in view for a long while, but being now within a few days of leaving this for York in my way for England, will prevent me the pleasure of seeing

---

\* Williamson's History of Maine, ii. 435.

you and that of delivering up my Dear Child into your care, which I now do, with all the endearing and tender feelings of a Father, earnestly requesting you to receive him in that light. His Aunt accompanies him in the desire of seeing him safe with you, and I shall leave directions with Mr. Thompson (one of his Guardians) to pay you the Charge of his Yearly Board and Education: every other necessary will be sent to him by Miss Peak and other friends, whom you will be pleased to correspond with in my absence. I have sent a Black Servant of my own in order to assist you in the care of him. This man has been mine for the last 8 years, and I hope he will behave so as to become useful to you as well as the child, and I have laid my Commands on him to obey you the same as myself, and not to do anything or move from your House without your leave. Whatever Quarter my professional Duty may call me will not prevent my Corresponding with you, and I beg you will write often, and put your Letters under Cover to Alex<sup>r</sup>. Thompson, Esq<sup>r</sup>. at Halifax, and he will forward them to James Sykes, Esq<sup>r</sup>. Crutched Friars, London, where they will be taken care of. The indulgence of a very tender Mother and other friends over the Boy I am fearful may occasion you and Mrs. Bailey more trouble before he forgets it than I wish he should, but I hope in time his natural disposition will appear, and so far as may be comprehended from his infant years I am in hopes he will not give more than what may be expected. The wind coming favourable this morning hurries me in hopes of the Vessels getting away. My respectful Compliments wait on Mrs. Bailey, I present the same to you and am,

Rev'd Dear Sir,

Your most obedient

Humble servant,

H. MOWAT.

*Rev. Mr. Bailey, Annapolis."*

It should be stated that the chirography of the above letter is such that it would be creditable to any person.



## APPENDIX.

---

### ST. JOHN'S CHURCH, POWNALBOROUGH.

Of those who may have been interested in this narrative, some, doubtless, will be desirous to learn the history of St. John's Parish, Pownalborough, after Mr. Bailey's departure. At that time both the church and parsonage were standing. It is necessary to mention this, since a somewhat different impression has prevailed. Among other mis-statements made in a newspaper article in July, 1848, is the following: "Then they" (i. e. the Whigs) "took the remedy into their own hands: they demolished the church, tore down the priest's house, and drove him out of town." An exploit, (which, if it ever happened,) would no doubt have conferred all due honor on the valiant actors in it! The article continues: "He and Episcopacy never appeared there afterwards."

We will now state some of the facts in the case:—Nathaniel Bailey, brother of the subject of this Memoir, removed into the parsonage house immediately after it was vacated by its former tenants, in June, 1779, and remained in it nearly a year. Major Samuel Goodwin wrote to Mr. Bailey, under date of Pownalborough, June 9th, 1784. This letter contained a subscription paper, which he wished Mr. Bailey to circulate in order to collect funds for the purpose to be mentioned. The paper states, that "after Mr. Bailey went away some persons began to take the windows out of St. John's Church, Pownalborough, and did carry one off, so we were obliged to take all the rest down. The house is stripped and running to ruin.



If not repaired, both church and house will be lost. We being a frontier town, are, by the late wars, reduced so low that we are not able to repair them without the charity of our good friends to help us." The same person also wrote to Mr. Bailey, October 5th, 1785: "Our church is all going to pieces, the roof is coming down, the rafters and beams broke with heavy snows last winter. What application can we make to Dr. Seabury? I wrote to the Rev. Sam'l Parker for advice last year, but no answer." Under date of June 7th, 1787, Major Goodwin writes: "John Sylvester (John) Gardiner reads prayers and sermons on the Lord's day."

This appears to be the last intelligence concerning Mr. Bailey's Parish on the Kennebec during his life. It will be remembered that while he resided there, attempts had been made at more than one time to establish a Congregational Society in that part of the town. But twenty-two years elapsed after his departure before this measure was effected. A meeting-house for this denomination was built about a mile distance from the site of St. John's Church.\* Their first and only minister remained with them about twenty-five years, and then left. The house has at various times since been occupied by Universalists. Previous to this, *i. e.*, in 1794, this part of the township, which was called the West Precinct of Pownalborough, was incorporated into a town by the name of DRESDEN. The other portions were called *Wiscassett*, and New Milford, (till changed, in 1811, to *Alma*.)

Within a few years a small settlement has grown up about three-fourths of a mile easterly of the spot formerly occupied by St. John's Church. Near this settlement a small Methodist meeting-house has been built, and a "Union meeting-house" has been erected in this village.

On Whitsunday, June 11, 1848, Evening Service of the P. Episcopal Church was held in the Union meeting-house spoken of by the Rt. Rev. George Burgess, D. D., who had been consecrated the year previous as the first Bishop of the Dio-

---

\* Although this Society was incorporated in 1793, it was not till 1801 that the Congregational Church was organized and Rev. Freeman Parker was ordained.—*Greenleaf's Ecol. Sketches*, p. 151.

cese of Maine. Arrangements were also made for the establishment of a Sunday School under the charge of a Candidate for Orders.

During the long interval which followed the last performance of the services of the church in this town; the territory occupied by the church building, and that reclaimed from the wilderness for a garden by the Rev. Mr. Bailey, had relapsed almost into its primitive state. The foundations of the sacred edifice are still visible, as are also the rough flat stones\* erected at the graves of the old parishioners. The cellar of the parsonage is still distinctly to be seen. The company which had given the land embracing the territory named, and a glebe, had closed their concerns. After their right to this property had been legally determined it was sold, and the income was to be applied to the support of an Episcopal minister, when one should be settled in Dresden, and until then to a resident Congregational minister. The minister of this denomination, before alluded to, enjoyed the benefit of this fund for a time. On the cessation of that persuasion, the fund was left to accumulate, ready for its originally intended use.

The new Parish of St. John's, Dresden, was organized in the presence of the Bishop of the Diocese, January 26th, 1849, and admitted into the Union with the Convention of Maine at its next session. Rev. Edwin W. Murray was appointed Missionary to this Parish, and entered upon his labors in October of the year last named.

In 1850 the ladies of Christ Church, Gardiner, presented to St. John's Church a set of Communion Plate, and a handsome Bible and Prayer Books for the desk.

Rev. Mr. Murray resigned the Rectorship of the Parish in 1850, and his place was supplied by Rev. W. H. C. Robertson. After an absence of two years Mr. Murray returned, and is now engaged in this, his first field of labor.

On the 17th of November, 1852, the "Union meeting-house," before spoken of, was consecrated to the worship of God,

---

\* The grave of one of the last Vestrymen of St. John's has white marble grave stones. One of them is inscribed as follows: Mr. George Goud, died May 18, 1826, Æ 91.

according to the rites and usages of the Protestant Episcopal Church. On this occasion the Bishop of the Diocese preached from 1 Kings xviii. 30: "And he repaired the altar of the Lord that was broken down."

---

### CHURCH AT GEORGETOWN.

"The town of Georgetown was incorporated in 1718, and then included all the territory within the present limits of Bath, Woolwich and Phipsburg."\* Fort St. George, erected by the colony of 1607, was in the present town of Phipsburg. That fort contained a church. Thus it will follow that the Episcopal Church, which was formed in the last century within the bounds of ancient Georgetown, as above described, may be considered as the legitimate successor of the first Protestant congregation which ever existed in the Northern United States.

The notices of this Church, scattered throughout the foregoing Biography, and the sketches of the Rev. Messrs. MacClenachan and Wheeler, in the Notes, contain nearly all the information that it has been possible to gather of the condition of this Parish up to the time of the Rev. Mr. Bailey's leaving the country. The following is the only report that Mr. Wheeler is known to have sent to England:—

"The Rev. Mr. Wheeler, in his letter of Nov. 20th, 1769, acquaints the Society that his Parish extends near twenty miles westward and twelve miles eastward. That there are about 200 families; some Presbyterians, some Independents, and some Papists. His people have erected the frame of a church since his coming; he has statedly preached twice on Sundays, besides giving lectures on week days, and has baptized twenty-eight children."

The mention of the church building in the above extract reminds us to speak of its locality. The Kennebec River runs in a very direct course by the present city of Bath. This fea-

ture of the river at this place caused the territory on its banks to be called by the early settlers Long Reach. At some distance below the city the Kennebec turns suddenly at right angles, and then quickly resumes its previous southerly course. It was at this point that the church spoken of was erected.

The family of the Lithgows, some of whom were conspicuous in the colonial times in this part of the Province, erected, in 1766, a spacious and what was then, doubtless, considered to be an elegant mansion very near the church.\* Some years since the house and farm passed into other hands. When the present proprietors took possession of their property the church was standing. They describe the church as "a low building, with a double floor, but no marks of pews upon it. The only ornament was a simple beading upon the tie beams." The churchyard has been ploughed up, and barns and barnyards occupy its place. The church itself was used as a barn, till a portion of it having blown down and killed a valuable animal, the remainder of the building was demolished. The sacred edifice was situated but a few rods from the river, some distance from any settlement. This fact shows that in the absence of any county roads, the river was the highway of the inhabitants, and the small boat their usual means of travelling. Tradition still commemorates the pious life and conversation of a lady of the Drummond family, who was baptized in this church, and who has but recently deceased.

Within three miles of the site of this church, and in the city of Bath, an Episcopal congregation has been gathered, which has attained to a considerable degree of strength and prosperity, and now occupies a church building, which was consecrated January 19th, 1853. It is to be hoped that it may prove to be the continuation of the former Church in Georgetown, as the new parish in Dresden is the resuscitation of St. John's Church, Pownalborough. Should this be so, the ante Revolutionary churches in Maine, will, after a long interval, again exist, conferring their blessings upon some of the descendants of those who formerly worshipped in the words of the same liturgy.

---

\* Rev. Mr. Wheeler resided for a while in the Lithgow house, as appears from one of his letters to Rev. Jacob Bailey.

## ST. PAUL'S CHURCH, PORTLAND.

All the information which the present writer has of the early history of Episcopacy in the above place, is derived from a daily Journal, kept by Rev. Thomas Smith, Pastor of the First Congregational Society of Falmouth, which was the ante Revolutionary name of a township, part of which now forms the city of Portland. His Journal, with the very full Notes of William Willis, Esq., in his edition, 1849, have furnished most of the material for the following account.

In the summer of 1754, Governor Shirley, accompanied by several persons of distinction, embarked at Boston in the Province frigate Massachusetts, for the purpose of meeting the Norridgewock Indians at Falmouth, and forming a treaty with them. Rev. Charles Brockwell was then Assistant Minister of King's Chapel, Boston, a Church in which Gov. Shirley was a worshipper. Mr. Brockwell was probably in the company which attended the Governor. The Journal before spoken of contains the following:—

"June 26, 1754. The Governor got in this morning.

"June 30. (*Sunday*.) Parson Brockwell preached here, A. M., and carried on in the Church form.

• • • • •  
 "July 14. Mr. Brockwell preached."

More than nine years passed away and no further notice of the Episcopal Church is to be found.

Nov. 4th, 1763, forty-one persons entered into a written agreement to procure a lot of land and to build "a meeting-house for Divine Service." In July, of the following year, an increased number expressed, in writing, under their hands, their desire "that the worship to be carried on in said house should be agreeable to the laws of Great Britain."

"July 23, 1764. The new meeting men had a meeting and declared for the Church. They have been in a sad toss since the Parish meeting, and made great uproar, getting to sign for the Church. They began to frame the house.

"Aug. 31. There is a sad uproar about Wiswell, who has

declared for the Church, and accepted, (a day or two since,) of a call our Churchmen have given him to be their minister.

"*Sept. 2. (Sunday.)* A great day this. Mr. Hooper\* preached to our new Church people, and baptized several children.

"*Sept. 3d.* The corner stone of the Church was laid by the Wardens, who, with their officers, were chosen to-day.

"*Sept. 9.* Mr. Wiswell preached in the Town House.

"*Sept. 30.* Mr. Wiswell preached in the Court House to-day to a small company.

"*Oct. 8.* Mr. Wiswell sailed in the Mast ship, Capt. Haggett," (to England,) for Episcopal Ordination.

Mr. Wiswell returned from England and commenced his labors in St. Paul's Parish. In the conflagration of the town in 1775, by Capt. Mowat, the church was burned and the minister left. The services of Mr. Parker, as lay reader, were engaged in 1785 and continued for about two years. Mr. Thomas Oxnard succeeded, and officiated in a similar capacity for the next five years. After him Mr. Joseph Hooper acted as lay reader for about a year. These services were held in hired rooms till 1787, when a wooden church was built.

After the discontinuance of Mr. Hooper's services, there were no regular exercises until 1797, when Rev. Joseph Warren took charge of the Parish and remained till 1800. Rev. Timothy Hilliard succeeded him the next year and continued as minister till 1809.

During the incumbency of Mr. Hilliard, in 1803, the wooden church was abandoned for one built of brick. After Mr. Hilliard's resignation, there were occasional services, only, for some years. Rev. G. W. Olney officiated during the summer of 1817. Rev. P. S. Tenbroeck was instituted in 1818, and was Rector for the succeeding thirteen years. He was followed, after two years intermission, by Rev. G. W. Chapman, D. D., who left in 1835.

Rev. A. H. Vinton was Rector a few months till about

---

\* Rev. William Hooper, of Trinity Church, Boston, who Mr. Smith says, Aug. 30, "came here yesterday."

Easter, 1836. Rev. Thomas M. Clark officiated during the summer of that year and was succeeded by Rev. John N. French, who continued during the next three years. In 1839, St. Paul's Parish having become embarrassed, St. Stephen's Parish was formed. The property of the former was purchased by the latter society. Rev. James Pratt became Rector in 1840.

In 1851, a second Parish was organized in Portland under the name of St. Luke's, of which Rt. Rev. Horatio Southgate, D. D., was the first Rector.

---

### CHRIST CHURCH, GARDINER.

To Dr. Sylvester Gardiner this Church is indebted for its origin and liberal patronage. He erected, at his own expense, a church and parsonage in 1772, which was dedicated by Rev. Jacob Bailey, August 16th, of that year. The church had a spire, but was unfinished at the time of the American Revolution. It would seem that it also was furnished with a bell, for at the Easter meeting, in 1773, of King's Chapel, Boston, it was voted "that the old bell, with the Appurtenances be given to the Saint Ann's Church, Gardinerston."\* In 1793 a Parish was incorporated by the name of the Episcopal Society, in Pittston, that name having been previously given to the town which had been incorporated, embracing lands on both sides of the Kennebec River. As soon as the Parish was incorporated the executors of Dr. Gardiner proceeded to complete the church edifice, and the Rev. Joseph Warren was chosen Rector. The church, yet incomplete, was burned by an insane person. Another edifice took its place shortly after, which, though only partly finished, was occupied for public worship. Rev. Mr. Warren left in 1796, and he was succeeded by Rev. Mr. Bowers. Mr. Bowers removed to Marblehead in 1802. In the summer of that year Mr. N. B. Crocker read prayers three months. In 1803 that part of

---

\* Greenwood's History of King's Chapel, p. 132.

Pittston lying on the west side of the Kennebec River was incorporated into a new town by the name of Gardiner. Rev. Samuel Haskell, Rector of Christ Church, Boston, became Rector of this Parish in 1803, and left in 1809. The church was closed for the following year, when it was opened under the ministrations of Mr. Aaron Humphrey, a Methodist minister, who more than a year afterwards was admitted to Holy Orders. Mr. Humphrey left in 1814. Rev. Mr. Leonard, of Vermont, officiated in the latter part of 1815. Rev. G. W. Olney became Rector in October, 1817. His popularity was so great that a larger church building was required in a short time. About this time an act was obtained changing the name of the Parish to Christ Church, Gardiner.

The new and elegant structure, built of stone, was consecrated October 19th, 1820. Its cost was rising \$14,000, and the land occupied by it was given to the Parish. Mr. Olney resigned the Rectorship in the spring of 1826, and was succeeded, temporarily, by Rev. B. C. C. Parker, who was followed by Rev. E. M. P. Wells. In the autumn of 1827, Mr. Wells resigned the Parish, and lay reading was again resorted to for a short time. The Rev. T. S. W. Mott officiated for a few weeks in the latter part of this year, but on account of ill health he withdrew to the south. The Rev. William Horton was minister during the winter, and in the spring, Rev. N. M. Jones officiated for a few weeks. In September, 1828, Rev. Mr. Mott was instituted as Rector of the Parish, but his health was such that he returned again to the south, having officiated but one Sunday. Rev. Lot Jones was engaged to supply Rev. Mr. Mott's place during his absence. Mr. Jones left in May, and was immediately succeeded by Rev. Isaac Peck. Mr. Mott having resigned the Parish, Mr. Peck was chosen Rector in April, 1830. In October of the following year Mr. Peck resigned his Rectorship. In the spring of 1831, Rev. Joel Clap took charge of the Parish, and held it nine years, when he removed from the State. Rev. William R. Babcock entered upon his duties as Rector in October, 1840. He resigned his office in 1847, and was succeeded by Rt. Rev. George Burgess, D. D., first Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the Diocese of Maine.



## KITTERY.

A church building was erected in that part of Kittery now called Elliot, near the banks of the Piscataqua, and about six miles from Portsmouth. Rev. Arthur Brown, Rector of Queen's Chapel, in the last named place, occasionally officiated in this church, and reported to the Venerable Society that in Kittery there were fifteen communicants of the Church of England. For many years Mr. Brown received from the Venerable Society £15 sterling per annum for officiating at Kittery, in addition to £60 sterling, his stipend as Missionary at Portsmouth. Mr. Brown died in 1773.

The "New England Historical and Genealogical Register," contains (vol. iv. p. 38) the following article:—

"The following is the inscription upon the tomb-stone of the Minister of the Episcopal Church in Kittery, near Elliot, which Church, it is supposed, became extinct at the time of his death. The grave is in a field belonging to Mr. Fernald.

"'Here Lyes Buried the Body of the Rev'd Mr. John Eveleth, who departed this Life Aug. 1st Anno: Dom: 1734, aged 65 years.'

"Epitaphs from South Berwick, &c., communicated for the Register, by Mr. John S. H. Fogg, of South Berwick, Me."

Mr. Eveleth was not a clergyman of the Episcopal Church. The following is stated on the authority of Rev. Joseph B. Felt, Librarian of the Massachusetts Historical Society:—

"Rev. John Eveleth was the son of Joseph Eveleth, who belonged to Ipswich, Mass. He was graduated at Harvard College in 1689, preached as a Congregational minister at Manchester, Mass.; was ordained in that denomination at Stow in 1700, dismissed in 1717, settled at Kennebunk Port, dismissed 1729, and was at the latter place 1732."

The compiler of the present Memoir would not have inserted this Note were it not that a tradition is current in the neighborhood of Mr. Eveleth's burying place, similar to the statement furnished to the N. E. Historical and Genealogical

Register. As the article copied from the Register may tend to extend and perpetuate an erroneous idea, it seemed desirable to correct it in a work treating of the Ecclesiastical History of Maine.

---

### PROSPECT.

Williamson says,\* in speaking of the town of Prospect: †  
“Before the war of the Revolution, Thomas Goldthwait and Francis Bernard, son of the Governor, took from the Waldo proprietors a grant of 2,700 acres, near the southerly part of the town; in consideration of which, they engaged to settle thirty families and an Episcopal minister, and to build a church. They did, indeed, rear a small brick chapel, and attempt a settlement; but being Tories, they, in the war, left their country and forfeited their property. The plantation continued, and in 1784 there were in Prospect twenty-four families.”

---

### REV. WILLIAM W. WHEELER, MISSIONARY AT GEORGETOWN.

The subject of the following notice was the son of William Wheeler, and was born at Concord, Mass., Dec. 24th, 1734. He was a classmate of Rev. Jacob Bailey. In Mr. Bailey's Journals, during the time he was in college, mention is made of a visit he paid to Mr. Wheeler's family. This and subsequent notices show that the father of this gentleman was possessed of a large farm in Concord, and one of his daughters is described as a young lady of talent, and considerable literary attainment.

On the 18th November, 1765, Mr. Bailey wrote to Rev. Mr. Caner, minister of King's Chapel, Boston, as follows: “Since the Society have determined to send a Missionary to Georgetown, I would intreat you to look out for some suitable gentle-

---

\* History of Maine, Vol. II., p. 565.

† Prospect is on the Penobscot River, near its mouth.

man, that we may recommend for Orders as soon as possible. I have wrote to one Mr. Wheeler of Concord, a classmate of mine, who several years ago was inclined to the Church. He sustains a good character, and it is probable, he will soon wait upon you for directions."

From a letter from Mr. Wheeler, dated Concord, Dec. 5th, 1765, the following is taken. After expressing his friendly sentiments towards the Church of England, he says "I am constrained to return this answer, viz.: that if the proposals you mention are strictly and absolutely complied with, viz.: if the people of Georgetown will enter into bonds to furnish the Missionary with £20 sterling per annum, and a dwelling-house, &c., beside the £50 sterling granted by the Society, I say, I will accept of it, and am willing to go for Ordination as soon as opportunity permits." A letter from Mr. Wheeler, Concord, May 17th, 1766, acknowledges the receipt of letters from Rev. Jacob Bailey, since the date of the letter just quoted. Mr. Wheeler assigns indisposition as the cause of his not before writing or visiting Kennebec. He says: "I have waited upon the Rev. Dr. Caner, (for such he is now,) and Dr. Gardiner, and find them both very friendly and kind, and much of gentlemen. Since I received your last, I have received a kind invitation to the westward, to Marlboro' and Hopkinton, of the same nature as your's, by a letter from a gentleman there, and he begs that I would see him before I come to the eastward." From a letter from Mr. Wheeler in November of this year, it would seem that he had had an interview with Mr. Butler, one of the principal Churchmen at Georgetown, and that probably an arrangement would be made for his going to that place. Mr. Wheeler says: "I am at present engaged to officiate at the Church in Cambridge. They have a minister appointed, Mr. Sergeant, but he is not expected until spring." Mr. Wheeler writes to Mr. Bailey from Boston, Aug. 5th, 1767: "The Society has been so good as to grant me £20 sterling for my services at Cambridge, besides what the people gave me, which is very kind and unexpected to me."

Mr. Wheeler was recommended to the Society by the clergy

in Convention assembled in Boston, June 17, 1767. The Rev. Secretary of the Venerable Society adds a postscript to his letter of Dec. 1767, in which he says: "Mr. Wheeler is arrived and will be ordained for Georgetown very soon." He returned from England, having received Holy Orders there, and arrived in Boston, in the ship *Boscawen*, Capt. Jacobson, in May, 1768.

Mr. Wheeler left Georgetown in April, 1772, for Newport, R. I. where he had been engaged to assist Rev. Mr. Bisset, Rector of Trinity Church in that town. In a letter dated Sept. 8th, 1779, in which he gives an account of the situation of some of his brother clergy, Mr. Bailey says: "I forgot to mention Mr. Wheeler, who is neither Whig nor Tory, but so terrified with both as to retire from human society. He lives like an hermit, and employs his time in making butter and cheese." Mr. Wheeler was unanimously chosen Rector of St. Andrew's Church, Scituate, and Trinity Church, Marshfield, May 15th, 1783. Rev. Samuel Parker, D. D., wrote from Boston, Nov. 22d, 1788: "Mr. Wheeler is and has been for some years past, preaching in rotation at Scituate, Marshfield, Bridgewater and Braintree, and has lately married a daughter of Rev. Mr. Thompson, of Scituate. He is so much in Freeman's plan that he would not join his brethren in this State in protesting against Freeman's ordination." In the Journal of Massachusetts Convention for 1790, Mr. Wheeler is designated as Rector of St. Thomas's Church, Taunton, in addition to the Churches before named.

Mr. Wheeler died at Scituate, January 14th, 1810, aged 75 years.

The present writer has no means of forming an estimate of his character. Soon after his death an obituary notice appeared in one of the Boston newspapers. This notice is devoted mainly to praising his political principles, and if the writer's ignorance of the character of Mr. Wheeler is to be measured by his ignorance of some of the leading facts in the clerical life of the subject of his sketch, but little reliance can be placed upon this obituary notice.

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the

the fact that the  
the fact that the  
the fact that the



Copy of Plaster

H. W. Smith, Esq.

*your humble servant  
Silv' Gardner*



had witnessed in France, gave him such a dislike to the nation, that in after life he would not consent that his children should be instructed in the French language, lest their minds should be corrupted by the literature of that country.

Upon his return he married Anne, daughter of Dr. Gibbons, a wealthy physician of Boston, and was soon engaged in that place in an extensive and lucrative practice. He also lectured on Anatomy, illustrating his lectures by preparations he had brought from Europe. He opened in Boston a large establishment for the sale and importation of drugs. By these means he acquired an immense estate.

Having become one of the proprietors of the Kennebec purchase, covering a tract of land from Bath to Norridgewock, some fifty miles in length, and extending fifteen miles on each side of the Kennebec River, he directed his energies to the improvement of that wilderness country. Almost the entire management of the affairs of the company was committed to him. He managed the trust with great energy and judgment, and at his own personal expense built houses and cleared farms which he well stocked, at the Chops of Merry-meeting Bay and Lynd's Island, Pittston, Winslow, and Pownalborough, at the latter of which places he built mills. The tract of land near the Cobbosee Contee River, was obtained by him of his associates, and he labored and expended much to bring it forward. He built houses, dams, and mills, at this place, now the city of Gardiner; introduced many settlers and advanced them means necessary to their establishment, amounting in the aggregate to a large sum, most of which was never repaid him.

He built a church and parsonage at Gardinerston, (as it was then called,) in 1772, but was interrupted in his benevolent labors by the political troubles of the time, and was obliged to leave the church uncompleted. He was one of the most active and efficient persons in building King's Chapel, Boston, and contributed largely to its erection, and was for many years one of its wardens.

Dr. Gardiner left Boston with the British army, when that town was evacuated. His property was all confiscated, but



owing to some legal informality the confiscation did not hold, and his estate descended to his heirs.

Dr. Gardiner died at Newport, August, 1786, in the 80th year of his age; the citizens, at his funeral, bestowing those marks of respect which evidenced their high estimation of his character. His remains were deposited under Trinity Church, in that place, and a monument, (with a Latin inscription, by his grandson, Rev. Dr. Gardiner, former Rector of Trinity Church, Boston,) has been erected to his memory in Christ Church, Gardiner, Maine. His agency in influencing Mr. Bailey to visit London to receive Holy Orders has been already named in the Memoir. To him it was owing that an Episcopal Missionary was sent to Pownalborough, a glebe given in that town, and a church and parsonage erected thereon. His building a church and parsonage at Gardiner, at his own expense, has been already mentioned. To that Parish he gave a glebe lot, which now yields a handsome income yearly. The church, not being completed at his decease, he directed in his will that it should be finished by his executors, and the expense charged to his estate, and he endowed it with a legacy of £28 sterling per annum, to be paid forever to the Rector. Says one, who knew him well: "But his piety was not shown only in these public acts. His family was the well ordered family of a Christian, from whose altar the morning and evening sacrifice of praise and thanksgiving regularly ascended. Believing the observances enjoined by the Church to be eminently calculated to afford spiritual sustenance to the soul, and to keep alive the spirit of piety, he strictly observed all its ordinances, its Festivals and Fasts, and on the greater Fasts spent the whole day, excepting what was occupied by family and public worship, in the retirement of his closet. During the latter years of his life, secluded from business, he spent much of his time in religious contemplation, and compiled a book of devotion, evidencing not only sterling piety and sincerity of purpose, but bearing the impress of a heart truly and deeply warmed with the love of Christ, and filled with that fervency of devotion which can only be the fruit of man's deep sense of his need of a Redeemer. He had a large

edition of this book printed at his own expense, and which he designed for gratuitous distribution."

A highly esteemed and respected friend has had the opportunity of perusing the little book above-named, which is entitled "A Daily Companion to the Closet;" a compilation of prayers, with a few hymns and practical dissertations; "the whole collected and compiled from the Common Prayer, and from some of the most pious writers. By a Layman. London: Printed for the Author; 1785." The friend alluded to expresses his high gratification at the perusal of this volume, as evidently the production of one of earnest, habitual prayer, and exercised with the deep convictions and sanctified desires of private, personal religion.

The Episcopal Church in Maine is under great obligations to Dr. Silvester Gardiner, for the warm interest he manifested in her, and the sacrifices and exertions he made in her behalf in the days of her weakness. It is very pleasant to know that he was deeply imbued with the spirit of the Gospel. The inscription on his monument, before named, fails to do him justice in this particular, and the writer of this sketch delights to have it in his power to be enabled to convey, however feebly, a more true picture of his religious character.

Contribution to the list of Three Hundred Ministers, of the different denominations, who have entered the ministry of the Protestant Episcopal Church in the United States:—

Rt. Rev. EDWARD BASS, of Newburyport, Mass.

*See Biographical Sketch.*

Rev. WILLIAM McCLENNATHAN.

*Note D to the foregoing Memoir.*

Rev. JACOB BAILEY.

*See foregoing Memoir.*

Rev. WILLIAM W. WHEELER.

Rev. JOHN WISWALL.

*Willis Smith's Journal*, p. 160, Note 1.

Rev. JOHN RUGGLES COTTING, of Waldoborough, Me.

In 1812 "he changed his sentiments, and became an Episcopalian."

*Greenleaf's Ecclesiastical Sketches*, p. 175.

Rev. WILLIAM CLARKE, Rector of St. Paul's Church, Dedham, Mass.

Authority: *Rev. S. B. Babcock's Letter*, Aug. 9, 1851.

Rev. JOSHUA WINGATE WEEKS, Rector of St. Michael's Church, Marblehead, Mass.

*See Biographical Sketch.*

## ABSTRACT OF SERMONS.

The compiler of this Memoir, feeling desirous of forming a correct estimate of Mr. Bailey's literary qualifications and religious views, made a careful abstract of most of his sermons which came into his possession. He had written on the abstract the words: *The following is not intended for publication.* But a friend, well qualified to advise in such matters, wished him to strike out the words above-named and hand the abstract, with other "copy," to the printer. My clerical brethren can appreciate the labor necessary to make an analysis of such a large number of sermons, many of them imperfect, and some not easy to be deciphered; and if an error in judgment has been committed, they will, it is believed, pardon it, in consideration of the nature of the task which I imposed upon myself.

*St. Luke* xxii. 44. On the sufferings of Christ. 1759.  
A quotation is made in this discourse from "an Ancient Father, on the wide extent of the efficacy of Christ's sufferings." The divinity of Christ and his equality with the Father, are emphatically set forth in this sermon. [This discourse is numbered eight by Mr. Bailey.]

Preached in  
Gloucester  
and Cape  
Ann Harbor,  
March and  
August.  
No. 1.

1 *Chronicles* xxviii. 9. [Imperfect.]

Hampton,  
Falls, J's 3d.  
No. 2.

*Hebrews* ix. 26. Christ's sacrifice.

No. 3.

*Psalms* i. Exposition of this Psalm. [Imperfect.]

No. 4.

Imperfect. This MS. contains also a list of books distributed by order of Venerable Society, sundry baptisms, and memos. of the sickness of Mr. Bailey.

1760.  
No. 5.

The greater part of a Thanksgiving Sermon: "this is the first opportunity that ever presented of having a Thanksgiving celebrated in this place," Attacks

1761.  
Frankfort.  
Dec'r 3d.  
No. 6.

by Indians. "These events, we all know, have frequently happened in this country till the present and the year past."

---

1762.  
Frankfort,  
December.  
No. 6a.

*Psalm cxvii.* 1st and part of 2d verse. A Thanksgiving Sermon. I. Consider the various instances of Divine goodness: 1. In continuing the life and prosperity of our Sovereign; 2. In the preservation of the Queen and the birth of a Prince; 3. Continuance of our civil and religious liberties; 4. In success of our armies, both by sea and land, *e. g.* conquest of Havana, expulsion of the French from New Foundland, the capture of several ships of war from the French and Spaniards; 5. The prospect of an honorable and lasting peace.

---

Frankfort,  
August 29th.  
No. 8b.

*Psalm viii.* Exposition of this Psalm.

---

1763.  
Frankfort,  
July 18th.  
No. 7.  
No. 8.

*Proverbs x.* 19. Sins of the tongue.

---

Frankfort,  
June 10th.  
No. 9.

*Esther vii.* 6. Guilt the cause of fear. Example of Haman.

---

1764.  
Frankfort,  
March 22d.  
No. 10.

*St. Matthew v.* 37. A proper use of the tongue enjoined. [This sermon was corrected by Rev. J. W. Weeks, Numbered 2.]

---

Place and  
date want'g.  
No. 11.

Part of a Christmas Sermon. St. Chrysostom quoted.

---

1765.  
Frankfort,  
March 1st.  
No. 12.

*Daniel iv.* 30. On self-conceit. [Numbered 11.]

---

Frankfort,  
July 12th.  
No. 13.

*Proverbs xxvi.* 12. On self-conceit. [Numbered 21.]

---

1766.  
Frankfort,  
Febr'y 21st.  
No. 14.

*Genesis xix.* 26. Punishment of Lot's wife. [This sermon was corrected by Rev. J. W. Weeks.]

*Acts* xvii. 25 to 28. A Fast Day Sermon.

Frankfort,  
April 24th.  
No. 15.

*Genesis* xx. 11. The fear of the Lord. 2d division: When any person and place may be said to be destitute of the fear of the Lord. 1. When the inhabitants of any place are addicted to *intemperance and immodesty*; 2. When they give themselves up to *profane swearing*; 3. When a spirit of lying universally prevails; 4. When they give themselves up to *slander*, revile and backbite their neighbors; 5. When a spirit of *contention* and *quarrelling* prevails; 6. When they live in the *neglect of the worship of God*.

No. 16.

*St. John* xvi. 2d and 3d verses. On persecution [A correction made by Rev. J. W. Weeks. Numbered 6, by Mr. B.] 1767.  
Pownalboro,  
May 28th.  
No. 17.

2d article of the *Apostle's Creed*. Exposition of the same. [No. 2.] Frankfort,  
August 9th.  
No. 17a.

1 *Corinthians* ix. part of 24th verse. The Christian race. 1768.  
Frankfort,  
previous to  
Febr'y 6th.  
No. 17b.

*St. John* v. 39. Search the Scriptures. [No. 2.] Frankfort,  
Febr'y 6th.  
No. 17c.

*Joshua* vii. 25. Wicked men cause all the trouble, &c., of the world; but they shall be punished here or hereafter. [Numbered 2 by Mr. Bailey.] Pownalboro,  
July 9th.  
No. 18.

*Joshua* ix. 22, 23. Sin of deceiving another. [This is headed Scripture History, No. , by Mr. Bailey.] Frankfort,  
July 28th.  
No. 19.

*Romans* xi. 20. On self conceit. [No. 4.] Frankfort,  
August 17th.  
No. 20.

*Ruth* iv. 13. Character of Boaz.

1769.  
Frankfort,  
Sept. 7th.  
No. 21.

2 *Samuel* xviii. 33. Conduct of Absalom, his death; 1770.

Frankfort, August 18th. King David's grief; cause of this grief—a belief  
No. 22. that Absalom would be eternally punished.

No. 23. Part of a sermon on love to God.

Pown'lboro' *Ecclesiastes* v. 1, 2. Sermon at the Consecration  
Nov. 4th. of St. John's Church, Pownalborough: 1st, the sea-  
No. 24. sons; 2d, the places; 3d, the manner; 4th, the de-  
sign; and 5th, the importance of Public Worship.  
[Prefixed to this sermon is "A Prayer at the dedica-  
tion of St. John's Church, Pownalborough."]

1771.

Pownalboro, *Proverbs* iii. 25. Shame the promotion of fools.  
Nov. 18th.  
No. 25.

1772.

Pown'lboro, *St. Matthew* v. 44. The duty of benevolence.  
April 23d.  
No. 26.

Pown'lboro, *Hebrews* xii. 7. Duties of fathers to their children.  
May 27th.  
No. 27.

Pown'lboro' *St. Matthew* iv. 19 and 20. Duty of following  
June 20th. Christ.  
No. 28.

Pown'lboro' *Job* iv. 14. On the nature and advantages of  
July 17th. Fear. Part first.  
No. 29.

Pownalboro' *Isaiah* li. 7. On the excesses of Fear. Part second.  
No. 30.

Pown'lboro' *St. Matthew* xiii. 7. The vanities which hinder  
Nov. 18th. the Gospel taking effect in the hearts of men. Part  
No. 31. fourth.

Pown'lboro' *Revelations* (?) —. —. Probably for All Saints'  
Nov. 1st. Day. Account of Popish persecutions.  
No. 32.

Pown'lboro' *St. John* iv. 48. Causes of unbelief. [Original  
No. 33. prayer added.]

Pown'lboro' *St. Matthew* xxi. 11. The necessity of a Redeem-  
Advent Sun- day. "I shall at present endeavour to shew the neces-  
No. 34. er."

sity of a Redeemer, and then, in a number of discourses, consider and explain the nature of this great redemption." [Original prayer added, marked: "Before sermon."]

*St. Luke* ii. 14. 1st. Value of Peace. 2d. Methods to obtain and preserve it. 3d. Exhortation. Pown'lboro' Dec. 24th. No. 35.

*St. Matthew* xxi. 5. Kingly office of Christ. Pown'lboro' Dec. 29th. No. 36.

*Job* xxx. 23. Feelings of various classes of sinners at the approach of death. 1773. Pown'lboro' Jan. 20th. No. 37.

*St. Matthew* xiii. 7. A fondness for popular applause is one of those things which choke the good seed. Pown'lboro' May 6th. No. 38.

II. *Samuel* xii. 31. Character of David. Caution to be used in estimating the characters of Scripture personages. Pown'lboro' July 2d. No. 39.

*St. Matthew* xii. 31, 32. The sin against the Holy Ghost. Pown'lboro' July 8th. No. 40.

*Acts* i. 1 to 6. "An exposition of the Acts of the Apostles." [No. 1.] Pown'lboro' August 11th. No. 41.

*Proverbs* iii. 17. The pleasure derived from the practice of virtue. Pown'lboro' Sept. 29th. No. 42.

*St. Matthew* xiii. 8. Parable of the good ground. Pown'lboro' No. 43.

*St. Matthew* xiii. 8. Part II. of same discourse. Pown'lboro' No. 44.

*St. Matthew* xv. 18. Caution against following those who attempt to spread new and unauthorized opinions. 1774. Pown'lboro' June 25th. No. 45.



- Pown'lbore' *St. Matthew* xviii. 27. Forgiveness of injuries.  
 July 7th.  
 No. 48.
- Pown'lbore' *St. Matthew* xviii. 31 to 35. Aimed against the  
 July 8th. practice of creditors imprisoning their poor debtors.  
 No. 47.
- Pown'lbore' *St. Matthew* xx. 16. God has a right to deal with  
 July 14th. His creatures according to His own pleasure.  
 No. 48.
- Pown'lbore' *St. Matthew* xxi. 28 to 31. Parable of the two  
 July 16th. sons.  
 No. 49.
- Pown'lbore' *St. Matthew* xix. 19. Love of our country and  
 July 21st. benevolence.  
 No. 50.
- Pown'lbore' *St. Matthew* xxii. 7. Consequences of neglecting  
 August 24th. the offers of salvation. [Refers to a former discourse  
 No. 51. on the same subject.]
- No. 52. Two lectures on the right training of children.  
 No. 53.
- No. 54. Want of interest in religion.
- No. 55. Persecutions that holy men have suffered.
- No. 56. The case of Cornelius. [Corrected by Rev. J. W.  
 Weeks.]
- No. 57. 2 *Samuel* i. 16. David's nobleness of conduct  
 proposed for imitation.
- No. 58. Shortness and uncertainty of life. [Imperfect.]
- No. 59. Death and future judgment. [Imperfect.]
- No. 60. Robbing God of His glory. [Imperfect.]
- No. 61. Dangers arising from national victories. [Imperfect.]

1 *Kings* xvii. 13 and 14. God will reward us for acts of charity and mercy. Three other points enlarged upon in former sermons from this text. No. 62.

*Genesis* vi. part of 3d vs. Danger of being connected with persons of vicious characters. [Imperfect.] No. 63.

Attributes of God. [Imperfect.] No. 64.

2 *Kings* x. part of 16th vs. True and false zeal. [Imperfect.] No. 65.

*Romans* viii. part of 28th vs. 1st. Concerning those who love God. 2d. The reasons for believing that all things should work together for your good. No. 66.

*Exodus* xx. 16. On the ninth commandment. No. 67.

*Philippians* ii. 5th to 10th vs. Exposition. [Imperfect.] No. 68.

*Genesis*. Sketches of some of the prominent persons in this book. Chapter i. Life and character of Eve. Chapter ii. Life of Adah. Chapter iii. Life of Zillah. Chapter iv. Life of Naamah. Character of antediluvians. Chapter v. Life of Sarah. [Written in a flowing style, though disfigured by some ideas and expressions not in good taste.] No. 69.

A prayer offered at the execution of criminals. No. 70.

1 *St. Peter* iii. 12. 1st. God's favour to the righteous. 2d. His displeasure against the wicked. No. 71.

*Deuteronomy*, iv. 39. Duty of Knowledge and consideration. No. 72.

No. 73. *Deuteronomy* iv. 39. Same subject continued.

No. 74. *St. Luke* xiii. 4. Against rash judgments.

Probably a Thanksgiving Sermon.  
No. 75. 1. Reflect a little upon the calamities of war in general; 2. Give a short history of the Spanish proceedings in America, with a particular view to the Island of Cuba; 3. To take notice of the remarkable successes of the English in some of the preceding, as well as in this late expedition. In 1758, Louisburg taken; in 1759, capture of Quebec; in 1760, conquest of all Canada; Havana taken, August, 1762. "Let us then this day rejoice." [Imp.]

---

1776. Three sermons "on Relative Duties," viz.: Nos. 76, 77, 79. [See below.]

No. 76. Respect to superiors. [Imperfect. No. 1.]

No. 77. 1 *St. Peter* iii. 8. Duty of superiors to inferiors [No. 2.]

May 5th.  
No. 78. *Romans* xii. 10. Duty of equals towards each other. [No. 3.]

May 5th.  
No. 79. 1 *Timothy* ii. 2. "That we may lead quiet and peaceable lives in all godliness and honesty."

July 14th.  
No. 80. *St. Mark* x. 17. The young man's enquiry. [Imp.]

No. 81. The sin of Jereboam. Caution against sacrificing conscience to interest.

---

1778. *St. James* i. 27. 1st. Show who are meant by the terms fatherless and widows. 2d. The treatment due to persons of this description. [Endorsed sermon 7.]  
Boston,  
July.  
No. 82.

*Zechariah* ix. 12. [Endorsed "Sermon eight,] A Pownalboro' Farewell Discourse delivered at Pownalborough, July, 1778." 1. Give some explanation of the text. 2. Make some reflections suitable to the present occasion.

*Psalms* lxxv. 11. Reasons for gratitude during the year past. 1780.  
Cornwallis,  
Dec. 31st.  
No. 84.

Duty of promoting peace. 1781.  
Cornwallis.  
No. 85.

*St. Mark* i. 15. 1. The nature and extent of repentance. 2. The necessity of it. Cornwallis,  
March 1st.  
No. 86.

*Acts* xvi. 29, 30. Narrative of the imprisonment of two Apostles. Application of the jailor's questions to the present hearers. Cornwallis,  
March 20th.  
No. 87.

*St. John* iii. 3. Errors with respect to conversion. [No. 14.] Cornwallis,  
Sept. 17th.  
No. 88.

*Hebrews* xii. 14. Advantages of peace. [No. 3.] Cornwallis,  
Dec. 5th.  
No. 89.

*Psalms* cxv. 16. The goodness of God calls for gratitude. [No. 4. An original collect prefixed to this sermon.] Cornwallis,  
Dec. 11th.  
No. 90.

1 *St. Peter* iv. 18. Description of the righteous and the sinner. 1783.  
Annapolis,  
June 29th.  
No. 91.

1 *St. Peter* iv. 18. Difficulty of salvation and certainty of future punishment. Annapolis,  
July.  
No. 92.

*St. Luke* xviii. 18 to 22. 1. An account of this young man. 2. Nature and extent of the command given to him. 3. Practical reflections. [No. 3.] Annapolis,  
August 17th.  
No. 93.

*Genesis* ix. 9. The temptation of Joseph. Practical remarks. 1784.  
Annapolis,  
August.  
No. 94.

Annapolis, August 1st.  
No. 96.      *Genesis* ix. 9. The example of Joseph recommended, especially to the young.

---

1786.  
Annapolis, Feb. 22d.  
No. 96.      *Genesis* xxxvii. 19. The nature, effects and unreasonableness of envy. "Scripture History."

Annapolis, Sept. 25th.  
No. 97.      *St. Matthew* xi. 12. A mere outward profession will not secure our future happiness.

Annapolis, February.  
No. 98.      Against the love of money. [Imperfect.]

Annapolis, Feb. 1st.  
No. 99.      *Romans* vi. 16. "Servitude of sin; its danger." Second part.

---

1787.  
Annapolis, Feb. 7th.  
No. 100.      *Judges* ix. 14, 15. Endeavor to draw some moral and religious observations from these words. [No. 1.]

Annapolis, Feb. 16th.  
No. 101.      *Judges* ix. 14, 15. The vanity and pride of human nature. [No. 2. Part 2.]

Annapolis, Feb. 17th.  
No. 102.      *Acts* xviii. part of 17th vs. True Christian zeal. [No. 3.]

Annapolis, Feb. 19th.  
No. 103.      *Acts* xviii. part of 17th vs. Counterfeit zeal. [No. 4.]

Annapolis, Feb. 22d.  
No. 104.      *Acts* xviii. part of 17th vs. Indifference to religion. [No. 5.]

Annapolis, Feb. 21st.  
No. 105.      *Psalms* xlix. 13. The folly of men. [No. 6.]

Annapolis, Feb. 22d.  
No. 106.      *Deut.* xxx. 15. Abuse of the grace of God. [No. 7.]

Annapolis, Feb. 23d.  
No. 107.      *St. Luke* xii. 1. Display some appearances of this pharisaical hypocrisy and show its baseness. [No. 8.]

Annapolis, Feb. 24th.  
No. 108.      *St. Luke* xii. 1. Same subject continued. [No. 9.]

*St. Luke* xii. 1. Same subject continued. [No. Annapolis,  
10.] Feb. 26th.  
No. 109.]

*St. Mark* x. 17, 18. "One may be apparently Annapolis,  
strict and punctual in the performance of moral du- March.  
ties, without being entitled to everlasting happiness. No. 110.  
[No. 11.]

*St. Mark* x. 17, 18. "It concerns us to examine: Annapolis,  
1. The disposition of our minds; and 2. The extent April 10th.  
of our obedience." Practical application. [No. 12.] No. 111.]

*Job* i. 18, 19, 20. 1. To make some reflections Annapolis,  
upon the story and conduct of Job; 2. Observe that April 10th.  
calamity is the portion of human nature; 3. Enquire No. 112.  
what improvement we ought to make of afflictions.  
[No. 13.]

*Ecclesiastes* ix. 12. A funeral sermon. Brief. Annapolis,  
[No. 14.] April 16th.  
No. 113.]

*Proverbs* x. 19. 1. Consider some of those sinful Annapolis,  
excesses which are occasioned by a multitude of April 16th.  
words; 2. Exhibit the wise regulation of our dis- No. 114.  
course recommended in the text. [No. 15.]

*St. Luke* xiii. 5. 1. Against rash judgment; 2. Annapolis,  
Exhortation to repentance. [No. 16.] April 17th.  
No. 116.]

*St. Luke* xiii. 5. 1. Many instances of sudden Annapolis,  
bereavement; 2. Caution against delay of repent- April 19th.  
ance. [No. 17.] No. 116.]

*Proverbs* x. 19. Against talebearing. [No. 18.] Annapolis,  
No. 117.]

*St. Matthew* v. 8. 1. Enumeration of spiritual Annapolis,  
evils; 2 Application. ["No. 2 on the text *St. Mat-* Nov. 2d.  
*thew*, v. 8."] No. 118.]

Annapolis,  
Dec. 22d.  
No. 119.

*St. Luke* ii. 20. 1. Occurrences before the birth of Christ. 2. Angels appear to the shepherds, and message. 3. Suitable reflections. [Sermon 8.]

1788.

Annapolis,  
Jan. 13th.  
No. 120.

*St. Matthew* iv. 10. Duty to God.

Annapolis,  
Jan. 25th.  
No. 121.

*St. Luke* ii. 34. Presentation of Christ in the Temple. While the coming of Christ shall prove the salvation of some, it shall increase the condemnation of those who neglect his precepts. Let us then repent. [Sermon 9.]

Annapolis,  
Jan. 30th.  
No. 122.

*St. Matthew* ii. 1. Brief account of the Magi. Herod's jealousy at the birth of another prince. The Magi not disgusted by the poverty in which Mary and the infant Saviour were found to be. Their conduct contrasted with that of men in these days. Let the trouble the Magi took to come to Christ excite us to seek him. [Sermon 10.]

Annapolis,  
Feb. 1st.  
No. 123.

*St. Matthew* ii. 16. Character of Herod. Account of the massacre by his order. [A spirited sketch.] This story displays the terrible effects of ambition. This passion whether it appears in a single person, or a Congress of rising heroes, is like the inundation of a mighty river. Humanity and benevolence recommended. [Sermon 11.]

Annapolis,  
Feb. 6th.  
No. 124.

*St. Luke* ii. 40. Character of Herod and account of his death. Explanation of the text. The example of Herod teaches us the danger of delaying repentance. Lastly: Let every person be excited to increase in wisdom and understanding. [Sermon 12.]

Annapolis,  
Feb. 10th.  
No. 125.

*St. Luke* ii. part of 51st vs. The first part of this discourse refers to the 45, 46, 47, 48 and 49 verses of this chapter. 1. From the example of our blessed

Lord, we may learn the necessity of Confirmation, when it may possibly be obtained. Explanation of Confirmation. Children urged to acquaint themselves with the nature of their Baptismal vows. The Saviour's example of obedience commended to children. [Sermon 13.]

*Daniel v. 27.* An account of the revels of Belshazzar, the hand-writing; consequent terror, and Daniel's interpretation of the mysterious characters. (Written with considerable power.) 1. God knows, considers, and examines all our actions with the greatest exactness. [Sermon 2.]

Annapolis,  
Feb. 12th.  
No. 126.

*Daniel v. 27.* When we purpose to enter upon any enterprise let us ask ourselves, if our conduct in it will stand the test? "Endeavor to shew when people may be reckoned (to be) in a dangerous situation." Several particulars named. "Let us then engage in works of repentance, piety, devotion, charity and temperance. But our most perfect performances will not avail without the atonement of the Son of God." [Sermon 3.]

Annapolis.  
No. 127.

*St. John iii. 1,* and part of 2d vs. Short account of Nicodemus. Does the conduct of Nicodemus merit applause or the contrary? Answered in the negative in the remainder of this discourse. [Sermon 4.]

Annapolis  
Feb. 21st.  
No. 128.

*St. Luke iii. part of 12th verse.* Character of John Baptist's preaching. "The subject before us and the season of the year invite us to repentance." Reasons for repentance. [Sermon 14.]

Annapolis,  
Feb. 25th.  
No. 129.

*Romans iv. part of 25th verse.* The circumstances of the death of Christ. The sins of the world were the cause of the sufferings and death of our Saviour.

Annapolis,  
March 7th.  
No. 130.



1. The thought of this should humble us; 2. It should fill us with hatred of sin; 3. we should avoid sin. [Sermon 5.]

Annapolis,  
March 14th.  
No. 131.

*St. Luke xi. 4.* Definition of temptation. 1. Trials and afflictions which prove our faith. 2. The endeavors of Satan to draw us into sin. 3. Our own depraved appetites may draw us into sin. Therefore we should pray to God for His aid and protection. Caution; God never leads any one into temptation. We should carefully shun all temptations. [Sermon 6.]

Annapolis,  
March 18th.  
No. 132.

*St. Luke xi. 4.* 1. Human nature is weak in resisting temptation. Yet many persons voluntarily expose themselves to it. Can these, with propriety, offer the prayer in the text? God promises his aid to those who shun temptations. [Sermon 7.]

Annapolis,  
March 20th.  
No. 133.

*Romans iv. part of 25th vs.* 1. The Resurrection. 2. The design and importance of this event. 3. The improvement to be made of it. [Sermon 8.]

Annapolis,  
March 26th.  
No. 134.

*St. Matthew iii. 15.* Account of the preceding circumstances: 1. Christ's example on this occasion should convince us that it is our duty to obey all commands of God; 2. Observe the humility of John Baptist; 3. Notice the regular proceedings of Divine Providence, even in the most weighty concerns. Application. [Imperfect. Sermon 15.]

Annapolis,  
March 29th.  
No. 135.

*St. Matthew i. 1 to 11th verse.* Explanation of the temptation of Christ, with practical reflections [Sermon 16.]

Annapolis,  
April 5th.  
No. 136.

*Amos vi. 1.* Multitudes repent of their sins without any real reformation. The human heart has many ways to deceive itself. Specification of some of these ways. [Sermon 9.]

*Amos vi. 1.* Many Christians content themselves with a cold and partial performance of their duty. Annapolis, April 7th. No. 137.  
[Sermon 10.]

*St. John i. 47, 48.* Four of the disciples of John Baptist described. Among them was Nathaniel. Annapolis, April 14th. No. 138.  
Explain the meaning of the words "in whom is no guile," and then enquire if the description will agree with our own characters? [Sermon 17.]

*St. John ii. 11.* Account of the miracle: 1. Make some observations on this occurrence; 2. Attempt some practical improvement. Annapolis, April 18th. No. 139. [Sermon 18.]

*St. John ii. 24.* The care of the Jews in observing externals of religion shames the conduct of many Christians. Christ's driving the traffickers from the Temple shows that religious buildings have a relative sanctity. Christ would "not commit himself" to certain who professed to be his disciples, and why? From this, and other passages, we are persuaded of Christ's divinity. Christ is therefore omniscient. Have we always acted under a persuasion of this truth? [Sermon 19.] Annapolis, April 21st. No. 140.

*St. John iii. 5.* Brief account of the interview between Christ and Nicodemus. Surprise of Nicodemus. Explanation by Christ. "Our blessed Lord has united Baptism with Regeneration, and has declared the necessity of both in the strongest terms." "The outward sign must not be omitted if we expect the inward spiritual grace." "We learn from this discourse of our Lord with Nicodemus, the necessity of an heavenly disposition, and that our souls must be renewed and sanctified, &c. &c." Annapolis, April 30th. No. 141.  
[Sermon 20.]

*St. Matthew v. 43.* Our Saviour encouraged that Annapolis,

- May 2d.  
No. 142. affection and benevolence which is the most amiable virtue, the brightest ornament of human nature. Our benevolent feelings to have no limits. I intend this discourse chiefly as an introduction to this great and important branch of Christianity. Paraphrase of the story of the good Samaritan. Selfishness the character of the present age. Our forbearance in religion proceeds from indifference to it rather than from true charity. [Sermon 11.]
- Annapolis,  
June 14th.  
No. 143. *Proverbs* i. 10. 1. Many persons endeavor to seduce others into sin, and successfully. 2. These seducers are atrocious sinners. 3. "Enlarge upon Solomon's caution." [Sermon 12.]
- June 14th.  
No. 144. Second sermon in which the same subject is continued. [Sermon 13.]
- June 20th.  
No. 145. Third sermon in which the same subject is continued. [Sermon 14.]
- June 17th.  
No. 146. *St. Mark* x. 16. 1. Explain the nature and urge the necessity and advantage of confirmation. 2. Address myself to the younger part of this congregation.
- July 12th.  
No. 147. *St. Luke* x. 41, 42. Religion is a matter of the utmost concern and importance. [Sermon 16.]
- July 18th.  
No. 148. 1 *Corinthians* x. 3, 4. Comparison between manna and the Gospel. [Sermon 17.]
- Proverbs* i. 24, 25, 26. 1. God in tender compassion for mankind continues to repeat His gracious invitations. 2. Notwithstanding this, we are disposed to reject His condescending offers. [Sermon 18.]

## NOTICES OF LOYALISTS.

The papers of the Rev. Jacob Bailey, which have been preserved, are of a very miscellaneous character.

Some of them furnish information not before known respecting persons of some note in their day. The notices which follow, refer, exclusively, to those who, at the time of the American Revolution, favored more or less the Royal cause.

Great credit is due to Lorenzo Sabine, Esq., for his very full and accurate work, containing biographical sketches of American Loyalists. With all the labor which must have been bestowed on that book, it is still somewhat imperfect, either in the brevity of the notices of some of the persons spoken of, or in the entire omission of the names of some who adhered to the British Crown. The contents of this Appendix supply in a measure this deficiency. The present writer supposed that there might be a general desire in the Protestant Episcopal Church to learn all that could be gathered of the history of those of its ministers, who retained their allegiance in the trying times of the American Revolution. While he has, therefore, made full extracts from the MS. materials in his possession to gratify this desire, he has also availed himself to some extent of other sources of information.

Some of the persons noticed in the following sketches were in humble life, and perhaps, on account of their never having possessed any extensive influence, it may be supposed that any memorials of them are hardly worth preserving. Still these slight sketches will probably have a local interest. More than this, they serve also in some degree as contributions to the general history of the State in which the subjects of them lived. The writer of the present Memoir could not resist the desire which he felt to select from the time-worn MSS. which

were intrusted to him, such facts as appeared worthy of being inserted in an Appendix. From the increasing interest now felt not only in Antiquarian but Genealogical researches, the compiler feels assured of the readiness with which many will read every one of the following articles. They who are not interested in some of these brief sketches can of course pass them over, with the consolation that the insertion of them adds nothing to the price of the book in which they are contained.

REV. EDWARD BASS, D. D., and first Bishop of the Protestant Episcopal Church in Massachusetts.

MR. BASS's ancestors were among the first settlers of Massachusetts Colony, and settled in Roxbury about 1630. In about ten years they removed thence to Braintree (now Quincy.)

The subject of this notice was born in Dorchester, Mass., Nov. 23d, 1728. He entered Harvard College when he was thirteen years old, and graduated in 1744. For some years after he was engaged in the instruction of youth, and in theological studies. He was licensed to preach among the Congregationalists, if indeed he was not ordained a minister by them.\* On the 24th of May, 1752, he was admitted to Deacon's Orders by the Bishop of London, and having shortly afterwards been ordained Priest, he returned to his native country, and on the death of the Rev. Matthias Plant, Minister of Queen Anne's Church in Newbury, Mass., took charge of that Parish.

At the commencement of the American Revolution, Mr. Bass, in common with the other Ministers of the English Church, was placed in a situation of extreme embarrassment.

It would seem, that to a certain extent, he complied with the wishes of the officers of his Church, and omitted the prayers for the Royal Family. The following papers will show the light in which he was regarded by the Society in England, whose Missionary he was. In writing to the Secretary of that Society, under date of Nov. 9th, 1781, Rev. J. Bailey says: "At the earnest request of the Rev. Mr. Bass, the late Missionary at Newburyport, I venture to lay before you the following representation of his circumstances and conduct, and, if it will not give offence to the Society, I beg you will communicate it. Two gentlemen, upon whose veracity and honor I can entirely depend, have lately been with me, and affirm that Mr. Bass is a most sincere friend to Government; that though he was obliged to omit the usual prayers for the King, yet he never could be induced to pray for the revoltors, either in the civil or military department; that he has always refused to read the resolves, declarations, or any other papers appointed by rebel authority; that he has been of great service in moderating the violent, in confirming the doubtful, and in making converts of such as would attend to his arguments, and that it is his most sincere design to promote the interests of the Church, and the supremacy of Britain over her Colonies. I can attest the greater part of the above account, and I always considered him as an honest, worthy man, and I am authorized to observe that he is the more deeply affected in having forfeited the favor of that venerable body which he served so long, than at the loss of his salary, though he is wholly subsisted by charity." In reply to this statement,

---

\* "The bearer, Mr. Bass, has preached for some time among the dissenters, to good acceptance. F. MILLER."—*Hankins' Missions of Church of England*, p. 219.



1911

1912

1913

1914

1915

1916

1917

1918

1919

1920

1921

1922

1923

1924

1925

1926

1927

1928

1929

1930

1931

1932

1933

1934

1935

1936

1937







the Secretary of the Venerable Society says, January 29th, 1782: "That part of your letter which concerns Mr. Bass, has a little surprised me, since among other witnesses of his disloyal principles and conduct, you seem to have been among the number. For when Mr. (Rev. J. W. W.) Weeks was in England, he assured me in these words: 'That Mr. Bass went so far as to preach a sermon, exhorting his hearers to give their money liberally for clothing the rebel soldiers. Mr. Bailey, my brother, was present on the occasion, and heard the sermon.' I should be glad if you would explain this and, if you can, reconcile it with your last letter. The clergy of Boston, in the beginning of the troubles, disapproved of Mr. Bass's conduct, and wrote over that he complied too far with the prevailing powers. He is said to have kept all the Fasts, &c., appointed by Congress, and to have read the Declaration of Independency in his Church. All this Mr. Bass must clear himself of, and very fully too, before he can be restored to the Society's favor. P. S. If Mr. Bass had been truly loyal, I can't see how it was possible for him to stay at Newburyport, a place so much in favor of the other part."

In answering this letter, May 4th, of the same year, Rev. J. Bailey says: "With respect to Mr. Bass, and the information I gave to Mr. Weeks, the case is, in brief, as follows: being compelled to leave my family to avoid confinement on board a guard ship, I wandered through the country, and about the middle of November came to Newburyport, and was at Church on a day of public thanksgiving appointed by the Congress. Mr. Bass desired me to preach, but I refused, assuring him that I would never deliver a charity sermon to collect money for clothing the rebel soldiers. This I repeated soon after to Mr. Weeks, but, as nearly as I can remember, Mr. Bass gave us a general discourse, without descending to particulars, or even mentioning the occasion of the solemnity. After sermon, the collection was made. Many refused to contribute, and a lady of some distinction declared with a spirited voice, 'I will never give a single penny towards the support of rebels.' This bold declaration was perhaps the occasion of my retaining the above in my memory. I am very confident, both from the repeated assertions of Mr. Bass himself, and other circumstances, that he refused to read the Declaration of Independency, and he became, on that account, extremely obnoxious to the violent party. I am certain that he was publicly reported for a Tory, and I was, one evening just upon my arrival at his house, witness to a scene equally ludicrous and indecent, for as he was returning from an entertainment with his wife, he was pursued along the street by near two hundred persons, who pelted him with dirt and stones, and treated him with the most indelicate language. • • On the whole, I am persuaded that Mr. Bass was conducted into his deviations, not from even the least inclination to the cause of the revolt, but from a mistaken zeal for the Church, which, he imagined, in some measure, would justify his compliance." Rev. S. Parker, Rector of Trinity Church, Boston, writes to Rev. J. Bailey, Dec. 22, 1782. "Mr." (Rev. J. W.) "Weeks was dismissed from the Society's service with much greater reason, I think, than poor brother Bass, whose loyalty during the whole contest has stood unimpeached."

The following is from a letter from Rev. Edward Bass, Newburyport, Dec. 29th, 1783: "That I showed a readiness to keep all the Congress Fasts, as Dr. Morice hath been informed, is not true. I complied with much reluctance. It is indeed true that I did generally open my Church on those days, but not in consequence of orders or commands from any Rebel authority whatever, none of whose papers I ever once read in Church, but of the earnest request of my parishioners, who represented it to me as the only probable way of saving the Church from destruction, while people in general were in such a frenzy. Besides a number of private letters written by my friends in my favor, my wardens did last year sign a testimonial of my loyalty: the Hon'ble Mark H. Wentworth and George Jaffrey presented me with another, which I begged the favor of Governor Wentworth to present to the Society."

In a postscript to a letter from Rev. Edward Bass, in the Spring of 1784, he says: "By the good offices of your Brother Weeks, this Church is, I think, like to fall very soon."

Rev. J. Bailey wrote to the subject of this sketch, March 7th, 1787: "I received a letter from you last November, with your remarks upon the Society.\* Our Brother Clark, formerly of Dedham, was present, from whom I chiefly collected the following account of your affairs. After Mr. Weeks had procured, by his representations, a suspension of your pay, my letters and other testimonials arrived in your favour, which induced the Board to revise your case, and to make some further enquiries. In consequence of which, one Salter was produced, who declared upon oath that he had been a parishioner of yours; that you omitted all the prayers for His Majesty, etc., observed all the rebellious fasts and thanksgivings, and read the Declaration for Independence, without the advice, and contrary to the desire of your Parish, and that you not only encouraged privateering, but was actually engaged in the plunder of British property. (Quere, who was this Salter? Was it not Malachi, who visited New England in the autumn of 1777, and who afterwards made a voyage to London?) This evidence, however, greatly increased, or rather confirmed every prejudice against you. After this, your friends exhibited several circumstances in your favour, and had so far elucidated your character, that a reatoration was almost agreed to. Upon which Mr. Clark was examined for a deciding voice, the Arch-Bishop assuring him that should his testimony prove favourable, the Society would confirm your salary. But this gentleman, it appears, declared upon his honour, that he regarded you as a friend to the rebellion, upon which they immediately passed a vote of reprobation. I have had several warm altercations with Mr. Clark on this subject, and have demanded the foundation of his opinion. In reply, he alleges, that upon a visit with Mrs. Bass, at Dedham, he conceived that both you and your lady were greatly attached to the rebellion; but, I conjecture, that he was chiefly influenced in his sentiments by what Mr. Weeks and others had asserted."

Several letters from Mr. Bass of a later date are preserved. They relate mainly to domestic matters. Some of them inclosed letters to his brothers Joseph and John Bass, then living in the neighborhood of Mr. Bailey.

The degree of D. D. was conferred on Mr. Bass by the University of Pennsylvania, in 1789. Seven years after, Dr. Bass was chosen Bishop of Massachusetts, and in 1797 was consecrated in Philadelphia, by Bishop White; Bishops Provost and Claggett assisting. At the request of the Churches in Rhode Island and New Hampshire, he exercised his Episcopate in those States. Until his death, which happened in 1803, he retained the charge of St. Paul's Church, in Newburyport, which he had held for the long space of fifty-one years. He is yet remembered in Newburyport, as a person of a remarkably cheerful and even temperament, a lover of peace, to such an extent as to have, on some occasions, sacrificed his own undoubted rights, rather than to contend with avaricious and quarrelsome neighbors. Such traits are remembered when even the learning of their subject is forgotten. From the unusual advantages he possessed in youth, and his diligent habits at that time, it is probable that his acquirements were greater than common.

A marble monument, with a Latin inscription, written by his assistant and successor in the Rectorship, the late Rev. James Morse, D. D., is erected to his memory in the Churchyard of St. Paul's, Newburyport.

---

\* This probably relates to a pamphlet published by Mr. Bass, of which the following is the title: "A brief Account of the treatment which Mr. Bass, late Missionary from the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel in Foreign Parts, at Newbury-Port, New England, hath received from said Society. Drawn up by Himself, with Remarks upon particular Parts of it, and addressed to the impartial Public. Admonish a Friend, it may be he hath not done it. Admonish thy Friend, it may be he hath not said it. Admonish a Friend, for many Times it is a Slander, and believe not every Tale.—Eccles. xix. 13, 14, 15. London: Printed in the Year MDCCCLXXXVI."

The writer of the above heard Rev. Dr. Morss relate the following anecdote a few years since:—

About the time that the monument to Bishop Bass was erected, the Rector of the Parish preached a sermon on the death of Alexander Hamilton, which sermon contained a warm eulogy on the deceased. A democratic parishioner shortly after met his Rector, and observed: "Mr. Morss, if your inscription on good Bishop Bass's monument had been in English, and your eulogy on Alexander Hamilton had been in Latin, I, for one, should have been much better pleased."

The present writer would beg leave to say, that he fully agrees with the parishioner in that part of his observation which refers to Bishop Bass. As the memory of a devoted minister or bishop should be dear to the humblest of those under his charge, so, it would seem to be self-evident, that enduring tributes to his virtues should be in a language that all interested can read. They who have acquired a world-wide reputation may be commemorated in a language common to the learned in all lands. But he whose praise it was, that he did the work of his Divine Master in a faithful spirit, can look for no extensive renown. While no reason can be given for the use of that which is "an unknown tongue" to the great mass of those who would gladly read his epitaph, the employment of such a tongue of course virtually defeats, in no small degree, the object for which his monument was erected.

### REV. JOSHUA WINGATE WEEKS, Rector of St. Michael's Church, Marblehead, Mass.

JOSHUA WINGATE WEEKS was the oldest child of Col. John and Mrs. Martha Weeks, and was born in Hampton, N. H., 17— . He graduated at Harvard College in 1758, and married Miss Sarah Treadwell, of Ipswich, Mass.

In November, 1762, the Vestry of St. Michael's Church, Marblehead, "Voted, that the Sum of £30 Sterling be Laid on the pews of said Church to Defray the Charge of Mr. Weeks Going home to London to Receive Orders for said Church."

His marriage, as he states in a letter, dated London, March, 1763, took place before he left America. He returned to Marblehead in July of that year, and entered upon his duties as Rector of St. Michael's but did not reside there wholly till after the lapse of one year. No hint is to be found of the reason of his leaving the faith of his family, who were all Congregationalists, and seeking for Orders in the Church of England.

Several letters, which passed between him and Rev. Mr. Bailey, are in existence. From these, it would seem that the first eleven years of his Rectorship at Marblehead were passed in quiet enjoyment. During that time he made several visits to Pownalborough, and purchased about eighty acres of land, which, to the present day, bear his name. A letter of his, of the date of Nov. 10th, 1774, contains gloomy forebodings as to himself and his family. The following year he and they were driven from Marblehead, by political persecutions, and were obliged to seek refuge with Rev. Mr. Bailey, at Pownalborough. Some account of this is given in the previous Memoir, p. 108. They were here, at times, at least, from April, 1775, to May of the following year. His family resided in Pownalborough during that time. In June of that year, Mr. Weeks and his family returned to Marblehead. In a letter from that place to Mr. Bailey, dated April 29th, 1777, Mr. Weeks says: "You ask me 'how I live?' I am happy to tell you that my friends are uncommonly kind, and even strangers are remarkably liberal, and I have received the most unlimited offers from persons I never knew." • • "You ask, 'why I ceased to officiate?' Because the General Court passed an Act against preaching, or praying, with a design of bringing independence

into disgrace, etc., etc. My being obliged to fly and the treatment I received were fully related in the English papers, and from thence were inserted in the monthly *Magazines*, etc."

Mr. Weeks wrote to Mr. Bailey from Boston, May 2d, 1778. He says: "I am here in order to get liberty from the Court to go away, but have the mortification to find my petition rejected by the House after having been fully and literally granted by the Council by an unanimous vote. So there is an end of thinking to go away by leave. Mr. Clark of Dedham hath liberty to go, though I am detained."

▲ letter from Rev. Mr. Bailey to the subject of this sketch, and addressed to him at Newport, R. I., dated Nov. 28th, 1778, says: "I was driven from the regions of Kennebeck about the 12th of July, by a warrant, to Boston. Upon my arrival I found that you were fled, from a prosecution of the like nature, to Rhode Island." Joseph Domette wrote to Rev. J. Bailey, Boston, Dec. 1, of this year: "Mr. Gardiner arrived at New York too late to see either his father, or Mr. Weeks, who had sailed for England." In the spring of the following year, the following was written by Rev. William Clark, at London: "The Rev. Mr. Weeks, being driven from the large and flourishing Church of Marblehead, left that Province soon after I did, and for similar reasons, and is now going to Nova Scotia with a recommendation from the Society here to the Governor and Council of that Province." Mr. Bailey, in a letter to a friend a few months after, says: "I am sorry to find that Mr. Weeks meets with any obstructions to his settlement at Annapolis. The Governor and Council, for certain impenetrable reasons, seem determined to retain Mr. Fisher in that Mission." And shortly after, Mr. Bailey says: "About three weeks after my settlement at Halifax, Mr. Weeks arrived from England, which afforded a great addition to our happiness. He is appointed Missionary at Annapolis Royal, with a salary of £140 per Annum, but will continue at present in this Metropolis." He continued there from July 16th, to September 7th, when he sailed for New York. While he was at that place, he says: "The Refugees from Massachusetts Bay had a meeting to choose a proper person to represent them at the Board. They condescended to choose me Moderator. I thought it an honour, and a great one, nor shall I ever be ashamed of such company. For when I looked around me I beheld men eminent for their abilities, their birth, their opulence and connexions; and had the cause in which we had been engaged been a bad one, men of such character would have added lustre to it, and made it respectable." A letter from Rev. Dr. Breynton, Nov. 27th, 1779, says: "You are no stranger to the arrival of Mrs. Weeks and her eight children. Besides some donations, Mrs. Weeks will be allowed about 5 shillings *per diem*, and Mr. Weeks will be directed to draw for the Society's £70, and the other £70 will be given to (Rev.) Mr. Fisher, till the whole of that affair can be finally settled."

It was not till the spring of the following year, that Weeks was able to join his family in Halifax. In the following summer he writes: "Rogers has been with me, and offered me one of his battalions, you know he came from the same Province."

Rev. Mr. Bailey says, in a letter to Rev. Edward Bass, July 28th, 1784: "Whatever might be the motives which induced Mr. Weeks in his endeavors to injure you,\* it has returned upon himself, and he is at present in no eligible situation; in the expensive town of Halifax, with a large family he is reduced to about sixty Pounds, as half-pay Chaplain to the Orange Rangers, and fifty-two guineas, which are deducted from my perquisites." In the summer of the following year, Mr. Bailey says, in writing to a friend: "As to Mr. Weeks, he has been to England, and, after writing three humiliating letters to the Society, was admitted candidate for a vacancy, with this express condition, on record, that he should first resign the contested Chaplainship.

---

\* See letter from Bishop Bass, page 291.

But such was his inflexible obstinacy and steadfast determination to injure me, that he refused, and returned to Halifax, though he might have been settled at Digby."

This matter of the chaplainship is spoken of in the foregoing Memoir, pp. 237, 238. It was the means of suspending all intercourse between the family of Mr. Bailey, and that of his brother-in-law, nor is there any evidence that this intercourse was ever restored. All that is known by the present writer of the subsequent life of Mr. Weeks, is contained in "Alkin's Sketch of the Rise and Progress of the Church of England, etc. Halifax: 1849." The author of this work says, p. 49, "The names and stations of the Clergy in the Diocese (of Nova Scotia) at this time, (i. e., 1793,) were as follows: Joshua W. Weeks, at Preston." And in a note at the foot of the same page, "Removed to Guysborough in 1796, on the death of Mr. De la Roche." The Triennial Catalogue of Harvard College gives 1804 as the date of his death.

### REV. WILLIAM CLARK, Rector of St. Paul's Church, Dedham, Massachusetts.

This gentleman was the son of Rev. Peter Clark, of Danvers, Mass. He graduated at Harvard College in 1769, and returned from London to Boston, (whether he had gone to take Holy Orders,) in a ship commanded by Capt. Hall, in 1769. He was appointed to the charge of the Church in Stoughton and Dedham.

Mr. Clark wrote to Mr. Bailey, Dedham, July 10th, 1772, and expressed his desire to obtain the Parish at Georgetown, Me., because the salary at Dedham was small, and likely to remain so, until the estate belonging to the Parish in reversion should fall in. In 1771, the inhabitants of the two townships (i. e. Granville and ) addressed an invitation to the Rev. Mr. Clark, the Missionary at Dedham, Mass., to come and settle among them, promising, at the same time, to contribute towards his support. They stated that the greater part of them had "been educated and brought up in the Congregational way of worship, and therefore should have chosen to have a minister of that form of worship, but the Rev. Mr. Wood, by his preaching, and performing the other offices of his holy function amongst us in the several districts of this county, hath removed our former prejudices that we had against the forms of worship of the Church of England, as by law established, and hath won us to a good opinion thereof, inasmuch as he hath removed all our scruples of receiving the Holy Sacrament of the Lord's Supper in that form of administering it; at least many of us are now communicants with him, and we trust and believe many more will soon be added." \*

Rev. J. W. Weeks says, May 2d, 1778: "Mr. Clark hath leave to go out of the country, but I am refused." The same person, in writing shortly after to the Venerable Society, says †: "Mr. Clark, of Dedham, on account of his health, got liberty of the rebels to go to Newport. He is excessively deaf, so that he cannot perform divine service. Some refugees and inhabitants of Newport had subscribed about £30 sterling for his support. Though he has no family but a wife, yet he is in great need, and merits compassion from all. He was taken up last year and tried at the same time I was, and his lawyer deceiving him by going out of town when he ought to have been in court, he was, without the least colour of evidence against him, condemned, and confined for some time on board the guard ship, by which his health was much injured, and his voice so affected that he can hardly be understood." Mr. Clark writes, London, March 3d, 1779: "I had the happiness to live in peace at Dedham till the spring of 1777, when their jealousy being excited by a trifling occasion, I was sentenced to banishment and confined on board a ship, for nothing more than refusing to acknowledge the Independency of America, which was contrary to the sentiments I had of

\* Hawkins' Missions, &c., p. 361-2.

† Hawkins' Missions, p. 256.

my duty to my king, my country, and my God. I was, however, kept a prisoner till last June, when I got permission to leave their dominions, and after spending a few months at Rhode Island and New York, I left America about Christmas, and arrived here in February by way of Ireland. By my confinement in America, I contracted a disorder, which disables me from preaching, and whether I shall ever recover from it is at present uncertain." In answer to a remark of Mr. Clark's letter of November of this year—"I have not heard since I left her in Rhode Island about a year ago."—Mr. Bailey replies: "I saw Mr. Weeks last July, and made particular inquiries concerning the death of Mrs. Clark, and all the information I could obtain was, that she died about the middle of September, a fortnight after her delivery, and that her child did not long survive her." Under date of London, May 21st, 1783, Mr. Clark writes: "I have now the satisfaction to inform you that Government granted me a pension of £60 per annum, and I have lately got leave to retire to Nova-Scotia and enjoy my pension there." It was not till more than three years after this that Mr. Clark was enabled to realize his wish of returning to America. In his letter from Halifax, June 23, 1786, he writes: "I have the satisfaction to inform you that I arrived here 21st instant, in the Trooper, Capt. Browne, after a tedious passage of eight weeks from London." In the autumn of the same, Mr. Clark was residing with the Rev. J. Bailey at Annapolis. Shortly after, Mr. Bailey said in his report to the Venerable Society: "The Rev. Mr. Clark is with me, and has assisted in administering the sacrament and reading prayers, and I am encouraged by his increasing health, to hope that he may be able to perform service with still greater satisfaction to himself and others." And afterwards, in a letter to a correspondent, Mr. Bailey says: "Mr. Clark was married about the 20th November last and lives at the next door, so that I have still the benefit of his Millenary library." And in another letter Mr. B. says: "Mr. Clark is married to a little, pretty, delicate, chattering woman, about twenty-eight, as unable to rough it as himself. It is a disadvantage to Mr. C., that he is totally ignorant of gardening and farming." From a previous communication, we learn that the lady's name was Mrs. Dunbar, a young widow from New York.

Mr. Clark had removed to Digby, N. S., previous to June 2d, 1787, for he wrote to Mr. Bailey under that date. In that letter he says: "It seems that a number, perhaps forty or fifty, of half-pay officers and loyalists of this Province were represented as apostates, and loitering away their time and money in the rebel country, of which number I had the honor to be reckoned one, and consequently my pension was stopped on this pretence, even before I had arrived at Annapolis the last summer, but my agent, by his vigilance, got a reprieve for me and two others he names, till 5th July next, in order to give them time to let them know that I continued loyal, alive, and in *statu quo*. \* \* \* The Wardens here have asked me to preach, which I declined, as I ever wished to begin the trial by reading prayers only." Mr. Clark was in Digby Oct. 6, 1789. He returned to this country and resided in Quincy. He died in 1816, and was buried in the church-yard of his last residence, his grave being marked by a monument, the inscription of which is in Latin.

REV. JOHN WISWALL, Rector of St. Paul's Church, Falmouth,  
(now Portland,) Maine.

WM. WILLIS, Esq., in his laborious and accurate edition of Smith's Journal, page 150, note 1, gives an account of this gentleman, from which I extract that portion which relates to him up to the time of his leaving the country: "Mr. Wiswall was born in Boston, the son of John Wiswall who kept the Grammar School there. He graduated at Harvard College in 1749, and pursued the study of Divinity as a Congregationalist, in which order he was settled over the new Casco parish in Falmouth in 1766. In 1761, he married Mary Minot, of Brunswick, daughter of John Minot,

afterwards Judge of the Court of Common Pleas, by whom he had several children. In 1764 he changed his religious views, and accepted the invitation of the Episcopalians on the Neck, who had just established the first Episcopal Society which existed in town, and immediately went to England to receive ordination. The same year his Society erected a Church for him on the corner of Church and Middle Streets, which was completed the next year. Mr. Wiswall returned in May, 1765, and continued to preach to his people, respectable in number and character, till the breaking out of the Revolution, when his church was burned, and his flock, who were generally opposed to the separation from the Mother Country, were scattered abroad."

Rev. Samuel Peters, in a letter dated London, August 7th, 1780, says: "Poor Wiswall has been in the West Indies three years, in the ship *Boyne*." Two years after this a letter from England, says: "Mr. Wiswall is at a curacy in Suffolk, where his engagement is only for a short time." The next year he arrived at Cornwallis, N. S., having been appointed Missionary to that place. He wrote Mr. Bailey, Oct. 1, 1783: "This week we chose our Church officers. Sunday I intend to read in, and then Col. Burbidge will apply to the Governor for a letter of Induction. \* \* I am desirous that you should be the clergyman to induct me." Mr. Bailey says, under date of March 2d, 1784: "I have just returned from a journey to Cornwallis, undertaken to marry our brother Wiswall, late of Falmouth, to one Mrs. Hutchinson, a worthy woman from New York, who has been visited, during the late dissensions, with a singular and affecting train of calamities." In a letter to Rev. Edward Bass, July 28th, 1784, Mr. Bailey says: "When your agreeable and welcome letter was delivered into my hands, our brother Wiswall was present, himself, his wife, and her youngest daughter, being on a visit to our habitation. This observation will naturally conduct me to answer your queries respecting that sensible and original genius and his connections. His salary from England is only one hundred pounds sterling, for the Society allow the Missionaries here the exact sum they formerly had in New England, but then he has a parsonage, worth one hundred and twenty dollars a year, and a decent house, with fuel. His wife, about forty-eight years of age, is a Refugee from (Carolina) the Jerseys. Her fortune has been somewhat singular and very distressing since the commencement of the late Revolution. Her husband was drowned. One son was kicked to death by a horse. A second lost his life by shipwreck; and the other was hanged by the rebels, as he was attempting to visit his parents. She has remaining one son and two daughters, and still possesses about two thousand pounds, the gleanings of a very ample estate. Her daughters have a thousand pounds each, lately left them by their grandfather in England. She appears to be a very clever woman, is sociable, and so prudent in the management of family affairs, that we may with propriety apply to her what was heretofore said of Mrs. Weeks, 'She has abundance of saving knowledge.' Mr. Wiswall has two sons, both lieutenants in the navy, the eldest, Peleg, is at Halifax, and the other, John, has just arrived from Europe."

Mr. Wiswall left Cornwallis previous to October, 1789.

In 1796, he was Missionary at Wilmot and Aylesford.\* He died in 1812.

### REV. ROGER VIETS, Rector of St. Andrew's Church, Simsbury, Connecticut.

This gentleman was introduced to Mr. Bailey, by a letter for Rev. Dr. Byles, of Halifax, July 6th, 1786, in which he says: "This will be handed you by Mr. Viets, formerly Missionary at Simsbury, but now appointed to Digby." He passed the summer at his Mission, returning in the autumn to Simsbury. The next year he removed

---

\* Alkin's Sketch, etc., p. 48.



with his family to Nova Scotia, and entered on the duties of his new Parish. He issued "A Serious Address and Farewell Charge to the Members of the Church of England in Simsbury and the adjacent parts," which was printed in Hartford, in 1787. He says, in this pamphlet: "Having led your devotions almost twenty-eight years, more than twenty-four of which I have been in Holy Orders," etc., and proceeds to give a summary of some of the statistics of the parish during that time. Among them is, "Baptisms, Adults, 122; Infants, 1749. From the year 1759 to the present time, the number of conformists to the Church has increased from 75 to more than 280 families, exclusive of the many that have emigrated and the few that have apostatized."

In 1789, Mr. Viets published, at Hartford, three sermons preached in Digby during that and the preceding year. The following is part of the dedication prefixed to them:—

To  
 THE RIGHT REVEREND  
*WILLIAM BAYLEY INGLETT, D. D.,*  
 THE LEARNED,  
 THE PIOUS,  
 THE RESPECTED,  
 AND  
 RESPECTABLE  
*Bishop of Nova Scotia, &c. &c. &c.*  
 THESE DISCOURSES,  
 etc.

The singularity shown in this dedication by Mr. Viets was, (as it would seem from Mr. Bailey's letters to their mutual acquaintance,) also apparent in some of his other actions. Only one letter of Mr. Viets' to Mr. Bailey has been preserved. It is dated December 14th, 1799, and is occupied with complaints that unauthorized persons solemnized marriages in the neighborhood. It urges Mr. Bailey to proceed legally against such offenders. Mr. Viets died at Digby in 1811, aged seventy-four.

DR. MATHER BYLES, JR., Rector of Christ Church, Boston,  
 Mass.

The first of Dr. Byles' letters found among Mr. Bailey's papers, is the one notifying Mr. B. of the collection made in England for the benefit of the suffering clergy in America. An extract from this letter was given on p. 119. Rev. J. W. Weeks writes, Halifax, June 11th, 1780, and says: "Dr. Byles goes to him, (i. e., Col. Rogers,) and after melancholy accounts of his own poverty, begged Rogers to give him the first battalion. Rogers without any hesitation gave him a warrant. I have not seen him (i. e., Rogers,) since, indeed he is now in gaol, but when I do see him, I am determined to reproach him for his silly and inconsiderate behaviour." About a month after the date of this letter, Dr. Byles wrote Mr. Bailey from the same place, stating that he (Mr. B.) could probably obtain the chaplaincy of one of the battalions spoken of, if

"he were on the spot" to apply for it. The letter of Dr. Byles, declining the Mission to Annapolis in favor of Mr. Bailey, has been given on p. 187.

This was but one evidence of the friendly interest the Doctor took in Mr. B.'s concerns, since by his letters from Halifax, during the three following years, it seems that he was exerting himself in various ways to procure the full emoluments of the Mission at Annapolis for its incumbent. The son of Dr. Byles says, in a letter, Halifax, Nov. 25th, 1784: "I have no intelligence of any moment from my father, except that he has obtained a War office commission for his Chaplaincy to this garrison, which fixes it for life." The subject of this notice returned to Halifax from England, in May, 1785, where he remained at least till July of the following year, and till "about 1791, when he was appointed to St. Johns, N. B."\* But Mr. Bailey in his letter, June 6th, 1789, congratulates him on his appointment to St. Johns. In February, 1794, he was at St. Johns, N. B. The last letter from him is dated at the same place, 25th August, 1796. He died at St. Johns, in 1814.

REV. ——— BISSETT, Rector of Trinity Church, Newport,  
Rhode Island.

Rev. Samuel Peters says, in a letter to Mr. Bailey, dated Pimlico, England, April 24th, 1786: "Mr. Bissett, late of Rhode Island, is appointed to the City of St. Johns, if he gets there before either Scovil or Andrews from Connecticut. One is to abide at St. Croix, the other at Chedebucto, near the Gut of Canso, but as Scovil and Andrews have petitioned for Chedebucto, perhaps they will be appointed there before Christmas. Mr. Bissett is a very sensible man, a good scholar and compiler of sermons, although too bashful to appear in company, or in the pulpit." In a letter from Rev. William Clark, Halifax, June 23d, 1786, he says: "Rev. Mr. Bissett, wife and family came passengers with me. Mr. Bissett is appointed Missionary at St. Johns." Mr. Bailey says, under date of March 7th, 1788: "The Rev. Mr. Bissett died lately, at St. Johns."

REV. SAMUEL PETERS, D. D., Rector of St. Peter's Church,  
Hebron, Connecticut.

Several letters from this eccentric Divine to Rev. J. Bailey, are preserved. A number of extracts have been made from them in the preceding Biography. He expected the Bishopric of Nova Scotia, and seems to have taken some pains to influence the clergy there to petition that he might be appointed.

Rev. William Clark wrote to Mr. Bailey, Digby, February 18th, 1781: "Our friend P., (eters) as well for his own personal qualifications, as for that abundant charity and benevolence, which he has shewn to the afflicted Loyalists of all denominations, for many years, is justly entitled to our esteem and to the notice of Government, as a person proper to fill the Episcopal chair here; with this view, I subscribed for him, and also wrote to Dr. Morice my wishes to this purpose. But alas! who shall say to Government, *What dost thou?*" Rev. S. Parker writes, Boston, October 10th, 1796: "Dr. Peters, Bishop elect of Vermont, cannot obtain consecration in England, nor in these States, without a three years antecedent residence."

REV. MOSES BADGER, Itinerant Missionary in the Province of  
New Hampshire.

Rev. J. Bailey wrote to him at New York, July 1st, 1779, giving him a statement of his sufferings from political persecutions. He also wrote to him at the same place,

---

\* Alkin's Sketch, &c., p. 41.

August 1st, 1780, stating that he had removed to Annapolis, and acknowledging the receipt of a letter from him.

**REV. HENRY CANER, D. D., Rector of King's Chapel, Boston, Massachusetts.**

Rev. S. Peters writes, August 7th, 1780: "Dr. C (ane)r is in Cardiff, Wales, happy in obscurity and Episcopal neglects." Rev. Mr. Bailey says, in a letter to a friend, in 1781: "By letters from London, I was informed that Dr. Caner had retired with his young wife to Cardiff, Wales."

Dr. Caner died in England, in 1792, aged 92.

**REV. JOHN TROUTBECK, Assistant Minister of King's Chapel, Boston.**

Rev. S. Peters, in writing from London, June 9th, 1779, says: "Poor Troutbeck has been very sick and given over by his Physicians, after which, Nature and Prayers took him out of the power of death, and gave him a new lease of his life."

**REV. SAMUEL CHANDLER, D. D.**

Rev. S. Peters writes, June 4th, 1786: "Dr. Chandler sailed for New Jersey, May 17th, 1786."

**REV. JOHN VARDILL, of New York, appointed Rector of Church, New York, (but did not accept it.)**

Rev. S. Peters says, in a letter, June 14th, 1785: "Vardill is in Ireland."

**REV. ISAAC BROWN.**

Rev. J. Bailey writes, February 14th, 1784, to Rev. Isaac Brown, at Windsor, N. S.: "I have formerly wrote and received no reply either from you or the Doctor, to whom and his lady be kind enough to remember us." In 1786, Rev. Isaac Brown is inserted in a list of clergy,\* as superannuated. Mr. B. is said to have come from New Jersey.†

**SERGEANT. (Que., Rev. Winwood, of Cambridge, Mass.?)**

Rev. Samuel Peters, in writing from London, June 9th, 1779, to Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, at Mr. Thomas Brown's, Halifax, says: "I wish you would send the following idea to Mr. Sergeant at Boston, viz., his mother died eighteen months ago, and Sergeant is heir to some landed Estate in Beconsfield in Warwickshire, 25 miles from London, reported to be worth near £200 per annum. This information I have obtained of his sister's daughters, named Ratcliffe and Jennett, No. 35, James Street, Oxford Road." Rev. S. Peters, in a letter, dated London, Aug. 7th, 1780, to Rev. J. Bailey, says: "Sergeant is at Bath, half dead and half alive. His wife is full of spirits."

— SMITH, CAPT., (of Plymouth, Mass.) Thomas Brown, in writing under date Halifax, December 29th, 1779, to Rev. J. Bailey, Cornwallis, gives a description of the loss of the armed ship North, at the mouth of Halifax harbor, December 10th, 1779, by which 165 out of 170 persons perished. He says: "Capt. Smith, who belonged to Plymouth in New England, a man who I have been acquainted with sev-

\* Alkin's Sketch, p. 28.

† Ibid, p. 39.

eral years, was pilot of the North, and supposed to be as well knowing to this harbor as any man, had charge of the ship when she was lost, he has left a widow and eight children at Plymouth."

JOHN McNAMARRA, (of Pownalborough.) In the records of the town of Pownalborough is found the following entry :

"John McNamarra, son of Timothy and Ann McNamarra, was born Nov. 8th, 1758. Recorded March 6th, 1777.

EDM'D. BRIDGE, Town Clerk."

The above extract relates to a person, who, though of humble origin, so conducted himself during his life as to deserve honorable mention.

Mr. Bailey says of him when he was discharging the office of the Society's Schoolmaster in Annapolis, in 1787: "This schoolmaster is another extraordinary genius. He was born at Kennebeck, and came to live with me about the beginning of the rebellion.

"And though his nearest relatives were violent rebels, he was so honest, loyal and faithful, as to be employed by the friends of Government in the most critical and dangerous exigencies. He was persecuted, fined and imprisoned, but was, however, happy enough to make his escape with us to Halifax. He has passed through a variety of scenes, and was, about three years ago, appointed the Society's Schoolmaster at Annapolis; and though he has been connected with characters of every description, he has given universal satisfaction. He has deservedly the highest reputation for sobriety, diligence, and integrity. He has acquired almost every branch of knowledge, both speculative and practical, and equally excels in arithmetic, astronomy, navigation, geography, surveying, mensuration, dialing, and other branches of the mechanicks."

Afterwards Mr. Bailey says: "Mr. McNamarra has expended the whole of his salary, and whatever he received when the school was more advantageous, either in books, mathematical instruments, etc., for the improvement of himself and scholars, or else in charity and the promotion of public designs."

• For a time the subject of this notice held the office of Postmaster in Annapolis, and probably continued as the Society's schoolmaster to the time of his death, which took place in the spring of 1798. Bishop Inglis said in a letter to Mr. Bailey: "I very sincerely regret the death of Mr. McNamarra, who was a very worthy useful man. In him the community has sustained a considerable loss."

For many years John, (as he was familiarly called,) was a member of Mr. Bailey's family. He was first taken in the capacity of a servant. But during the compulsory absences of his employer in the last few years of his residence in Kennebec, this young man was of essential service to the family, and doubtless on more than one occasion prevented their suffering from want of the necessaries of life. Abandoning his native land with Mr. and Mrs. Bailey, he was of no little assistance to them after their arrival in Nova Scotia. This Mr. Bailey states in his letters. That he who had been received into the family in such a subordinate situation, should have had the force of mind to rise above the condition of a mere "hewer of wood and drawer of water," and, availing himself of the opportunities which Mr. Bailey afforded him, should have acquired the amount and variety of information, which his employer says he possessed, shows that he could have been no common man. This, with the goodness of heart which characterized him, is enough to justify the humble effort now made to rescue his memory from oblivion. The high-born and the wealthy have no lack of eulogists, while many who did not possess these advantages, although much more worthy of praise, are forgotten. In performing the duty attempted in the above notice, a satisfaction is felt, and it is not the less strong because the biographer has

endeavored to save from oblivion one whose birth and position in life had nothing to allure his efforts.

DR. JOHN CALF, (of ———.) Rev. J. Bailey writes to him at Major-bignyduce, under date of Sept. 6th, 1779, and says: "You doubtless retain some knowledge of me from our former acquaintance, and have I presume, heard something of my situation and circumstances. \* \* Being informed that you possess a department in the Garrison, which gives you considerable influence, I have made this attempt to solicit your interest in case a chaplain should be appointed." Dr. John Calf, of Ipswich, Mass., married a daughter of Rev. Jedediah Jewett, of Rowley, in 1753. In O. Rich's *Bibliotheca Americana*, p. 234, is the following: "The siege of Penobscot by the Rebels, by J. C., Volunteer, London: 1781. The author is supposed to be Mr. *John Calf*, agent for the inhabitants of Penobscot, whose name is subscribed to the charts which illustrate the work."

MOSES FORSTER, (of ———.) Rev. J. Bailey writes to Dr. Bartholemew Sullivan, at New York, under date of Halifax, Sept. —, 1779, and says: "I must beg leave to trouble you again in behalf of the bearer, Mr. Moses Forster, whose situation and circumstances demand both the emotions of humanity and the effusions of benevolence. After having been imprisoned a whole year, and then set at liberty by the Supreme rebel court, he was cruelly harrassed by the committee, driven from his family, and upon his return taken out of bed, and conveyed away from a tender wife and eight children 120 miles, confined on board a guard ship, and then transported to this province. As he is a stranger in distress, I beg leave to recommend him to your attention, and am confident that your goodness will afford him that assistance and direction which is due to a sufferer in the royal cause."

ROBERT JENKINS. (Que., Robert?) Rev. J. Bailey, writes to him at St. Johns, Newfoundland, under date of Halifax, Sept. 24th, 1779, and says: "It is about three months since I left the unhappy land of our nativity. \* \* I have visited Newbury several times since the commencement of the present commotions, and continued days together with (Rev.) Mr. (Edward) Bass. The proceedings of the people are very disagreeable to that worthy gentleman, yet to preserve himself from destruction, he omitted all prayers for the King from the (time of the) declaration of Independency, for which offence the Society (P. G. F. Ps.,) have struck his name from the list of Missionaries."

— SIMMONS, (of ———.) Rev. J. Bailey, in writing, under date of November 6th, 1780, to Joseph Domett, at Brompton, near London, says: "The refugees in this Province are under the influence of melancholy and dejection, the inflexible obstinacy of the rebel powers, the dilatory conduct of the British forces, and the ungenerous treatment they meet with in the regions of New Scotland, have broken the spirits of several worthy persons, among whom I may mention Mr. Simmons, who has left behind him a widow and four children."

Rev. J. Bailey also wrote to Mr. William Simmons, at Halifax, Nov. 1st, 1779. He says: "It is, I believe, a trite observation, that nothing occasions stronger attachment and friendships than suffering in the same cause. In such circumstances we love to mingle together in conversation, etc. etc. We have not one refugee here except Capt. Campbell, etc. etc." November 30, 1779, Rev. J. Bailey writes to Mr. Simmons, at Halifax, and says: "You have my grateful acknowledgements for your obliging letter." Another letter was addressed by J. Bailey, February 4th, 1780, to Mr. William Simmons, at Halifax; also, May 8, 1780, from the same to the same; and another letter from the same to the same, Sept. 2, 1780, in which Mr. Bailey speaks of having lately heard of Mr. Simmons, through a gentleman just arrived in Cornwallis. In a letter to T. Brown, October 11, 1780, J. Bailey speaks of receiving a letter from T. Brown, mentioning the "untimely exit" of Mr. Simmons.

JOHN JONES, (of Kennebec.) Rev. J. Bailey says, in a letter, February 8th, 1780, directed to John Jones, at Quebec: "Let us flatter ourselves with the pleasing prospect of meeting again in the regions of Kennebeck, and if we should not be happy enough to find all our friends remaining after so violent a tempest, yet we that have escaped the general wreck may rejoice in each other's society, and have the pleasure of regarding with contempt those sons of rapine and violence, who drove us from our peaceful habitations, and forced us into the ocean, to contend with rocks, currents, whirlpools, storms and hurricanes." In writing to Mrs. Ruth Jones, at Concord, Mass., about the same time, Mr. Bailey says: "I have just received a packet from your consort, Mr. Jones. After passing through a variety of scenes, he arrived at Lake Champlain, and afterwards, by several removes, reached Quebec on the 29th of August. His last letters are dated November 2d."\* To a friend in Halifax, Mr. Bailey writes, April 18, 1780: "I take this opportunity to recommend to your favor, Capt. Jones. He is appointed to the command of a company in Rogers' Battalion. I am persuaded that his active and enterprising genius will be of great service in the department to which he belongs." Mr. Bailey says to another acquaintance: "I send you this by our friend Jones, who is engaged to chastise the rebels. \* \* \* \* You must be persuaded that no man is better fitted for the service, both in point of knowledge and resolution." In a letter, written about the same time, Mr. Bailey says: "We were happily surprised last week with the company of Capt. Jones, one of our Kennebeck neighbours, who escaped from close imprisonment in Boston last spring. After passing through a variety of scenes, he was fortunate enough to reach Quebec, where, meeting with the famous Col. Rogers, he is now engaged in the army, and intends to visit his country by way of Penobscot. His capacity is equal to his undertaking."

John Jones writes to Rev. J. Bailey, from Fort George, September 4th, 1780: "I have had two trips to Kennebeck, one by land, the other in a whaleboat. First, by land: I went up and down, till I found where to strike. Thought best to bring —† off. The way I proceeded was as follows: I surrounded his house in the morning, very early; sent two men to rap at the door. On his crying out, 'Who is there?' I answered, A friend! 'A friend to whom?' I answered, to the Congress, and we are from George's River with an express, for the enemy has landed fifteen hundred troops and three ships. He jumped up and came down with his breeches on, lit a candle, and opened the door. We immediately seized him. On his making some noise, his wife came running down stairs, but soon returned, and put her head out of the chamber window, and halloed, murder! I told her that if she did not hold her tongue, my Indians would scalp her. Away we hauled him into a boat we had prepared, and up the river about a mile above Gardinerston, landed him, and gave him a pair of shoes and stockings, and marched him to Fort George, across the woods, in four days. The whole country was alarmed, and was about six hours after us. In two or three days Rowland (Cushing) came in a flag. In two or three days after, three men came in and informed us how matters were. Joseph North has gone to Boston. Bowman keeps a guard every night, and all the people are much frightened. Rowland keeps a guard, and Maj. Goodwin sleeps every night at the house. Many of our friends have been threatened, but no one is touched or hurt, for great is their fear. Many of the inhabitants don't cut their meadow. All our friends were well, when by water we went and cut out a vessel, and brought her here safe. We also took many others. \* \* I have had several scoutings since I have been here. Have always got the better of the

\* Mr. Bailey also wrote to John Jones at the same time. He said: "Your brother Jack Lee, came to Halifax, some time after the dispersion of the rebels at Penobscot." This letter was enclosed in one directed to Jonas Lee, at Concord, Mass.

† Col. Charles Cushing. He is here called by a nickname.

rebels. Nat. Gardiner is a prisoner with the rebels in Casco gaol. Cushing is going home to effect his exchange and Gardiner's."\*

November 6th, 1780, Mr. Bailey writes: "I have had several visits from Capt. Jones, who is a Captain in the army. He is now at Penobscot." In the autumn of 1784, Mr. Bailey writes to Governor Wentworth: "I would beg leave to recommend to your notice Mr. Jones, an honest, worthy loyalist, who has lost an ample estate for his attachment to His Majesty and the British government. He is endeavoring to obtain a grant of Grand Menan, and is desirous of obtaining your interest and that of Gov. Fanning. I can assure you there is not a person of my acquaintance better calculated to improve a wilderness country than Mr. Jones. He was formerly principal surveyor to the Plymouth Company, and has made several fine settlements at Kennebeck before the commencement of the late commotions."† Mr. Jones wrote to Mr. Bailey from St. Andrews, April, 1784, at which time Mrs. Jones was with him. Rev. J. Bailey says, in a MS. History, etc.: "When I arrived at St. Andrews, on the river Santa Croix, I found a number of people from Penobscot and elsewhere, forming a settlement. But while Mr. Jones, the surveyor, was employed in laying out their lands, a party of Indians, under the direction of one Allen, a notorious rebel, took him prisoner. It is uncertain in what manner they intended to dispose of Mr. Jones. However, the second day of his captivity, he had the good fortune to escape, and to proceed in his business without further interruption." Jones returned to the Kennebec after the Revolution, and resided in what is now the city of Augusta. He was employed in 1797 by the Proprietors of the Kennebec Purchase, to compile a large map of their property, from previous surveys. Jones died in Augusta.

THOMAS BROWN, (of Boston.) Rev. J. Bailey says, in his Journal, under date of Halifax, the day of his arrival there, June 21st, 1779: "Mr. Kitson kindly offered to conduct us either to Mr. Brown's or Captain Callahan. • • By this time my old generous friend, Mr. Brown, was arrived."

Rev. J. Bailey, in writing to Miss Sally Weeks at Halifax, under date of Cornwallis, Dec. 7th, 1779, says of one of Thomas Brown's daughters: "I have been acquainted with Becky from her earliest infancy," etc. etc. In a letter to Rev. S. Peters at London, dated April 27, 1781, he speaks of "our friend Brown, when he formerly resided in Boston." T. Brown failed in his business previous to May 2d, 1780, (see his letter,) and afterwards established a school. Rev. J. Bailey in a letter, November 9th, 1781, to Rev. S. Peters, London, in speaking of Thomas Brown, says: "This poor gentleman is still detained under complaint of his unmerciful creditors. I cannot prevail for his release, though I am his principal creditor." Thomas Brown writes to Mrs. Bailey, Halifax, September 17th, 1792: "I made a verbal agreement three years ago, to receive one hundred pounds per annum for teaching in this Academy. I have no legal appointment in the school, nor do I know at present whom to demand payment of for my services. I am now almost a cripple. A year ago last January I was suddenly attacked with a severe stroke of the palsy, and have not yet recovered the free use of my right arm, right leg, and my speech."

\* In the Boston Gazette, of July 24th, 1780, is the following item: "We hear from Pownalboro', that about Ten Days ago, a Party of Tories surrounded the House of — Cushing, Esq.; High Sheriff of the County of Lincoln, in the Night, took him out of Bed, and carried him off to the Enemy."

† Sabine says, in his American Loyalists, p. 318, of Moses Gerrish: "After the peace, he and Thomas Ross, and one Jones,\* obtained License of occupation of the island of Grand Menan, New Brunswick, and its dependences, and on condition, etc., were to receive a grant, etc. They commenced the settlement of the island, and sold several lots in anticipation of their own title, but failed to fulfil the conditions, and did not obtain the expected grant. Jones returned to the United States."

\* The subject of the above sketch, as the writer has been assured, by persons who knew the fact.

Capt. CHARLES CALLAHAN, (of Pownalborough, Me.) The father of this person resided in the town above named, and died there before Mr. Bailey left the country. Capt. Callahan commanded a coasting vessel in the year 1772, and was bound on a foreign voyage, perhaps as master, in October 1774, as appears by Rev. J. Bailey's letter to the Venerable Society, of that date, inserted in the Memoir, p. 105. He was at that time one of the Warden's of St. John's Church, Pownalborough. Capt. Callahan, although a loyalist in principle, was not disposed to take any active part in the contest then going on between the mother country and her revolted colonies. Nor was he disposed to remove to any place within the jurisdiction of the British. But having been repeatedly "drafted" to serve in the Provincial army, he became convinced that he was dishonestly dealt with in this matter, and he then determined to defeat the power of his enemies by leaving the country. He was proscribed and banished by Massachusetts in 1778. The mention of him is in a letter, October 10th, 1778, in which Mr. Bailey says: "Capt. Callahan is Captain of a twelve-gun sloop of war in the King's service."

In Mr. Bailey's Journal, under date of June 21st, 1779, he inserted the following, which he probably obtained from the wife of the subject of this notice, at whose house he then was:—

"The adventures of Capt. Callahan. He embarked in a small open boat with Mr. Jarvis and Mr. Kitson in the night, and falling down the [Kennebec] river went on shore to refresh themselves at Mr. Thomas Percy's, and were received by that benevolent and hospitable family with great expressions of friendship. But when Capt. Callahan had reached this distance, he began to reflect, and that fondness he retained for his house and possessions, and the extreme tenderness he had for his wife and family, almost tempted him to renounce the principles of reason and loyalty. The thoughts of exposing everything dear and engaging, sadly oppressed his spirits, and sank him into the glooms of despondency. When his companions observed the agitations of his bosom and the afflicting struggles between duty and affection, they both began, with a degree of fierceness and asperity, to upbraid him for his timidity and want of resolution, and even proceeded so far as to accuse him of disaffection to His Majesty. This unjust reflection stung him to the very soul, and he replied with a determined spirit, 'No person breathing has greater aversion to the American rebellion than myself. It is true, I have a prevailing attachment to my aged parent and beloved wife, and the thoughts of leaving them unprotected to the malice and cruelty of the miscreants about them tears my very soul in pieces, and if I had been weak enough to return, I would never make any compliance that I could not reconcile to my conscience. But I am now determined to proceed to Halifax, let what will be the consequence!'

"As soon as the tide served their purpose in the morning they embarked, and kept along shore till they imagined it proper to cross the Bay of Fundy. But they had not proceeded far in this tremendous gulph before the wind began to blow in opposition to the tide, and raised a rough and dangerous sea. This obliged them to alter their course, and to steer quartering over the billows. In this situation Capt. Callahan kept at the helm for sixteen hours, till at length, being overcome with fatigue, and his spirits entirely exhausted, he, in a manner fainted, gave up the helm, and entrusted the boat to the mercy of the raging seas. During the period of this alarming voyage Mr. Jarvis and Kitson lay in the bottom of the vessel, dying sick, but now perceiving nothing in prospect except speedy death, the latter crawled up and seized the helm, and in a few hours conveyed the boat into a place of security. Capt. Callahan, upon his arrival at Halifax, was received with great attention, admitted upon the list of the King's pilots, and shortly after advanced to the command of the Gage, in which department he behaved with remarkable courage and fidelity. He quickly became a terror to the Rebels, took a number of their fishing and coasting



vessels, and destroyed several of their privateers. In the summer of 1778 the people of Naskeag, a settlement on the eastern shore of Penobscot Bay, fired upon his boat as they were going to take in water, and mortally wounded one of his hands. Having received this inhuman provocation he immediately landed, and burnt all their habitations, to the number of ten or twelve, and drove the barbarous inhabitants into the woods. I was at Boston when the news of this exploit reached that Metropolis of sedition, and the authorities were so highly enraged that two stout privateers were sent to intercept him, but they were not fortunate enough to accomplish their design.\*

"Capt. Callahan, after a considerable run of success, had at length the misfortune to be cast away near the light-house in a terrible storm, the day after last Christmas, by which accident one of his men was killed, and himself wounded in escaping on shore. The rest were saved, though some were miserably frozen. Since that calamitous affair the Captain has been unable to procure the command of another vessel, though he still draws wages as a pilot, and was now with Capt. Mowat in the expedition against Penobscot." Thomas Brown writes from Halifax, under date of 29th December, 1779, to Rev. J. Bailey, at Cornwallis, and says that Capt. Callahan went pilot of the ship North, to Spanish River, and that "Capt. Mowat persuaded him to it, with an expectation of taking him in the Albany to Penobscot, when he should return from Spanish River, and placing him in an armed vessel of his own fitting out during the winter. • • After sailing from Spanish River they soon parted from several of their fleet in tempestuous weather, and on Thursday, 9th instant, with the ship St. Helena and a brig and snow, arrived safe in Beaver Harbour, about 20 leagues eastward of this. • • The next day, being Friday, they all sailed from Beaver Harbour about 10 o'clock in the morning for Halifax. During the day, the wind not being very favourable, and one or two of the fleet being heavy sailing vessels, Capt. Selby was obliged to shorten sail, that they might keep up with him. Towards night a storm seemed to be speedily approaching, which induced him to run for the light-house, and, if possible, to get into harbour that night. About 7 o'clock in the evening they discovered the light-house, but being so near the shore, and the wind increasing, thought they could not weather Sambro Head, and so cast anchor. • • About half past one on Saturday morning the North fired a gun as a signal in distress, and Mr. Robinson perceived that she had struck upon the rocks, and in a short time saw her fall to pieces. • • After the North went to pieces numbers of her people swam and floated about the St. Helena and begged for assistance, but they could afford them very little. • • Only five people belonging to the North escaped with their lives, out of about one hundred and seventy that were on board when she struck. Capt. Smith, who belonged to Plymouth, in New England • • was pilot of the North, and supposed to be as well knowing to this harbour as any man, had charge of the ship when she was lost; he has left a widow and eight children at Plymouth. The last I can hear of poor Callahan is, that he was on the quarter deck with Capt. Selby at the time of the vessel's striking, and, I am told, that he forewarned them of their approaching danger, but in the time of the general confusion was not attended to. This is the substance of that unhappy affair, as related to me by Mr. Robinson, who was in the St. Helena, and two seamen who escaped from the North. • • I am certain that he (Capt. C.) was the best pilot on board. There was also a good understanding between him and Capt. Smith, the ship's pilot, who was a very worthy, honest man."

---

\* The Boston Journal, of Nov. 22d, 1850, contained a letter signed William Reed, dated Naskeag, July 2, 1778, and directed to Col. Jonathan Buck, at Penobscot, giving an account of this attack. The Belfast Signal noticed this letter, (see Boston Journal, Dec. 10th, 1850,) stated that Naskeag is now called Sedgwick, and suggested that there must be a mistake in the date of the letter. But this was not so.

The widow of the deceased became a claimant on the British government for part of the amount allowed by them to American Loyalists as a compensation for their losses. During a part of the time, after the death of her husband, she resided with Rev. Jacob Bailey, at Annapolis. In 1782 she lived in Halifax. Two years after the farm and buildings in Pownalborough, abandoned by Capt. Callahan, were unoccupied and rapidly deteriorating. Mrs. C. returned to the United States during that year, but in a few months afterwards was residing with Rev. Mr. Bailey, at Annapolis. Repeated applications were made to the Commissioners appointed for examining the claims of American Loyalists, for compensation to Mrs. Callahan, and she received £40 sterling annually from the British government during her life. Her farm and buildings came into her possession. She returned to Pownalborough about 1790, where she resided till her death, which took place in 1816.

In Rev. J. Bailey's Journal, under date of June 21st, 1779, he writes the following :  
 "The Adventures of the Turners and John Carlo.

"In the beginning of May, 1778, THOMAS TURNER, JAMES TURNER, COOKSON, their brother-in-law, and JOHN and MARTIN CARLO, two brothers, set out on foot, with a design of travelling by land to Halifax, in Nova Scotia.

"They met with a prodigious variety of hardships, obstacles and dangers in their journey, not to mention that perpetual dread of detection, which attended their route. At length, meeting with a number of rebel soldiers, they were constrained to enlist, but were honest enough to refuse the money till they should arrive at Machias. However, instead of proceeding directly to the place of rendezvous, they visited the famous Col. Jones, and applied to him for advice and direction. This gentleman provided our adventurers with a boat, in form of a barge, in which they embarked without any knowledge either of the way, or of navigation. They however ventured to row along shore, in consequence of some general instructions, and then crossed over, by accident, to Grand Menan, and seeing land at a great distance, they set off at daylight, and continued to contend with a boisterous sea till after dark, without arriving at any shore. During all this tedious day, they were obliged to ply the oars with their utmost strength, till they were quite discouraged, and their vigour exhausted, but knowing that any relaxation of their struggles would be fatal, they continued their labours without ceasing, till after midnight, when they entered a bay, 'round which they discovered a large number of settlements. In this situation they were full of anxiety, for being ignorant in what region they had fallen, they were extremely uneasy lest this territory belonged to the rebels. But, upon inquiry, they perceived, to their inexpressible satisfaction, themselves within the limits of Nova Scotia, and that the town before them was a settlement which belonged to the ancient French inhabitants. Here the inhabitants were kind enough to give them ample refreshment. This place being not far distant from Annapolis, they took the first opportunity of going thither, and from thence proceeded by land to Halifax, where they got into business. James Turner and Cookson are still in this town; Thomas Turner and John Carlo, at Penobscot, and Martin Carlo, at Lunenburg." John Jones, writes from Halifax, July 10th, 1781, to Rev. J. Bailey: "T. Turner and M. Carlo were taken prisoners at Kennebeck, and are gone to Boston, and have got my old berth." Afterwards, in writing from Fort George, Penobscot, March 11th, 1782, to Rev. J. Bailey, the same person says: "Thomas Turner and brother, and Martin Carlo, are gone to live at home in peace."

EDMUND DOHARTY, (formerly of Pownalboro', Me.) Rev. J. Bailey says, in a letter to him at Halifax, dated Cornwallis, November 30, 1779: "You cannot imagine what pleasure it gives me to hear from one of my former parishioners in this strange country. Your letter reminds me of those dear friends we left behind in the pleasant land of our nativity; and, though it is our misfortune to remain in a state of banish-

ment, yet, etc. etc. Give our kind regards to your consort and our brother wanderers, who reside at your house."

Thomas Brown, in a letter, dated Halifax, 29th December, 1799, says: "Doharty was found out to connive imprudently in the concealment of some deserters from the Virginia and Albany men-of-war, by which means both he and the old fellow (Dr. C. Mayer,) were dismissed the (Capt. Spry's) works, but upon examination, the latter was found to be ignorant of the matter, and restored to favor again, and how the former will support his family, I know not, as his reputation is greatly blasted by his foolish conduct." E. Doharty was in Halifax, January 28, 1781, as appears by his letter of that date, to Rev. J. Bailey. The latter says, April 18, 1781: "Mr. Doharty and Dr. Mayer are just removed to Penobscot." J. Jones says, Fort George, March 11, 1782: "Doharty has gone out on a cruise."

CAPTAIN — COMBS, (of ———) Rev. J. Bailey says, in a letter to him at Halifax, dated Cornwallis, December 6th, 1779: "Mr. Brown having informed me of your arrival in this Province, my joy at this agreeable intelligence would not permit me to be silent. \* \* I am convinced that you must feel exquisite satisfaction, when you reflect upon your escape from the terrors of tyranny and usurpation, and consider yourself allowed to breathe the air of freedom in a region where mild and legal authority prevails. It is one of the warmest wishes of my heart, that you may procure that countenance and encouragement, which your integrity, your sufferings and your loyalty merit. I fancy you are able to furnish me with some interesting anecdotes of the eastern country, where I hear you resided some time before your departure." In a letter to Mr. Thomas Brown, at Halifax, of same date, Rev. J. Bailey says: "I am rejoiced to hear that Capt. Combs has been fortunate enough to escape from the Rebels. You may regard him as a person of real worth and unshaken integrity, who has resisted all the efforts of his countrymen to seduce and subdue him with amazing fortitude, and his honest attachment to the British government is nearly without example."

JOSEPH DOMETTE, (of Boston, Mass.) Rev. J. Bailey says, in a letter to him at New York, dated February 11th, 1780: "You cannot imagine how much I suffered on your account, during your imprisonment in Boston. I greatly feared that your constitution would not be able to struggle with such a severe misfortune." Joseph Domette, in a letter to Rev. J. Bailey, dated "Brompton, near London, August 17th, 1780," says: "Your anxious concern for me during my cruel persecution, and cordial congratulations on my delivery, are proofs of your benevolence, etc. etc." Mrs. Domette was with him. Thomas Oxnard writes to Rev. J. Bailey, at Cornwallis, under date of New York, December 12th, 1780. Mr. Oxnard says: "Your friend, Mr. Domette, has got £80 a year from Government, and £90 more, by employment from a friend."

Rev. Mr. Bailey writes to J. Domette, at Brompton, near London, under date of November 6th, 1780: "I have in keeping the manuscript you committed to my care at the confagration of Falmouth." Rev. J. Bailey writes to Mr. Joseph Domette, at London, October 31st, 1784: acknowledging the receipt of a letter from him. Rev. J. Bailey writes to Rev. J. Wiswell, Cornwallis, December 4th, 1784, and says: "I was favoured with letters from our brethren Peters and Clark, (then in London,) and one from Mr. Domette, who makes the kindest inquiries after your situation and welfare." Rev. J. Bailey writes, June 13, 1785, to Miss Nye, and says: "I received, yesterday, a large packet of letters from London, written by Mr. Peters, Mr. Clark, Mr. Domette, and others. The latter is about taking Orders, probably for Digby." Rev. J. Bailey writes, June 20, 1785, to Mr. Joseph Domette, London: "I am much pleased with your intention of entering into Holy Orders, but am distressed to hear, by Col. Fry, that you no longer receive a pension from the Government. \* \* \* my most respectful compliments to Mrs. Domette." Nathaniel Coffin writes, August 10th, 1791, to

Rev. J. Bailey: "I lately heard from our friend, Mr. Domette. He writes from Axminster, Devonshire, — says he has gone through many scenes of disappointment; but since, I heard by a friend, that he had taken Orders, and is settled either in Ireland or Wales."

CAPT. CAMPBELL, (of ———.) Rev. J. Bailey, in writing to Joseph Domette, at New York, under date of Cornwallis, February 11th, 1780, says: "Capt. Campbell, Commander of the garrison in this place, is a refugee." In writing to Rev. J. W. Weeks, at Halifax, dated Cornwallis, February 21, 1781, Rev. J. Bailey says: "I beg you would take notice of Johnny Campbell, the bearer, he is a brother refugee, and a favorite." *Mem.*—From a previous letter, it seems that this Johnny Campbell was the son of the above Capt. Campbell, and that after having been a scholar in Mr. Bailey's family, he was destined to enter the Royal Navy. In a letter to Rev. S. Peters, in London, October 15, 1782, Rev. J. Bailey speaks of Capt. Campbell being second in command of the 84th Regiment, in June, 1780.

THOMAS ROBIE, (of ———.) Rev. J. Bailey, in a letter to "Thomas Robie, Esq., at Halifax," dated Cornwallis, February 26th, 1780, says: "The same spirit which pushes men in the land of our nativity to commence Committee men, etc. etc., in these regions, engages men of strong passions and slender abilities to become preachers." Rev. J. Bailey writes, under date of Cornwallis, October 23d, to Mr. Robie, at Halifax, in behalf of Mr. Thomas Brown, who, it seems, was a debtor to Mr. Robie. Also, in another letter, of same date, to Mr. Robie, Mr. B. says: "If you are willing to take my bills, I can immediately transmit you a bill of £12 10, which was due in September."

JOSEPH PATTEN, (of ———.) Rev. William Clark writes to Rev. J. Bailey, at ———, under date of London, December 2d, 1779, and says: "Joseph Patten, Esq., (formerly an active man in that Mission,\* and Representative for that County,) I think you must know, inasmuch as he once told me that he had for a while attended your ministry when he lived in the Eastern Country. I want to know whether he be living, and what part he takes in affairs, *publick and parochial*, etc. I wrote him by Mr. (Rev. J. W.,) Weeks." (This letter is directed to Joseph Patten, Esq., Granville, N. S., and is dated London, March 23d, 1779.)

MAJOR ROGERS, (of ———.) Rev. J. Bailey writes to Maj. Samuel Goodwin, at Pownalboro', under date of September 3d, 1779, and says: "The famous, now Col., but once Major Rogers, is raising two or three battalions of men to range the Eastern Country, etc etc." This was probably Maj. Robert Rogers, of New Hampshire, of whom an interesting account is given in "Sabine's American Loyalists, p. 576, s. s."

——— DOWLING, (of ———.) John Jones writes, Fort George, Penobscot, May 12, 1782, to Rev. J. Bailey. "Mr. Dowling, and a number of our refugees, have been to Marblehead in order to cut out a twenty-gun ship. They were discovered when on shore, and part went and cut out a shallop at noonday, and got in safe. Mr. Dowling, Towns and Dickey, and others, went out of town at noonday to Boston undiscovered, and then got on board of some vessel, came to Kennebeck, and got here safe, except one or two who stopped a few days with their friends."

——— CUMMINGS, (of Hollis, N. H.) Rev. J. Bailey writes: Annapolis, Dec. 11th, 1782, to Thomas Brown, at Halifax. "We have two families of refugees in the house, Mr. Cummings, a gentleman from Hollis, New Hampshire, with a wife and two children from Connecticut; the other is Mr. McKnown, from Boston, with two negro men, and a free woman of the same complexion."

---

\* Annapolis Royal.

JOHN MCKOWN, (of Pemaquid, Me.) "Among other (fellow sufferers from New York,) we have at our house one John McKown, whose father and friends lived at Pemaquid. I imagine you must have some acquaintance with the family. He is a sociable, honest young gentleman, newly married, and his wife tarries at New York." —Rev. J. Bailey's letter, Jan. 2d, 1783, to Mrs. Callahan, (formerly of Pownalborough, Me.)

—FORMAN. Rev. J. Bailey, in writing to the Society, P. G., October 28, 1784, speaks of "Mr. Forman, the principal schoolmaster in Digby, N. S." He calls him "a Refugee and an half-pay officer," and narrates his efforts to promote a proper observance of the Lord's Day, by assembling his pupils for divine service on that day. These were joined by the scholars of other schools in the town, and afterwards by many adults. These efforts, Mr. Bailey says, produced a salutary effect.

COL. (PETER?) FRY, (of Salem, Mass.) Rev. J. Bailey writes to Rev. S. Parker, July 1, 1785, and speaks of intelligence received from England "by Col. Fry, formerly of Salem, who," he says, "resides in my family." In writing to Rev. S. Peters, at London, June 20, 1785, he acknowledges the receipt of letters from him, and says: "Col. Fry, the bearer, takes up his residence under my roof." Rev. J. Bailey says, August 16, 1785, to Rev. Edward Bass: "Col. Fry, late of Salem, left London on the first of May, and now resides at my house." Peter Fry writes, Halifax, N. S., May 22d, 1786, to Rev. J. Bailey: "I would assist you in this matter, but am obliged to leave this part of the world for New Foundland."

WILLIAM GARDINER. Rev. J. Bailey writes to Rev. J. W. Weeks, of Marblehead, under date of Pownalborough, October 10th, 1777: "We have had two Tory Courts. In the former they condemned Mr. William Gardiner." Rev. J. Bailey writes also to Rev. Edward Bass, Newburyport, Sept. 21st, 1777: "I write this by Mr. Gardiner, who is condemned in a most extraordinary manner for transportation." To John Weeks, Esq., of Greenland, N. H., Mr. Bailey also writes, Pownalborough, Sept. 22d, 1777: "I have committed this letter to the care of Mr. Gardiner, who has been tried and condemned without being allowed the benefit of the law, and is now on his journey to Boston, where he will be confined on board a guard ship, unless the sentence shall be reversed." Also to Rev. Dr. Byles: "Pownalborough, October 10, 1777. I must refer to the bearer, Mr. Gardiner, for particulars. He is a true loyalist, and has from the beginning opposed the American measures. No man among us has done more, according to his abilities, to support the distressed friends of government." To Dr. Silvester Gardiner, at London, Rev. J. Bailey writes, Halifax, July 29th, 1779, and says: "The malice of Cushing and Bowman has been restless and furious, both against me and your son. After long attendance Mr. Gardiner obtained leave to visit you at York, but was unhappy enough to find that you had sailed for England. He then returned to Kennebeck, from whence he was driven in April last, but returned June 1st."

—WALLACE. Thomas Brown writes, Halifax, Feb. 16th, 1780: "A man lately died with the small pox at his (Ed. Doherty's) house, in Halifax, who had the distemper as bad, I suppose, as any man ever had it. His name was Wallace, a refugee from New England, a man of good character, who lodged at his house, and was persuaded to be inoculated by a Hessian doctor, and, I believe, lost his life by that means."

NATHANIEL GARDINER, (of Pownalborough.) Rev. J. Bailey writes, Pownalborough, Oct. 13, 1777, to Mr. Thomas Brown, at —: "The bearer, Mr. Nath'l Gardiner, kinsman to Dr. Gardiner, I can recommend as a steady friend to Government. He has greatly distinguished himself by using both his influence and fortune for the support of those who have been persecuted and distressed, &c. &c." John Jones writes,

under date of Fort George, Penobscot, Sept. 4th, 1780, to Rev. J. Bailey, at Cornwallis: "Nat. Gardiner is a prisoner with the rebels in Casco gaol." Thos. Brown in a letter, Halifax, Sept. 13, 1780, to Rev. J. Bailey, at Cornwallis, says: "Nath'l Gardiner, in attempting to get up some iron, belonging to the rebel wrecks," (at Penobscot,) "was unluckily made a prisoner, and is now in Salem (?) gaol. His family is at Penobscot." Nathaniel Gardiner writes from Fort George, Penobscot, January 21st, 1781, to Rev. J. Bailey, at Cornwallis, and says: "In May last I sailed from New York in the armed schooner *Golden Pippin*, which I had the honour to command, and arrived safe at this port after a short passage with my family, designing upon a cruise as soon as I could ship a proper crew, but finding hands scarce, and being advised to go up Penobscot River, (by Commodore Mowat,) was unfortunately taken by a party of rebels, (being a detachment of Gen'l Wadsworth's rebels.) They immediately proceeded with me to Brunswick, (on New Meadow's River,) where I was taken out of said vessel by John Hobby, John Wood, Benjamin Lemmon, and a number of other rebels unknown, who carried me to said Lemmon's house, and kept me under a strong guard all night. In the morning I was marched to Dummer Sewall's, for orders, who never examined me a word, but gave orders for my marching to Casco goal in irons. These orders were complied with, and I was marched down to Stephen Samson's to have my irons on, where I was met by a crowd of miscreants, from whom I received abundance of insults and menaces, hardly to be borne with, and in about an hour set out for Casco. Arrived at Brunswick, at Stone's, in the evening, much fatigued. I was put into a chamber, where four men guarded me the whole night, with the door locked, and in bed in irons. The next morning early set out for Falmouth, where we arrived about sunset. In my way I was carried to the gallows, and told that that was my place. I was delivered to one Joseph Prime, then Commanding Officer at Falmouth; and after searching my pockets, and taking from me my Commission and instructions from the Court of Admiralty, thrust me into gaol, where I had neither bed, blanket, or anything to lay on but the oak plank floor, with the heads of spikes an inch high, and so thick together I could not lay down clear of them. Neither victuals nor drink ordered me, and a strong guard set at the prison, in which I lay five days. My son brought me some money, or I must have died from such cruel treatment as I received at their hands. I arrived at Casco prison the 29th day of June, 1780, and was indicted for High Treason the latter part of the first week in July following, as you will see by the enclosed copy. I employed Mr. Lowell and Mr. Bradbury for my counsel, who were threatened by the mobility at the Court House door for undertaking for a Tory. At length, by the interest and influence of my two attorneys, the case was continued to next term. I tarried in prison four months, during which time they never allowed me the value of a paper dollar to eat or drink, but what I paid for as I had it. After they robbed me of clothes, and even my pocket-book, they told the gaoler if I could not support myself I might die and be —. At length I found means to break the prison and make my escape."

In a letter from the same to the same, from same place, dated March 12th, 1781, he says: "I have the pleasure to inform you that Sally is married to Mr. Rogers, the Commissary of this garrison. Docter Coffin was very kind to me while in prison, and desires to be remembered to you. I left Ridley in Casco gaol when I left it, for Toryism, but, I am informed, he is since gone home." Nathaniel Gardiner writes to Rev. J. Bailey, Cornwallis, under date Fort George, Penobscot, March 28th, 1781; "I send you a copy of my Indictment, in order to let you know the determination of the Rebels, while in their power, with insults and irons for four months, without anything to eat or drink, and at last broke gaol and made my escape. Indeed, I am not able to describe to you my sufferings. They have robbed me of all I had, and reduced me to the lowest ebb. I am in no way of doing anything at present."

Rev. J. Bailey, in answering the above, April 17, 1781, says: "I determine to

transmit a copy of your indictment to Mr. Domette and Mr. Lyde, who have considerable influence with some leading gentlemen. • • I shall have strong inducements to do this, both from motives of sympathy and gratitude, for the many favours we formerly received from your generosity have laid us under pressing obligations to make the most sensible returns in our power." In writing to George Lyde, at London, under date of April 30, 1781, Rev. J. Bailey says: "Mr. Nathaniel Gardiner was formerly a Justice in the colony of Rhode Island, but lately an inhabitant of Pownalborough, on the Kennebec River. • • After being cruelly harrassed and plundered, he escaped from the dominions of revolt, and through various obstructions arrived in safety at New York." H. B. Brown, in writing to Rev. J. Bailey, Halifax, June 29th, 1783, speaks of the proposed abandonment of Fort George, Penobscot, by the British. He continues: "some of the inhabitants intend for Port Roseway, others for Passamaquoddy. Mr. Gardiner and family are for the former. He has been over there lately with a load of boards, and has drawn his lot." Rev. J. Bailey wrote to N. Gardiner, July 26th, 1784: "I am anxious to hear in what manner you proceed at Port Roseway, and whether you are in love with the name, Shelburne?"

—— CHARLESTOWN.\* Rev. J. Bailey writes, Cornwallis, Sept. 6th, 1781, to Rev. J. W. Weeks: "I am favoured with your letter by Charlestown, who has often transported us over the river of rebellion when we resided at Cambridge."

DR. JAMES TUPPER, (of Pownalboro'.) This gentleman resided at Pownalboro', at least from August 24th, 1772, till June 8th, 1776, as during the time embraced between these two dates entries are made in Rev. J. Bailey's Journal of their exchanging visits at their respective houses. In September, 1779, Mr. Bailey writes to him at Newport, R. I., and speaks of "our friends in that quarter," meaning Pownalboro', which he had just before mentioned.

In a letter from Fort George, May 12th, 1782, it is said: "Dr. Tupper is here, and gives me the news from that quarter.† He has lived at home with his father in peace for a long time." Rev. J. Bailey writes June 10th, 1787, to Peter Hunter, Esq., Secretary to the Commissioners, &c., at St. John, N. B.: "I enclosed to your direction, some time ago, a certificate respecting Mrs. Rebecca Callahan, but as I am uncertain whether you ever received it, I would beg leave to transmit another by Dr. Tupper, a gentleman with whom I have long been acquainted. He was High Sheriff under His Majesty. I know him to have been loyal from the beginning of the late revolution, and that he has suffered several severe imprisonments for his adherence to the Royal cause." This application probably proved unsuccessful, as the subject of this notice returned to Nantucket, where he died.

BENJAMIN SNOW. Mr. Bailey says of this person, that "he made his escape to Annapolis in 1781." In a letter to the Venerable Society, Oct., 1782, Mr. Bailey writes: "The school at Annapolis has been supplied for a year past by Mr. Benjamin Snow, who received his education at Dartmouth College and was expelled from New England for his loyalty." Rev. Dr. Morice in his reply to this communication in January of the following year, says: "The Society have complied with all your requests. They have appointed Mr. Benjamin Snow their schoolmaster at Annapolis, with the usual salary of ten Pounds, commencing on Michaelmas last." In the spring of 1783 Mr. Bailey wrote to the subject of this notice at St. Johns, N. B., to which place he had then removed. December 10th, 1785, Mr. Bailey wrote to Rev. Mr. Cook, at the above-named place: "I am persuaded that Mr. Snow is in very narrow circumstances."

---

\* This may have been a nickname given to an individual well known to Mr. Bailey and Mr. Weeks.

† Probably Nantucket.

JOHN LEE, (of Concord, Mass.) October, 1777, Mr. Bailey says: "Mr. Lee is captain of a company in New York." To John Jones, Feb. 8, 1780: "Your brother, Jack Lee, came to Halifax, soon after the dispersion of the rebels at Penobscot, and was frequently at my house. He informed us that his brother had reached New York in safety. He had been in a privateer with Nat. Gardiner, and afterwards returned to Penobscot, and then came to Halifax in the *Nautilus*." And in a letter written about the same time to Mr. Jonas Lee, at Concord, Mass., Mr. Bailey says: "Your brother Jack was frequently at my house in September last, but where he is at present I am uncertain."

CAPTAIN ANTILL GALLOP, (of ———) He embarked with the British army for Halifax in 1776.

Mr. Bailey says, September 15th, 1781: "Capt. Gallop, my particular friend, left Newbury, (Mass.) within this fortnight, and is now at Windsor."

Thomas Brown writes, Halifax, September 13th, of the same year: "Our friend Gallop has been very unfortunate in his affairs, having been captured by a rebel ship, carried to Guadaloupe, whence he took passage for Newbury, and lately arrived here, in a cartel from Portsmouth." Captain Gallop was at Windsor, N. S., in the following November, as appears from the copy of a letter addressed to him there.

Mr. Bailey writes to him, August 16, 1782, and says: "In the evening I received a visit from Captain Baxter and his son. They inform me that you had been endowed with a grant of one thousand acres of land upon St. John's. This intelligence has excited me to petition for indulgence of the same nature. Our good friend, Captain Baxter, is desirous of having me settle with them, and, in that case, I should be entitled to a thousand acres as the first minister."

The subject of this notice was at Windsor, N. S., October 25th, 1782, and at Parrsborough, July 10th, 1786.

——— WILLIAMS.\* Mr. Bailey says in a letter, April 1st, 1783: "The bearer, Mr. Williams, was formerly an eminent lawyer in New England, but was expelled for his aversion to rebellion."

JAMES ROGERS. Mr. Bailey writes to him September 2d, 1782, and says: "When did you receive any intelligence from Mrs. Rogers, your little son, and our friends at Penobscot?"

Another letter from Mr. Bailey, July 26th, 1784, was addressed to J. Rogers, at Shelburne, N. S.

SIMON BAXTER, (of New Hampshire.) In writing to Joseph Domette, then in England, under date of October 17th, 1782, Mr. Bailey says: "A few days ago I was favoured with a visit from Capt. Baxter, formerly a fellow prisoner with you in Boston."

Captain S. Baxter says in a letter: "Cunnab enis. Feb. 10th, 1783, I am settled with my family on the promised land, and am doing very well."

BARTHOLEMEW SULLIVAN, (of ———) embarked at Boston with the British army, for Halifax, in 1776.

Rev. J. Bailey wrote to him at New York, July 6th, 1779; also, to the same place, August 14th of the same year, giving him an account of the situation of Gen. McLean, at Penobscot. In a letter, August, 1780, to Bartholemew Sullivan, at New York, Mr. Bailey acknowledges the receipt of a letter from him. Mr. Bailey also wrote, July 26th, 1784, to Mr. Sullivan, and said: "We have both passed through a variety of scenes since our last meeting at the house of our old friend, Dr. Gardiner, in Boston."

---

\* Perhaps Elijah, of Keene, N. H. See *Sabine's American Loyalists*, p. 71.



DR. JONATHAN HICKS, (of Boston, Mass.) Dr. Hicks was in Pownalborough at various times during the first six months of 1774. Mr. Bailey terms him Dr. Hicks, "of Boston," though he was settled for about two years in what is now Gardiner, Maine. Mr. Bailey wrote to him, August 12th, 1779, at Antigua. He also wrote, December 22d, 1780, and said: "By a letter from your brother last winter, I was informed that you were then well at Antigua."

GEORGE LYDE, (of Falmouth, Maine.) This gentleman wrote to Mr. Bailey, February 17th, 1778: "I purpose to go to (New) York in the first frigate, and from thence to London. Capt. Pote, Mr. Oxnard, and Mr. Simmons, are all well, and desire their compliments." A letter was addressed to the subject of this notice at New York, dated July 3d, 1779, by Mr. Bailey, giving him an account of the sufferings which the writer had undergone from political persecutions. He also wrote to him at the same place, during the following winter. In this letter he says: "You have a sister married to an inhabitant of this town, (Cornwallis,) highly bigotted to principles which compelled us and thousands more, to abandon our beloved homes, and to explore an asylum in distant climes." J. Domette, in a letter from Brompton, near London, August 17th, 1780, says: "Mr. Lyde is well, and, I believe, intends writing."

JOHN CARLETON, (of Woolwich, Me.) Mr. Bailey says, April 27th, 1781, in a letter to Rev. William Clark: "As to Mr. Carleton, he is one of my old Parishioners, a man of the highest integrity, the most undaunted fortitude and inflexible loyalty. When the whole country was rising into sedition and mobs, spreading the terrors of their rioting into every region, nothing could shake his firmness, or abate his intrepidity, and though he was met in a lonely forest by near two hundred men in arms, requiring him to sign the solemn league and covenant, or consent to be buried alive, he nobly acquiesced with the latter, and with great resolution assisted in digging his own grave: but finding him still unmoved with their menaces, they allowed him to escape. There were generous spirits among them, swearing that he was a brave fellow. He afterwards concealed in his house, supported and aided in their flight, several unhappy exiles. He was a friendly benefactor to me and family, and it was from his house we took our departure for Nova Scotia. But I am almost wholly unacquainted with his story since that event. It is true, I received a short letter from him a few days ago, announcing his residence at Penobscot."

April 7th, 1781. Mr. Bailey writes to Thomas Brown, and speaks of having just received letters from Penobscot, "from our old friend, John Carleton." "Mr. Carleton," he continues, "was plundered by the rebels, and after a variety of adventures, reached the British lines in company with several young men of his neighbourhood. He is regarded as a man of enterprise and activity. A number of my parishioners and acquaintance have lately arrived from the rebel dominions, among the rest, Mr. Benoni Gardiner, son to Nathaniel Gardiner." The following day, in a letter to Rev. J. W. Weeks, it is said: "Carleton being taken by a vessel in the British service, and carried into the above-mentioned port,\* was sent in his own schooner, by Col. Campbell, as a cartel to Boston. But without any regard to the sanctity of a flag, the rebels seized his vessel, and plundered his effects. He was, however, fortunate enough to escape, and with two or three young fellows, belonging to Woolwich, reached Penobscot in safety, leaving a wife and ten children to the mercy of the incensed rebels." A letter from Fort George, Penobscot, written about a month later than the foregoing, says: "Carleton is gone in a flag to Kennebeck for some families."

Mr. Bailey addressed the following to Captain C. It is dated Cornwallis, N. S. April 8th, 1782. "I received a letter from you last summer, but was prevented from

---

\* Penobscot.

making any reply by reason of the rebel boats and plunderers on our coast. I have letters from Penobscot, but no mention of you. As to what you mentioned concerning your return to Kennebeck: if you are not already there, I would beg leave to reply, that I cannot apprehend it would be prudent for you to put yourself into their power, and to what purpose will be Mr. McCobb's protection, however honest his intentions, when there is a power in the governor and his council to apprehend any person they please, and to proceed with him according to martial law. It cannot be denied that, according to their laws, you have been guilty of treason."

—— JACKSON, (of ——.) Rev. J. Bailey wrote to Mr. Jackson at Pownalboro', Maine, and said: "Mr. Lee has lately arrived here from New York, and informs me that your brother is at Newport, Rhode Island."

—— COFFIN, DR., (of Falmouth, Maine.) In writing to Rev. Mr. Wiswall, April 28th, 1781, Mr. Bailey says: "Dr. Coffin still continues at Falmouth, an inflexible friend of government."

DR. CASSIMIRE MEYER, (of Pownalboro', Maine.) Dr. Meyer accompanied Rev. J. Bailey in his journey to Halifax, in June, 1779. When Mr. B. left that place for Cornwallis, Dr. M. remained behind. He was implicated with Edmund Doharty, in the concealment of deserters from British men-of-war, but was cleared from the charge. (See under E. Doharty.) Mr. Bailey says, April 18th, 1781: "Mr. Doharty and Dr. Meyer are just removed to Penobscot." Mrs. B. Callahan writes, Pownalboro', Oct. 11th, 1789: "The Meyers are all well. Cassimire has returned, built him a hut on the banks of the Sydney, and lives quite in the hermit's style. The name of the Eastern River is altered by Court to that of Sydney."

MAJ. SAMUEL GOODWIN, (of Pownalboro'.) His agency in promoting the settlement of Kennebec has been spoken of.

Mr. Bailey says: "Major Goodwin signed an address to Gen. Gage."

## LETTERS AND JOURNALS.

The following letters and journals were not inserted in the Memoir. But as they appear to contain much that is worthy of being preserved, they are placed in the Appendix.

POWNALEBORO', April 8th, 1763.

To Dr. S. Gardiner, Boston.

• • As to Cobbosee,\* I am sorry to find some of the greatest bigots there in the land against the Church of England. I was lately among them to preach a lecture, but the people excused themselves from attending, and desired that I would visit them on a Sunday. I however preached at Capt. Howard's,† and had a considerable congregation of the upper settlers. • • •

POWNALEBORO', March 10th, 1766.

To Rev. H. Cane, Boston.

• • I have had more avocations abroad this winter than ever, on the business of my Mission, and have been several journeys of twenty or thirty miles each way, to marry and baptize.

POWNALEBORO', October 15th, 1766.

To Mr. Amos Bailey.

• • • We have all been alarmed on account of the Indians, and have been obliged to quit our habitations, though there has not the least damage been done by them.

## 1767.

August 1st. At Richmond, at Mr. Nye's.

2d—Sunday. 80 persons at Church. Contribution, £3 19 6, O. T.

3d. Mrs. Silvester here.

13th. Visit from Mess. Bowdoin's, Pitts' and Reed's families.

16th—Sunday. 82 persons at Church. Contribution, £2 12 0.

20th. Married John Row and Hannah Chase. 60 people present.

27th. A great quarrel at Frankfort.‡

September 7th. At Richmond, at Deacon Chase's.

11th. At Mr. Houdlette's. Married Philip Mayer and Polly Houdlette. Sixty people present. A fine entertainment.

21st. Set out to meet Mr. Weeks.‡ Lodged at Dr. Moor's.

---

\* Cobosee-contee, or Sturgeon River, is the Indian name of a stream which enters the Kennebec at the present city of Gardiner. The territory near the junction of the two rivers retained for a long time the name which the Indians gave to the stream.

† Probably at Fort Western, in the present city of Augusta.

‡ This was the name of the West Precinct of Pownalboro', before the territory bearing that appellation was incorporated. The original name appears to have continued in popular language many years after the act of incorporation.

‡ Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, Rector of St. Michael's Church, Marblehead.

- 22d. Travelled to Skillings' (?) with Capt. Berry.  
 23d. Arrived at Ladd's, (?) but saw nothing of Mr. Weeks. At night, came to Mr. Greenwood's and lodged.  
 24th. Travelled with Mr. Greenwood. Arrived at Portsmouth, and slept at Col. Warner's.  
 25th. Arrived at Newbury, and slept at (Rev.) Mr. Bass's.  
 26th. Changed horses at Rowley. Arrived at Marblehead.  
 27th—*Sunday*. Preached for Mr. Weeks.  
 28th. Mr. Weeks procured for me five dollars. Capt. Walton (?) gave me one. Arrived at Marchas, (Manchester?) and lodged at my brother's.  
 29th. Rode to Rowley, and there found my old friend Dr. Moore (?). Spent the afternoon at Mrs. Woodman's.  
 30th. Rode to Portsmouth. Visited Mr. Browne,\* and slept at Col. Warner's.  
*October 1st*. Travelled this day with Dr. Jones, Capt. Lovet, and Capt. Woodman. We all put up at Kimball's.  
 2d. Reached Mitchell's about dusk.  
 3d. Reached Dr. Moor's, greatly fatigued.  
 4th. Reached home.  
 7th. Unwell, could not attend a funeral.  
 8th. Visited Mr. Lilly, Mr. Houdlette, Mr. J. Goud, and Mr. P. Mayer.  
 11th—*Sunday*. 85 persons at Church. Contribution, 18s.  
 12th. Mr. Michels arrived here.  
 18th—*Sunday*. But a few people at Church.  
 22d. Mrs. Bailey and I go to Woolwich.  
 23d. We come from Woolwich, and dine at Mr. Preble's. Afterwards, I go down to Mr. Butler's.  
 24th. At Mr. Butler's and Mr. Moulton's.  
 25th—*Sunday*. Preached at Mr. Drummond's.† Baptized two.  
 26th. Rode down to Mr. Percy's, but got badly lost.  
 27th. Returned. Baptized 5 children.  
 28th. A severe storm of rain and snow. At Dr. Moor's, Visited Mr. Winter.‡  
 29th. A violent stormy wind. At Dr. Moor's.  
 30th. Rode home.  
 31st. Travelled in my late excursion 80 miles.  
 [The Journals are missing from November 1st, 1787, to April 1st, 1789.]

## 1769.

- April 5th—Sunday*. Such bad travelling, no service.  
 13th. At Mr. Lilly's,|| Mr. Goud's, Mrs. Patterson's, and Capt. Callahan's.  
 16th. Mr. Dunlap here, at Major Goodwin's. Letters from Boston.  
 17th. Capt. Callahan arrives here, with a large packet from Dr. Gardiner, containing a plan of a Church, etc. At Mr. Pochard's. Baptized Jane —— Carney.  
 18th. Mrs. Chase here.  
 21st. At Capt. Callahan's, Mr. Goud's, Mr. Ridley's, etc.  
 23d. Rode over to Averill's. Married his daughter Lydia to A. Dunlap.

---

\* Rev. Arthur Browne, Rector of Queen's Chapel.

† In Georgetown.

‡ Probably Rev. Francis Winter, (Harvard Coll., 1765,) Pastor of the Second Congregational parish in Georgetown.

|| Mr. L. was an Englishman. He taught a school for a number of years. Contributions were raised for his benefit, and those under his instruction paid a fixed sum, but the children of the poor were taught gratuitously.

24th. At Dr. Rice's and Mr. Wood's. Married Nathaniel Handlett to Lydia Leclat (?).

26th—*Easter Day*. Eleven Communicants.

27th. Chose Parish officers.

30th. At Mr. Chase's.

POWNALBORO', January 5th, 1771.

To Mr. William Gardiner.

• • We have had a fine winter here, and the people of Gardinerston are at work upon the frame of their church.

[The Journals are missing from May 1st, 1769, to January 1st, 1772.]

1772.

January 13th. At Martin Haley's.

JANUARY 25th, 1772.

To Mr. William Gardiner.

• • • I am invited to preach at Pond-town,\* and other settlements up the river.

27th. Rode to Woolwich. Baptised William and Margaret, children of William and Eliza Gilmore.

February 2d—*Sunday*. 33 persons at Church. Baptised Nathaniel Bailey. Myself and brother, Mrs. Bailey, Eliza Pochard, Capt. Callahan, Mr. Pochard, and Mrs. B. (Sponsors ?)

3d. Judge Cushing† and Rowland Cushing spend the evening at my house.

7th. At Mr. Malbone's.

10th. Twenty people here for pews.

16th—*Sunday*. 15 persons at Church. Snow 3 feet 6 inches deep.

25th. (Rev.) Mr. Wheeler‡ here.

29th. Mr. Parsons arrives here.

March 3d. Mr. Parsons returns for Portsmouth.

5th. A most violent snow storm—continues all night. Snow falls to the depth of 14 inches. Set off for Georgetown; obliged to return.

9th. At Mr. White's.

17th. John Stain and George Goud came to cypher.

April 5th—*Sunday*. 70 persons at Church. Baptised J. Jacqueen.

6th. At Mr. Herring's funeral.

20th. A violent, cold snow storm. 8 people at the choice of Church officers.

21st. At Mr. Ridley's and Mr. Lovejoy's.

28th—*Sunday*. 80 persons at Church. Baptised Joanna Carney and Samuel Clensy.

May 16th. Baptised 3 children for Loins.

28th. Baptised Spearing and two children.

29th. Baptised 3 children for Emerson; one of them dies suddenly the same day.

30th. Hannah Emerson buried.

June 2d. At my brother's. Mr. Gardiner.

3d. Mrs. Bailey went with me to Cobboosee.

4th. At Gardinerstown. Six Indians.

\* Pond-town includes the present towns of Winthrop, Readfield, and part of Wayne.—*History of Kennebec Parishes*. Me. Hist. Colls., II. 286.

† William Cushing was the first Judge of Probate in Lincoln County. He afterwards received an appointment as Chief Justice of the Supreme Judicial Court of Massachusetts. At a later date, Washington appointed him a Judge of the Supreme Court of the United States.

‡ Of Georgetown.

- 6th. Came home.  
 7th—*Sunday*. 100 persons at Church. Contribution, £1 10 0.  
 13th. At Capt. Twycross'\*.  
 17th. At Capt. Lovejoy's. Baptized 4 children at McGown's.  
 23d. At Mr. J. Reed's, Mr. Goud's, etc. Esq. Preble, Dr. McKeehie.  
 25th. At Mr. Kendall's.  
 28th. At Mr. Doe's.  
 29th. Set off for Falmouth.  
 30th. Arrive at Falmouth.  
*July 1st*. After paying several visits, set off for home, and lodged at Loring's.  
 2d. Returned home.  
 6th. Dr. (S.) Gardiner and son here.  
 12th—*Sunday*. 55 persons at Church. Scales preaches at the Court-house.  
 19th—*Sunday*. 95 persons at Church. Scales at the Court-house.  
 22d. At Mr. L. Houdlette's. Mr. Gardiner here.  
 27th. Required by Col. Cushing to quit my house to M.  
 29th. M. takes possession of this house.  
*August 3d*. Mr. Springer here.  
 5th. A terrible storm of thunder, lightning and rain, for 6 hours. J. Noble's house struck.  
 6th. Went to Gardinerston. Raised their spire.  
 8th. At home. Company, Capt. Folger and Mr. Baker.  
 10th. At Mr. Patterson's. Baptized Joanna Howard.  
 13th. Mr. Winter preached at Mr. Kidder's, and baptized 9 persons.  
 14th. Mr. Winter and Mr. Winthrop here.  
 16th—*Sunday*. Opened the Church at Cobbosee. 80 persons present. Baptized Daniel Tibbetts, John Door, and Joseph Pike, *Adults*; and Louisa Fletcher, Theodore, Edward and Abiather Tibbetts, and Hannah Warren.  
 22d. At Capt. Smith's.  
 23d—*Sunday*. 90 persons at Church. Contribution, £1 7 0.  
 24th. At Call's. Baptized children for him.  
 25th. At Capt. Folger's, to visit Mrs. Pratt, sick.  
 29th. At Mr. Leure's (?) Baptized his child.  
 30th—*Sunday*. 92 persons at Church. Contribution, £7 0 0.  
 31st. Set out with Mrs. Bailey for Boston. Tarried over night at Dr. Moor's.  
*September 1st*. In company with Mr. Winter. Lodged at Bachman's.  
 2d. Lodged at Littlefield's.  
 3d. Lodged at York.  
 4th. Lodged at Newbury.  
 5th. Arrived at Marblehead.  
*Sept. 6th—Sunday*. Preached at Marblehead.  
 7th. At Marblehead.  
 8th. At Salem. Arrived at Boston, an angry interview with Dr. (S.) Gardiner.  
 9th. Met with trouble at the Convention.  
 10th. Dined at Dr. Byles' in Charlestown.  
 11th. Returned to Marblehead.  
 12th. Dined at Mr. Abraham's.  
 13th—*Sunday*. At Marblehead.  
 14th. Dined at Col. Gallison's.

---

\*Robert Twycross came as master of a merchant ship from England to Kennebec. He married Lydia, daughter of Maj. S. Goodwin, by whom he had five children. He left the country in time of the Revolution, and became a Lieutenant in the Royal Navy. His wife and children went to him in London. One of them, Stephen N., returned, and married Mary Bailey, and died in Dresden.

- 15th. John Weeks here.  
 16th. Went to Boston. Mrs. Bailey went to Greenland.  
 17th. Spent the day chiefly at Charlestown.  
 18th. Returned in the evening to Marblehead.  
 19th. At Salem. Supped at Capt. Webb's.  
 20th—*Sunday*. Preached, but very unwell.  
 21st. Set out from Marblehead. Lodged at Newbury.  
 22d. Third Mrs. Bailey at North-hill. Lodged at Greenland.  
 23d. Lodged at Cape Natick.  
 24th. In company with Mrs. Perkins, and the Doctor, lodged at Mr. Traak's.  
 25th. Lodged at Mr. Springers.  
 26th. Arrived home with Mrs. Bailey and her brother, the Doctor.  
*Oct 6th*. Abroad training.  
 11th—*Sunday*. Disappointed of preaching at Gardinerstown; preached at home.  
 12th. Four children of Mr. Carney's at school.  
 13th. Mr. Gardiner lodges here.

POWNALBOROUGH, October 15th, 1772.

To *Rev. W. W. Wheeler*.

REV. SIR:—I was very sorry not to find you at Boston, and was sadly disappointed in missing an opportunity of seeing you. I sincerely regret your absence from this country, which leaves me wholly exposed to the merciless rage, I will presume to say, of the vilest miscreants on earth. You have doubtless heard that I have been expelled my habitation; and with a view of preserving the church from destruction I took a lease of the parsonage house for six months. Dr. Gardiner was extremely offended at my proceedings. He wanted me to engage in a law suit with M., but, in the opinion of good lawyers, fully acquainted with the circumstances, there was hardly a bare probability of success. There is now liberty of redemption till the last of next July, and if the Doctor would compose himself to reason, the affair might easily be accommodated. But this gentleman was certainly wrong to erect the church and house upon disputed lands, contrary to repeated remonstrances. At Convention I had a most melancholy time. The Doctor made his complaint against me to the clergy, accused me of sacrilege, and, if I understand the matter, endeavoured to obtain their interest against me with the Society. Two or three gentlemen were very severe against me, and an equal number were in my favour. At length the matter dropped without any representation of the affair to the Society. I reckon myself under peculiar obligations to Mr. Troutbeck and Mr. Winslow. I am sorry, however, I took a lease, though my intentions were for the best. I believe it would have been better if I had wholly quitted the house and refused to commence a lawsuit about the matter; and if all should now be accommodated I am in a very bad situation, having already expended near a year's salary, and must be a slave to my successor.

21st. At Goodwin's. All sick with the measles.

[Extract from a communication by Mr. Bailey to one of the Boston newspapers, November 2d, 1772:—]

"The western part of this town is separated from Wiscasset by a tract of uncultivated land seven or eight miles over, and was chiefly settled by foreign Protestants, mostly French, about twenty years ago, in the neighborhood of which, at that time, resided a Romish Missionary, from Canada, who labored to seduce the people both from their religion and the English interest. His design being perceived, and to prevent their children from being perverted, they united in a petition, setting forth these facts, to the Society for Propagating the Gospel in Foreign Parts, requesting that a Missionary of the Church of England might be appointed to reside among them.

The Society, in consideration of their danger, and in compassion to their extreme poverty, granted their petition, and have ever since supplied them both with a Minister, a number of Bibles, and many pious tracts. It must be evident that no objection can be advanced against supporting a Mission in that remote and necessitous part of the country; and the ingenious Dr. Mayhew, well known to be no friend to the Church or the Society, acknowledges that their conduct in this instance merits the highest applause.

*Nov. 4th.* At Nantucket.\*

*8th—Sunday.* 77 persons at Church. Contribution £3 5s.

*12th.* At Col. Cushing's.

*17th.* At Mr. Twing's.

*Dec. 3rd—Thanksgiving Day.* 33 persons at church. Preached at night at Lovejoy's, 34 persons present.

*8th—Sunday.* 6 persons present. At night baptized four children of Cleaveland's. (?)

*15th.* At Capt. Twycross'.

POWNBOROUGH, November 7th, 1772.

*To Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, Marblehead.*

DEAR SIR:—I have received your letter and the bundle you sent from Marblehead, but hear nothing of the other by way of Newmarket. You have doubtless seen the pieces signed "Probus" and "Detector." Mr. B. and his companion keep them very private, and, I believe, would never have exposed them among the people here had not Callahan opened the matter. These gentlemen declare, without any reserve, that "Probus" is Dr. Caner, and they scruple not to call him a liar. It is imagined that "Detector" is Col. C., with the assistance of Bowman. But whoever is the author, it is a composition of the most open and notorious falsehoods. He asserts that "our first inhabitants emigrated from Frankfort." Now before a single person knew of these publications I made an exact enquiry, and found that not a single person came either from Frankfort, or from its jurisdiction. He next declares, that "no French were among them." It might with equal truth be affirmed that all the inhabitants of Kennebeck are Indians. Again, he makes a mighty parade about a settlement began from Dorchester in 1760. In reply to that, I am certain that only two families of Quakers from Scituate settled in this place that year. Besides these, three families, two of European Church people, and the other a Quaker, began in November the settlement at Cobbosee-Contee. These are all the persons who settled in Kennebeck in 1760. What is asserted concerning two parishes on Sheepscot River is equally false, for there is but one, and the old ordained minister so largely supported, is blind Prince, whose hearers are extremely poor, and himself in almost a starving condition. Col. Cushing has declared, since his arrival from the westward, that had not my attachment to Dr. Gardiner been so great, I should not have had an enemy in Pownalborough, and he hinted that it was yet in my power to secure the friendship of every one. This, perhaps, was said for some ensnaring purpose. His opinion and yours, that but few would go to church if they were obliged to contribute to its support, is contrary to my notion of the matter. More, I am persuaded, would be willing to pay towards the church than the meeting, but were both to be maintained here by the people, some would certainly turn Quakers to avoid taxes. An exchange with (Rev.) Mr. Badger would be agreeable to me, but I cannot think that there is the most distant prospect of his accepting the offer. The affair was mentioned some time ago, and I was informed that it was disagreeable to my hearers.

---

\* Four persons from the Island of Nantucket, Mass., purchased a farm in the northeasterly part of Pownalborough, and gave the name of their former residence to their purchase.



December 18th. . . . I cannot avoid mentioning the extraordinary generosity of our people. We have not bought any kind of meat since we came home, and yet have been plentifully supplied. Besides meal, butter, and a great plenty of vegetables, Mrs. Bailey says we have meat enough to last us a month. Scarce a family have failed to contribute something.

25th—Christmas Day. 32 persons at Church.

26th. No ice in the river except a little run.

30th. A fine, clear, warm day. Flies playing about in the fields like summer. Wind S. W.

31st. Scarcely any ice in the river.

[At the end of this journal are the following names. Some of them are known to have been children at the time, all were young persons. They may have been members of a school which Mr. Bailey taught, or perhaps Catechumens in his parish; Molly Houdlette,\* Becky Nye, Becky Emerson,† Sarah Emerson,‡ Hannah Emerson, Peggy McGown,|| Jenny McGown,§ Molly McGown,¶ Molly Clensy, Betty Kendall,\*\* Mary Carlo,†† Jenny Pochard,‡‡ Katy Carlow, Lydia Goodwin, Nancy Goodwin, Sally Ridley,||| Charlotte Smith, Molly Carney, Polly Lovejoy,§§ Fanny Lovejoy, Sally Andros, Ruthy Carney, Dolly Houdlette,¶¶ Anna C. Houdlette,\*.\* Martin Carlow, George Pochard, William Kendall, Thomas Burns, James Patterson, Amos Holland, James Ridley, John Ridley, Francis Ridley.]

1773.

[The Journal for January is missing.]

POWNAUBORO', Feb. 6th, 1773.

To Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, Marblehead.

DEAR SIR:— . . . I should be glad of your resolution of the following case. I lately published a young fellow to Mr. Ridley's daughter immediately after service. Another young woman forbade the banns, alledging that he was under engagements to her. The next morning they paid me a visit, and the man acknowledged that he had solemnly promised himself to both, and begged that Esther Kendall, the girl present, would release him. She declared herself willing, but was under scruples of conscience on account of her promise, which was in the following words: "I wish I may never enter into the kingdom of heaven if I marry any other man," and desired me to give my opinion. After a long dispute the fellow declared, before witnesses, in favour of the girl's character, and gave his consent that his publishment to her rival might go on, but the next day Mrs. Ridley forbade it again, and the poor fellow was left absolutely destitute, for Esther absolutely refuses to marry him, but imagines herself obliged by her promise to live single all her days. Now I should be obliged if you would give me your sentiments.

February 7th—Sunday. A storm of snow, 8 inches. No service in church.

20th. At S. Marson's.

26th. Baptised Benjamin Lawrence.

28th. Mr. Gardiner, Dr. McKeeknie and Mr. Goodwin.

---

* Married George Mayer.	† Married John Stain.	‡ Married Eliphalet Dudley.
Married Col. Cargill.	§ Married ——— Mason.	¶ Married George Mason.
** Married Paul Beckford.	†† Married ——— White.	‡‡ Married John McGown.
Married Dr. Theobald.	§§ Married ——— Dinsmore.	¶¶ Married Abraham Page.
*.* Married ——— Beckford.	Mrs. Beckford is now living, and was 93 years of age June 10th, 1863.	

*March 2d.* Ran out the Church land with Mr. Goodwin and Dr. McKeeckie.

*3d.* Baptized Mr. Kendall.

*5th.* At Mr. Gatchell's, (at Bowdoinham.)

*6th.* At John Barker's.

*11th.* Baptized Hannah, Joanna, Nathaniel, and Elizabeth Haley.

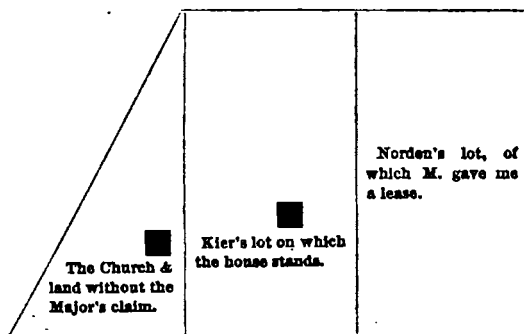
*14th—Sunday.* 114 people at church.

POWNAUBORO', March 16th, 1773.

To Rev. J. Wingate Weeks, Marblehead, Mass.

It is above three months since I have had the pleasure of hearing from you. I hope no misfortune has befallen you or your family. I am very uneasy in my present situation, and what gives me the greatest vexation, is the scandal which was thrown upon me by Dr. Gardiner, and so readily believed by several of my brethren, who, without a proper knowledge of the law, or any acquaintance with the circumstances of affairs were disposed to condemn me. In the first place it is evident by a standing law of the Province, (see p. 370,) that no Episcopal minister can aliene any lands or possessions of the Church, without the concurrence of his Wardens and Vestry; and next, if there is any foundation for a law-suit, it must be carried on in their names, which they absolutely refuse, every one declares that he had rather pay his proportion to redeem it; and besides, upon lately running out the land by a sworn surveyor, we were able to correct several mistakes. The land, of which M. gave me a lease, falls without our grant from the Plymouth Company, and therefore could by no means affect our title to the parsonage, then the house is found to stand upon land of which he gave me no lease, and, to our great satisfaction, we find the church is without the limits of the Major's claim, and with it about thirty-five acres of land.

But to make the matter plain, I have annexed the following scheme:



By this you will perceive that, though the church and a pretty lot of land are secure, yet the house is on Goodwin's claim, and further, that by paying the money, we shall have nearly fifty acres more than our grant specifies.

M. is so chagrined at this discovery, that he is preparing to build a meeting-house, and declares that he will have the parsonage for a dissenting minister. Mr. Ridley, the bearer, determines, if possible, to procure the money for paying off M., and to obtain a deed of Goodwin, for which he will offer security. I am certain, as I hinted to you before, that whoever should advance the money and take the house and land for security, would have a fine bargain, for more has been offered for Norden's lot alone, without any house, than M. demands. If you could, either by your advice or other-

wise, assist me in settling this unhappy affair, it would give me extreme satisfaction; but not having received a single line in answer to a number of letters, I am greatly oppressed with melancholy dejection.

Far distant from the pleasing scenes of life,  
From all the joys which sacred friendships give;  
Amid the sons of malice and of strife,  
Where discord rages I am doomed to live.

I cannot forbear making some severe reflections upon the conduct of the generous Mr. Hancock; for when we consider that upon Kennebeck there are seven new settlements beside Pownalboro', extremely poor and destitute of any religious worship, which would have gladly received his bounty; when we reflect that he has no interest within several miles of this place, and that his offer is received here with general dislike, his generosity cannot proceed from a truly pious and benevolent principle, but from malice to the Church of England, and a violent party spirit or opposition to Dr. Gardiner. I am certain from what already appears, that it will throw us into the greatest confusion, and promote a multitude of quarrels. One of their committee men for building their meeting-house, who was esteemed the only conscientious dissenter among them, now declares himself a churchman from principle, and lately told me that if they proceeded, I should be welcome to his rates.

*April 26th.* Baptized Sarah, daughter of James Goud.

*28th.* Mr. William Gardiner put me in possession of the parsonage house and land in Pownalborough, by virtue of a power from Major Goodwin, in the presence of Capt. Merone, John Stain, Peter Pochard, and Christopher Jacqueen.

*May 1st.* Married Capt. Ward and Alice Graves.

*2d—Sunday.* 80 people at church. Contribution, 17s. Baptized Sarah, daughter of Louis and Mary Houdlette.

*9th—Sunday.* 95 people at church. Baptized Dolly, Frederick, and Betty Jacqueen.

*16th—Sunday.* 90 people at church. Contribution £4 10s.

*28th.* Mr. Brackett arrived from abroad.

*30th—Sunday.* 110 people at church. Contribution £1 19s. 9d.

*June 3d.* At court. Bid off at vendue Mrs. Brackett's\* lot.

*6th—Sunday.* 100 people at church. Contribution £2 3s.

*7th.* Mr. Brackett returned home.

*10th.* A most severe and violent storm of wind and rain, intermingled with showers of hail, continues from 12 at night till near 12 in the morning; does great damage, and blows down an immense number of trees and some buildings. Very cold; wind S. E.

*12th.* Baptized Sarah Pratt. Go up to Gardinerstown. Arrive at 10 at night.

*13th—Sunday.* At Gardinerstown. 104 people at church. Contribution £8 6s. Returned after service and baptized Sarah Warren and Molly, and ——— Parker.

*17th.* (Rev.) Mr. Badger arrives.

*20th—Sunday.* (Rev.) Mr. Badger preached, P. M. Contribution, £2 16s.

*22d.* (Rev.) Mr. Badger returns home.

*27th—Sunday.* 105 persons at church. Contribution for Mr. Lewis, £20 5s.

*30th.* On board Capt. Callahan. Mr. Hitchins came to board here.

*July 5th.* Baptized two infants.

*7th.* At Deacon Chase's. He is moving up the river.

*12th.* Married George Stilphen and Molly Ridley.

*July 17th.* At night a prodigious Aurora.

*20th.* Mr. Gage, from London.

---

\* Sister of Mrs. Bailey.

21st. Went to Georgetown with Mrs. Bailey. Baptized James, son to James and Susanna Thorn.

22d. Returned from Georgetown.

25th—*Sunday*. 100 people at church. Contribution, £2 10s.

27th. Dr. Moor moves from Georgetown.

29th. At Dr. Tupper's and Mr. Eldredge's.

August 1st—*Sunday*. Preached at Cobbossee-contee. 160 persons at church. Baptized 22. Contribution, £9.

4th. At home. Supped at Maj. Goodwin's with Dr. (S.) Gardiner.

5th. Attended Dr. Gardiner, and dined with him on Swan Island.

6th. Baptized Anna Springer.

12th. Baptized Betty and Hannah Aland.

22d—*Sunday*. In the morning thunder and heavy rain. 34 persons at church. Baptized Peter Pochard; Godfathers, George Mayer and Christopher Jacqueen; God-mother, ——— Houdlette.

29th—*Sunday*. 132 persons at church. Baptized John Goodwin; Godfather, Stephen Marson. Contribution, £3 15s.

30th. Set off for Boston in company with Dr. Tupper. Lodged at Stone's.

31st. Lodged at Marsh's.

September 1st. Lodged at Morrell's, in Berwick.

2d. Lodged at Jo. Brackett's, in Newmarket.

3d. Arrived at Mr. Badger's, in Haverhill.

4th. At Haverhill.

5th—*Sunday*. Preached at Almsbury. Contribution, £3 4s.

6th. Set out from Haverhill. Lodged at Manchester.

7th. Reached Marblehead at 10, Boston 8 in the evening.

8th. At Convention, 14. Mrs. Bailey arrived by water.

9th. At Convention. Dined at Mr. Troutbeck's.

10th. Dined with Mrs. Bailey at Dr. Gardiner's.

11th. Mrs. Bailey went to Marblehead.

12th—*Sunday*. Preached in Christ Church, morning; in King's Chapel in the evening. Supped at Dr. Gardiner's.

13th. Rode to Marblehead.

14th. At Mr. Weeks's.

15th. Visited Mrs. Bourn at her country seat.

16th. On Cat Island at the raising of an hospital 80 feet long, 22 feet wide, 3 stories. Present, 80 men. 112 sail in sight.

17th. At Salem. Visited (Rev.) Mr. McGilchrist.

18th. At Mr. Weeks's and Capt. Webber's.

19th—*Sunday*. Mrs. Bailey and I stood for Mr. Weeks's child.

20th. Set out for home. Stopped at (Rev.) Mr. Bass's.

21st. At Brackett's, in Newmarket.

22d. Dined at Col. Chadbourne's. Lodged at Kimball's.

23d. Lodged at Mitchell's, North Yarmouth.

24th. Arrived home about 7 in the evening.

26th—*Sunday*. 100 people at Church. Contribution, 10s.

October 14th. Married Caleb Barker.

31st—*Sunday*. 100 persons at church. Contribution, £1 4s.

POWNALBOROUGH, Nov. 1st, 1773.

Messrs. Mills & Hicks, Boston.

GENTLEMEN:— \* \* \* \* I have hitherto employed much of my leisure in writing, without ever venturing to offer any of my productions to the publick, and I find

among my papers, almost finished, a spelling-book, upon a different plan from any hitherto published. I begin with lessons of one syllable, and then proceed to two, three, &c. Each lesson consists of short, entertaining stories, single, or dialogues suitable to the capacity of children, and calculated to instruct them in some important parts of their duty. After a short sketch of natural history, and a variety of useful observations, I have added a short system of morals, with familiar examples, a compend of geography, and a number of curious tables. It may be contained in ten or twelve sheets. If you imagine it would be acceptable to the publick please favor me with a line by Capt. Callahan.

POWNBALBORO', Nov. 1<sup>st</sup> 1773.

To Mrs. Susanna Renkin, Fore Street, near the Drawbridge, Boston.

MADAM:—We shall be extremely obliged if you would get Mrs. — to make six yards of fringe for our pulpit —. We have got very handsome tassels and therefore shall not want any. If you could have it done by next trip, I will procure some person to call upon you for it with the money.

November 2<sup>d</sup>. Married Samuel Marson and Jenny Millar.

14<sup>th</sup>—Sunday. 80 persons at church. Contribution, 16s. Baptized Francis Stillphen.

17<sup>th</sup>. Mr. Gardiner, Mr. Hazard, and Dr. Hicks here.

25<sup>th</sup>. Married George Mayer and Molly Houdlette.

POWNBALBORO', Nov. 26<sup>th</sup>, 1773.

To Messrs. Mills and Hicks, Boston.

I have been favored with your letter, and have received one of Bickerstaffs Almanacks. They are in so much esteem among us as to prevent the sale of any others. I am sorry to find the eastern road so very incorrect. Several good publick houses are omitted and other inserted which have no existence, besides, the distances are very imperfect. I thought myself perfectly qualified to give a correct account of this road, having travelled it above thirty times; for this reason, and in compliance with your request, I sent you an exact list of the publick houses, and their distances, from Boston to Quebec, and, as the road is measured, I could not possibly be mistaken in the latter. But since my letter may have possibly miscarried, I have enclosed another, (if it arrives time enough,) for your Register. At the desire of Mr. Mills I have inserted an exact account of all the religious societies in this country according to their foundation.

Georgetown, Emmerson, Winter; Pownalboro' ; Newcastle, (P.) vacant; Bristol, McLane; Woolwich, Winship; Topsham, (P.) vacant; Bodingham, vacant; Gardinerston, (E.) vacant; Hallowell, none; Winslow, none; Vassalborough, none; Wintthrop, none; Boothbay, Murray; Broadbay, (L.) Shefford; St. Georges, vacant; Penobscot, vacant; Machias, vacant; Goldsborough, vacant.

I would remark that, in the western district of Pownalborough, where I live, there never was any other society except the Episcopal, neither meeting-house nor communions of any other persuasion. Therefore, to insert a vacancy here would be very wrong. In every other settlement where there is a meeting-house raised, or a body of communicants, but no minister, I have put down "vacant," but in those towns where there is neither I thought it proper to write "none."

30<sup>th</sup>. Eight men building a hovel.\*

December 14<sup>th</sup>. Married Mr. Malbone.

---

\* In the early period of the settlement poverty prevented the erection of framed and boarded barns. Instead of these four walls of logs were raised, which were roofed often times only with bark. Such buildings were called "hovels."

POWNAUBORO', Dec. 18th, 1773.

To Mr. Amos Bailey, (at —.)

DEAR BROTHER:— \* \* \* \* We have a man, one Carter, in jail for the murder of Josiah Parker. The prisoner has no chance for his life. It is very remarkable that we have had five or six murders committed upon Kennebeck river since my residence here, and that neither the murderers nor the persons killed ever frequented any Divine Worship.

25th—*Christmas*. A storm of wind and rain; snow all gone, and ice breaks up: 30 persons at church. Dr. Moor and wife, my brother and wife, G. Mayer and wife, and — Gookin here at dinner.

At the end of the Journal for this year the following names are inserted. Sarah Emerson, Betsey Nye, Lazarus Goud, Mary Houdlette, William Kendall, George Clensy, Mrs. H. Bailey, Esther Kendall, Betty Goodwin, James Goud, Molly Paris, Sally Ridley, Polly Lovejoy, Lydia Goodwin, Mrs. Mary Houdlette, Charlotte Smith.

1774.

January 13th. Andrew buried.

16th—*Sunday*. 60 persons at church. Baptized Stephen Nymphas Twycross and David Person Bailey.

17th. Married Daniel Dudley and Susy Densmore.

February 1st. Set out for a journey up river. Lodged at Mr. Gardiner's. Baptized William Gardiner Warren.

2d. At Esq. Howard's. Lodged at John Gatchell's. At Mr. Hoby's, Petty's, and Fort Halifax.

3d. Accompanied by Dr. McKecknie five miles; arrived at Deacon Chase's a little before dark.

4th. Went up to Mr. Heywood's. Saw several Indians.

5th. Visited the Indians, Capt. Out's, and several of the new settlers.

February 6th—*Sunday*. 40 persons present. Baptized Eliza Pratt, Benja. Noble, Priscilla Emery and Joanna Malbone.

7th. Rode to Mr. Petty's. Baptized Sarah Spencer, Amos Pochard, Abigail, Mary, Isaac, and Charles Pechin, and Mary and Martha Collar.

8th. At Esq. Howard's, Mr. Gardiner's. Baptized Enis, aged 128 (?) and John, Thomas, Polly, Matthew, and Nelly Gaslin.

9th. At home.

21st. Committee meeting.

23d. At Capt. Callahan's. Met Dr. Hicks, from Boston.

25th. Open Andrew's grave. Find his body gone.\* Present, 12 persons.

March 3d. Rode to Mr. Gardiner's.

March 4th. At Mr. Hankerson's and Cowen's. Baptized Polly and James Cowen. Lodged at Mr. Gardiner's.

5th. Arrived home.

6th—*Sunday*. Cloudy, and heavy rain. 70 persons at church. Contribution, 6s.

April 2d. Baptized Thomas Brian. Crossed on the ice.

12th. Ice breaks up in the Kennebeck.

13th. At night. Bodfish and Mercy Goodwin come to be married, but refused.

14th—*Fast Day*. 30 persons at church.

24th—*Sunday*. 100 persons at church. Contribution, 16s.

28th. This day Peter Nephew and his wife Jenny ran away.

May 7th. (Rev.) Mr. Weeks and Mr. Ward arrive here.

---

\* A negro slave of Major S. Goodwin. His body was used for the purposes of anatomy.

- 9th. On board Capt. Callahan. Three vessels in the eddy, loading at Dr. Moor's.  
 11th. (Rev.) Mr. Weeks sets off home.  
 13th. Mrs. Bailey delivered of a daughter, about 8 in the morning.  
 22d—*Sunday*. 100 persons at church. Contribution, £1, 2, 6. Baptized Mary Bailey.  
 30th. The child dies about daylight.  
 31st. The child buried; 36 persons at the funeral.  
*June 10th*. Mr. Gardiner's boy, Jo, suddenly killed. (Rev.) Dr. Shefford\* and another stranger.  
 18th. Baptized Margaret Patterson, daughter of P. Call.  
 18th. Rode down to Georgetown. Lodged at Mr. Drummond's.  
 19th. Baptized Patrick Drummond, Mary Pechlin (?), Hannah Hallowell Rogers, and Elija Williams.  
 20th. Rode home.  
 25th—*Sunday*. 120 persons at church. Contribution, £2, 17, 0.  
*July 24th—Sunday*. Showers. Warm and muggy weather. 30 persons at church. Baptized James Carney.  
*August 1st*. Baptized Jane Nephew.  
 10th. At Cobbesee-contee.  
 29th. Abroad; brought home 12 sheep.  
*September 7th*. Set off with Dr. Tupper, for Boston. Lodged at Stone's. Insulted the next morning.  
 8th. Lodged at Milliken's. Ill treated.  
 9th. Lodged at York.  
 10th. Dined at Col. Warner's. Lodged at J. Weeks'.  
*September 11th—Sunday*. Lodged at Newbury. The country all in commotion.  
 12th. Arrived at Marblehead.  
 13th. Reached Boston about sunset.  
 14th. Convention Sermon preached by Mr. Seargent.  
 15th. Dined at (Rev.) Mr. Walter's.  
 16th. Rode to Marblehead.  
 17th—*Sunday*. Preached at Marblehead. Baptized 3 children.  
 18th. At Salem.  
 19th. Bound homeward. Lodged at North-hill.  
 20th. Dined at J. Weeks'. Lodged at York.  
 21st. Lodged at Falmouth.  
 22d. Lodged at Mrs. Loring's.  
 23d. Mobbed at Brunswick. Got home at night. Mr. Gardiner at my house.  
 26th. Abroad. Fled from the mob. Lodged at George Mayer's.  
 27th. At George Mayer's.  
 28th. Returned home.  
 29th. Stephen Marson buried.

POWNALBORO', October —, 1774.

To ———.

DEAR SIR:— We have been in the greatest confusion and distress imaginable, occasioned by continual mobs and insurrections. The day before my arrival at Falmouth, five hundred men in arms had been to visit Mr. Tyng, who was mobbed a few days before, at North Yarmouth. The country was in such a violent commotion, that

\* A Lutheran minister, settled, at that time, at Broadbay, now Walsoborough. After Mr. Bailey left Pownalborough, Dr. Shefford was sent for and baptized the children of George and M. J. Mayer, members of the congregation of St. John's Church.

my friends advised me not to lodge at a publick house. The next day, being Friday, Col. Cushing returning home, was surrounded by twenty-five men in arms in the middle of the woods. They called him a —— Tory, and demanded a surrender of his commission. He assured them that he had taken none under the present government, and after distributing money among them, he was suffered to escape. The next day, about noon, I was stopped at Stone's, in Brunswick, and accused of being a Tory, and an enemy to my country. They urged me to sign, and upon my refusal, protested they would visit me and Col. Cushing the following week. I arrived at Pownalboro' about dark, where I found the people in great consternation. A furious mob at Georgetown were running about in search of tea, and compelling people, by force of arms, to sign the solemn league. Another was raging up the river, within twelve miles. They had already destroyed one hundred and fifty pounds of tea for Esq. Hussey, and thrown his hay into the river. Mr. Gardiner had fled from their fury, and tarried with us all night, expecting every moment to be attacked, as Lovejoy had already invited them among us, and threatened the utmost vengeance upon me, Ridley, Maj. Goodwin, etc. Mr. Gardiner returned after service, but was obliged to fly that evening, and escape to Boston. About midnight, one hundred and fifty men, armed with guns and various weapons, surrounded his house, demanded a sight of him, and insisted upon searching for tea. Mr. Hazard, a gentleman from Rhode Island, entered into a parley with their leaders, and they firmly engaged that none, except five chosen men, should enter into the house; but they quickly broke their engagements, rushed in, rifled the house, broke open his desk, and perused his papers, and after being treated with several gallons of rum, they stole Mr. Hazard's buckles, and then inquired for Mr. Jones, the surveyor. They insisted upon his signing the covenant, upon which he stripped open his bosom, and told them they might stab him to the heart, but nothing should induce him to sign that accursed instrument. They seized him with violence and threw him headlong into the river, and then dragged him about till he was almost torn to pieces, but all to no purpose. They at length desisted, and, having drank several gallons of rum, began to quarrel, and had a violent battle among themselves. Several remained dead drunk, and the remainder returned to their habitations. The other mob from Georgetown, Brunswick, etc., threatened to demolish the jail, and to throw the town-house into the river, but first they directed their course to Witchcassett, headed by Sam. Thompson, the Brunswick representative. In their route, they offered violence to several persons. Having compelled one Hobby, a store-keeper, to sign the league, some of them, offended at certain expressions he let fall, returned and almost demolished him. They seized Capt. Carlton, of Woolwich, and, having prepared a coffin, commanded him to dig his own grave; but after all their threatenings, he escaped without signing the covenant. They assaulted Mr. Wood on Monday morning, but he, having nearly one hundred men, with several pieces of cannon, prepared for his defence, and they were obliged to keep at a distance. A treaty was concluded towards evening between the parties, when the libertines solemnly engaged to make no further attempts till the next day. With this assurance Mr. Wood dismissed his men, which being known to the assailants, they came in the night and carried off the cannon, and in the morning fired them upon Mr. Wood, without any damage, however. Mr. Wood might have easily dispersed them after all, but hearing that five hundred men were upon their march, and expected that a great deal of blood must be shed, he gave them a paper of his own drawing up. They then proceeded to visit Judge Rice and Mr. Moor, the minister, who, after haranguing them to little purpose for some time, were obliged to promise a compliance with the Congress. On Tuesday evening they arrived at Frankfort, (the Court sitting.) I will refer you to Mrs. Bailey's letter for an account of their proceedings here, and only remark, that their rage was chiefly directed against Bowman, Maj. Goodwin, Ridley, and myself, because, as they alledged, from the instiga-



tion of Lovejoy, that we opposed the solemn league. Their behavior was a true mixture of comedy and tragedy. Besides the mischief they did, near three hundred men were supported for a week together, at the expense of their neighbors. We are daily threatened with another invasion. Nothing can equal the false and ridiculous stories which prevail in these parts.

POWNBORO', November 1st, 1774.

To Dr. S. Gardiner.

SIR:—I must entreat you to send eight thousand of shingle nails, if you charge them to my account, and a thousand of ten-penny. It is impossible to live in this house unless it is covered, and the chamber over the kitchen finished. I have, at present, only one small room for the family, and the chamber over it for lodgings, in which we are obliged to have three beds, so that I have no convenience at all for study. If you look into my account, you will find that I was charged with all the shingle nails you sent two years ago, and, in short, Capt. Callahan and I have found all the nails for the parsonage-house at our own expense. I am sensible that we cannot reasonably expect anything further from you, after what you have already done, but what can I do? Both the church and house are considerably indebted to me, and I must either suffer or expend more.

November 10th. Went to Georgetown. Lodged at Mr. Butler's.

11th. Baptized Catherine and Thomas Percy, Hannah Porterfield, Sarah and James Todd, Perkins, (?) Eleanor and Thomas Hogan, Jane Stevens, Elisabeth and Rebecca Snelling Malcom, and William Mahars (?).

December 18th—Sunday. 15 persons at church. Whiting preached at Frankfort.

March 21st. Married Robert Rogers and Jane Grace. Baptized ——— Darling, Samuel Meins and James Ward.

April 9th—Sunday. 50 persons at church. Baptized Peter Pochard.

10th. Baptized Sarah McGown.

16th—Sunday. 70 persons at church. Contribution, 6s.

24th. Assaulted by a number of ruffians. The news arrives of Col. Percy's defeat.

25th. News of the battle of Concord sets the people into a great ferment.

26th. (Rev.) Mr. Weeks and family arrive.

27th. A great uproar, to prevent Mr. Weeks from landing his goods. The Committee grant leave.

29th. The people still in commotion. No work done this week.

30th—Sunday. 80 persons at church. Contribution, 12s.

May 3d. The Committee meet at Frankfort.

6th. At Dr. Moor's, at Richmond.

June 20th. Mr. Weeks and Mrs. Dixey.

[Journal missing for July and August of this year.]

September 1st. Mr. Weeks sets off for Britain.

16th. Married Capt. Hubbs and Dorcas Wilson.

October 2d. Baptised Margaret Costello.

6th. Mr. Weeks goes on his journey.

13th. Set off for Falmouth.

14th. Arrived at Falmouth.

15th—Sunday. Baptized Charles Hemmingway and ——— Thurlo.

16th. A fleet of 6 sail come into the harbor. Capt. Mowat declares the destruction of Falmouth.

18th. Falmouth laid in ashes.

29th—Sunday. 45 persons at church. Baptized A. Ridley.

November 5th—Sunday. 44 persons at church. Mr. Weeks arrives in the evening.

22d. Mr. Bernard here.

- 23d. Married Thomas Densmore and Susannah Whitmore, at Bodingham.  
 24th. Baptized Sarah Bounds Crossman.  
 December 19th. Married William Len (?) and Hannah Kingslin (?).

## 1776.

- January 11th. Mr. Weeks' family remove.  
 30th. Mr. Weeks sets out for the West.  
 February 6th. Married Moses Dudley and Apphia Sleeper (?). Baptized David Huntton.  
 April 18th. Married Edmund Doharty and Mary Haley.  
 23d. Married John Welch and Eliza Baker.  
 24th. Baptized Elizabeth, Hannah and Olivia Baker, adults; Lorana McGregor and Jane Grace Ward.  
 27th. Mr. Weeks goes Westward.  
 May 17th—*Continental Fast*. 35 persons at church.  
 24th. Examined before the Committee.  
 26th—*Sunday*. 52 persons at church. Baptized Simeon Lawrence.  
 28th. Laid under bonds at Bridge's.  
 June 4th. Baptized Jonathan Tousier (?).  
 6th. Mr. Weeks embarks.  
 July 7th. Baptized Sarah and J. Dickson Parks, at Richmond.  
 28th—*Sunday*. 50 persons at church. Baptized John Goud, John Carlo, Lazarus Goud, and Margaret Carlo.  
 August 5th. Baptized Rebecca Preble.  
 6th. Rode with Mrs. Bailey to Mr. Butler's, Georgetown.  
 7th. At Mr. T. Percy's.  
 8th. Baptized Gilmore Percy, for Thomas Rogers (?); Hannah, for Anna Rogers; Samuel, for Robert Thomas; at Mr. Drummond's and Williams'.  
 9th. Rode home.  
 11th—*Sunday*. Forbidden to pray for the King. Only delivered a sermon.  
 17th. Set off for the West. Lodged at Frost's.  
 18th. Dined at Capt. Pote's. Lodged at Dr. Coffin's.  
 19th. Dined at Capt. Pote's. Baptized Jeremiah Pote Wier. Lodged at Mr. Lyde's.  
 20th. Tarried at Mr. Lyde's. Dr. Coffin, T. Oxnard.  
 21st. Capt. Mehitabel (?) Oxnard. Lodged at Cole's, at Wells.  
 22d. Dined at Col. Warner's. Lodged at J. Weeks'.  
 23d. Dined at uncle John's. Lodged at Mr. Bass's.  
 24th. Dined at Rowley. Arrived at Marblehead.  
 25th. Preached. Attended a funeral.  
 28th. At Salem, at Mr. McGilchrist's.  
 September 1st—*Sunday*. Preached.  
 2d. Set off on my journey. Lodged at Rowley.  
 3d. Tarried at Rowley and Newbury.  
 4th. Lodged at Greenland.  
 5th. Lodged at Cole's.  
 6th. Arrived at Mr. Lyde's.  
 7th. At Mr. Lyde's.  
 8th. Baptized 6 children. First heard the news of the defeat of the American army.  
 9th. Visited several places. Arrived at Mitchell's.  
 10th. Arrived home. Visited Georgetown. Baptized 11 children.

*October 3d.* Married Mr. Thomas Johnson to Abigail Goodwin.\*

*28th, 29th.* Before the Committee for not reading the Declaration of Independence, for praying for the king, and for preaching a seditious sermon.

*December 1st—Sunday.* 50 persons at church. Published 3 couples.

*2d.* Lodged at Weston's.

*3d.* Lodged at J. Preble's.

*4th.* At Mr. Carleton's. Baptized John Thorn.

*5th.* At home.

*6th.* Baptized, at Mr. Haley's, Hannah Doharty.

*10th.* Mr. Johnson buried.

*15th—Sunday.* 15 persons at church. Baptized James Houdlette.

*17th.* Mr. Gardiner arrives from Boston.

[The Journal for 1777 is missing.]

## 1778.

*January 1st.* At George Mayer's. News comes that Washington kills and takes 1600 regulars.

*2d.* At Mrs. Jacqueen's and Mrs. Kendall's.

*4th—Sunday.* Baptized Peter, son of George Pochard.

*8th.* Rode to Mr. Richard Turner's. Found his son Thomas sick of a fever.

*9th.* Baptized Mark Silvester and Mary, children of James and Rachel Turner. Returned home same day.

*11th—Sunday.* 25 persons at church.

*14th.* At home. Mrs. Kendall, Mrs. Call and Mr. Jacqueen here.

*February 2d.* Travelled with Dr. Mayer to Broadbay. Lodged at (Rev.) Dr. (Martin) Shefford's.

*3d.* At Mr. Palmer's at Bristol.

*4th.* At Capt. Vinal's, Mr. Cremor's, Sprague's, Young's, and Rhode's. Baptized Benjamin and Esther Palmer, David, Alice and Deborah Vinal, and — Young.

*5th.* A snow storm six inches. Attempted to return home but forced to turn back.

*5th.* Returned home.

*10th.* At Carlo's and Johnson's. Baptized Hannah Turner.

*17th.* Rode up with my brother and his wife to Mr. Cowen's.

*18th.* Went to Winthrop. At Mr. Whittier's and Stain's.

*19th.* At Mr. Waugh's. Baptized George Waugh. Returned to Mr. Cowen's.

*20th.* Returned home.

*27th.* (Rev.) Dr. (M.) Shefford, Mr. Ridley and Mr. Uperhind here.

*28th.* Dr. Moor, Dr. Mayer, a Prussian Doctor and Mr. Carlo here.

*March 12th.* Baptized Edward Lawrence.

*28th.* Baptized William Carney.

*April 7th.* Mr. Nath'l Gardiner arrives and Mr. Thomas.

*19th—Easter Day.* 50 persons at church, 15 communicants.

*20th.* Chose the same (Church) officers.

*26th—Sunday.* 56 persons at church.

[Journals from June 1st to July 18th missing.]

*July 19th.* [Mr. Bailey had started for Boston.] • • • I had now an opportunity of hearing from my family, and perceived that they had obtained a little present relief. The wind blowing in dirty squalls from the S. W., Capt. Hatch sailed back again to Parker's flats,† where we took a breakfast together, after which I went with

\* Daughter of Maj. B. Goodwin.

† Just inside the mouth of Kennebec river.

the two Gardiner's, Mrs. Hatch and Mrs. Gardiner as far as Mr. Butler's. This gentleman and his family treated me with great attention and advised me by no means to leave the country as it would gratify my persecutors, whose principal design was to expel the service of the Church from the regions of Kennebeck. After dining I attended Capt. Drummond to his house, and baptized three children, one for Thomas Rogers, one for Robert, and another for Mr. Butler's servant. We had here a good entertainment. My friends sent on board several articles of provision, viz., a large quarter of veal, two cheeses, a smoked salmon, a pound of coffee, &c. In the evening I returned on board. Capt. Vinal arrived from Boston, and brought intelligence that a French fleet had arrived to assist the Americans.

20th. This morning we beat out to sea. Some of our company sick, especially Polly Morton. About sunset we were not more than four leagues from the mouth of the Kennebeck. Spoke with several vessels, and heard all day a heavy firing at Falmouth. Towards morning,

21st, a breeze from the north east, and a fine clear day. We arrived off Cape Ann about dark. We had an opportunity of taking several mackerel, the first I had ever seen drawn from the water.

22d. Came to anchor just by Nix's Mate, in Broad Sound, in the forenoon. Saw the Warren under sail, going out. About three o'clock, the wind and tide favouring, we sailed up to the Long Wharf. near a guard-ship, the sight of those disasters which war and rebellion had rendered — able gave me a prodigious shock. They appeared cond— with rage, and exhibited countenances full of dejection and melancholy. What an affecting consideration that such a multitude of active and sprightly men should labour under oppression and confinement, should be —ed with vermin and disease to gratify the boundless avarice and ambition of an impious faction! Being wholly ignorant of the situation of the town, and fearing that the smallpox might still prevail, I sent Dr. Mayer with a message to (Rev.) Mr. Parker. He presently returned with an invitation from that worthy gentleman, and a report that little danger was to be apprehended from the smallpox. About sunset I equipped myself and left the sloop under uncommon dejection of spirit. I was, however, received by Mr. Parker and his lady with the highest tokens of tenderness and friendship. They gave a very discouraging detail of publick affairs; informed me that a large French fleet had certainly arrived; that no armament had come this season from Britain; and that it was apprehended that the Americans and French, with their united efforts, would be able to expel the forces of the Crown from the Continent. This intelligence excited a train of the most disagreeable sensations, and took away the pleasure I was about to receive from the society and conversation of my friends.

23d. [A part of this day's Journal will be found in the Memoir, p. 118. It continues:] Dined at Mrs. Domett's, where I had the pleasure of seeing Mrs. Coffin, and of hearing from my Falmouth friends. We spent the season as agreeably as the situation of publick affairs and our own circumstances would permit. After dinner received an invitation to tea from Mrs. Sheaf, where we found eleven ladies and six or seven gentlemen, some of them Whigs, but of a generous way of thinking; in particular Col. Trumbull, son to the Governor, censured very freely some of the most popular measures, and reflected both upon the Congress and newspapers. From these gentlemen I first learned that the Provincials had gained no victory over General Clinton, but were rather worsted in that famous conflict. After tea Mrs. Peggy Sheaf, an agreeable young lady, gave us several tunes upon the guitar, accompanied with

. During this interval I had an opportunity of acquainting Mrs. Sheaf, one of the ladies, with my situation, and when we came to supper I perceived that most of the company knew something of my affairs, by certain questions about my persecu-

tors, and a compassionate attention to my concerns. The Whigs having withdrawn, the rest of the company sat till near twelve, and were very sociable and merry.

24th. Took a breakfast about eight with Polly Morton and Capt. Hatch, when I was entertained with several secret and curious anecdotes. Visited Mrs. Dixy in the morning, and called on my way upon Mrs. Domett. One Lewis, master of the Portsmouth, arrives from New York, and gives intelligence that Lord Howe had arrived with some twelve ships of the line and twenty frigates. The report in town before was, that he had only three ships of the line and four or five frigates. It was reported at noon that a number of troops had arrived at Newport. Dined at Mr. Parker's, in company with Mr. Warner. Drank tea at Mr. Haskin's, and supped at the same place. This gentleman observed that the conduct of the Congress in applying to France for assistance, was similar to the application of Saul to the Witch of Endor.

25th. After calling upon several friends in the morning dined at Mr. Warner's, where, besides Mr. Parker and lady, we had in company one Capt. Davis, a merchant. The news said to come express from Gen'l Sullivan is, that a large number of troops had arrived at Newport, and on the other hand, that the French fleet had taken five British men of war, which afterwards proved to be a false rumor. The Whigs soon acknowledged that only one frigate was taken, and this our and at length to be in the harbour of New York and spent the evening at Mr. Parker's, in very agreeable conversation.

26th. This day being Sunday, performed Divine Service in the morning and preached in the afternoon. The weather being exceedingly hot I was greatly fatigued. Spent the evening at Mr. Domett's, in company with Mr. Abrahams. The situation of political affairs was still so gloomy that we had full employment to keep each others' spirits from sinking, and to take encouragement that some happier prospects might soon arise. The Whigs were now so extremely high, and so very sanguine in their expectations of victory and success, that my friends assured me there were little or no hopes of having any petition regarded by the Council in case I should make application.

27th. This day dined at Mrs. Dixy's, in company with a young gentleman from Virginia, who was employed in one of the Continental stores as a writer. After giving us several pieces of intelligence, he declared that he hoped and wished that the French fleet would have a d—l of a drubbing by the Britons. Towards evening called upon Mr. Haskins, according to agreement. He gave me fifteen dollars, and then accompanied me to Mr. Inman's, (?) where we were cordially received by that hospitable and generous couple. We were joined at supper by Mrs. Coffin and her daughter Polly. Both the mother and daughter appeared very modest, sensible and engaging. I was introduced to these ladies by Mrs. Inman and Mr. Haskins as a distressed brother, and I quickly perceived that Mrs. Coffin had her husband (Mr. William Coffin) and two or three sons in the British service, at New York. We heard this evening a rumor that a British fleet had arrived or were near the coast of America. This was some refreshment to our dejected spirits. About eleven the company broke up, and Mr. Haskins and I waited upon the two ladies home.

28th. [A part of this day's Journal will be found in the Memoir, p. 119.] Spent the afternoon and evening abroad; express coming in daily with news, reports that six of the Cork fleet are taken by the French, and the Whigs are now elevated above measure, as an expedition is going on with the utmost rapidity against Newport. It is confidently promised that Rhode Island, New York, and Nova Scotia, will be subdued to the American States before the conclusion of the present campaign.

29th. [The entry under this date will be found in the Memoir, p. 119.]

30th. This morning after breakfast went the interest of several gentlemen belonging to the Council. I waited upon was Mr. Wendell, who was a contemporary at College. This gentleman, though he and importance of

his office with every display of mildness and benevolence. He readily to compassionate my situation me all the assistance in his power. He asked me whether I had no other difficulties to contend with besides poverty? I replied by requesting him to suggest the nature of those difficulties he conceived me to labour under. He answered me that he imagined I must be troubled with some ill natured, ignorant, committee-man, or rigid magistrates, who took advantage of the times to distress me. I assured him that his conjectures were perfectly right, for in all political commotions the spirit of assault and compulsion was always fierce, savage, and cruel, in proportion to its distance from the centre, and had constantly observed that in the eastern country, where any difference or hostility subsisted between two persons, if one of them was appointed committee-man the other would be certainly punished as a Tory before the conclusion of the year. Mr. Wendell replied, "the only inducement I had to engage in these affairs was to have it in my power to soften the horrors and to relieve the distresses which must unavoidably arise to particular persons in the present revolutions." After taking my leave of Mr. Wendell I visited Mr. J. Pitts, who took me by the hand and treated me with attention and ceremony, but I presently perceived that his advancement had rendered him more stiff, formal and important. He was not so familiar and easy as usual. However, after some respectful compliments, he promised to use all his influence to forward my petition. He declared, from the knowledge he had of the eastern country, and my connections, he was fully convinced that my situation must be very disagreeable, and my circumstances extremely distressing. I found in the course of our conversation that he had no great opinion of Bowman, and that he was conscious that some of our magistrates were my enemies on account of my former connections with Dr. Gardiner. Brigadier Preble was the next counsellor I solicited in my affairs. The old gentleman, upon my application, suffered a little roughness and ferocity of his countenance; he declared, with an oath, that he knew my situation to be very distressing, and me his interest in procuring the but then says he: "You must engage upon your word and honour not to give the enemy any intelligence of our expeditions against Newport and New York. I told him in all probability the state of these military operations would be determined before I could possibly get ready to depart. He then, with a countenance replete with vengeance and fury, and in a voice of thunder, swore a tremendous oath, that the reign of the old villain, George, was very short in America. He soon returned to my affairs, and told me in a whisper, that if I obtained leave to depart he must entrust me with letters to Halifax. "You know," says he, "my son-in-law, Tom Oxnard." Before we parted he execrated Parson Wiswall in a bitter manner. After finishing this disagreeable business I dined at Mr. John Row's, who gave a striking instance of the injustice and tyranny of Brigadier Preble. Mr. Row, a few years ago, had lent him a large sum, if I remember right, £700 sterling, to clear a mortgage on his estate, no part of which was ever paid until the present year, when the Brigadier brought Mr. Row the same nominal sum in paper money to discharge his debt. The latter made some difficulty of accepting it, as it was the seventh part of the real value. The other replied that he should take the money, or else be proceeded against as a convicted Tory and a mortal enemy to his country. This declaration quickly ended the whole dispute. Mr. Row took the money and gave the Brigadier a full discharge. An express arrives that the French fleet had arrived at Point Judith to assist in the reduction of Rhode Island. Drank tea this evening in company with Mrs. Sheaf

31st. Went in the morning to the Court House

but the President assured me that he would carefully keep my petition, and present

it whenever a favourable opportunity should occur. While I was in conversation with him upon the subject, an aid-de-camp from General Heath appeared, with a message to the Council. He gave information that a Mr. Lewis, a clergyman, or chaplain of a regiment, had deserted from New York, and having dined with the General was coming to lay something of the utmost importance before the Council; "but, you may depend upon it," continued the officer, "that the gentleman is a spy." Mrs. White was buried this afternoon: a prodigious large funeral. Drank tea at Mrs. Coffin's. Present, D. Lloyd and his wife, Mr. Hubbard, Mr. Brimmer, Mr. Amory and his lady, with several other ladies, both married and single. We spent the evening very agreeably. Having informed Mrs. Coffin of what I had heard concerning the clergyman from New York, she and Mrs. Deblois left the company and went in pursuit of him, hoping to hear something of their absent friends. They had the good fortune to find the gentleman, though something under duress. He represented that all the Royal forces and the friends of Government were in the utmost confusion and anxiety, that many repented of their rashness in leaving their country, and that numbers intended very shortly to imitate his example in running away and throwing themselves upon the mercy of the American government. He added, that people were almost starving for want of bread and expected from Britain

he would first explain himself with reserve, with an entire confidence in their honor and integrity. The I with these supreme magistrates with their conduct of my friend induced the following remarks:—

1st. That notwithstanding they represented themselves (to be) the creatures of the people, and were actually in most instances advanced from inferior stations, yet they assumed all the dignity and importance of princes and noblemen born to command.

2nd. They affected to act the courtier externally. When any applications were made to the leading members for countenance or favour, they received the petitioner with apparent tokens of condescension. They endeavored, though it must be confessed, with an awkward grace, to lower their dignity, and would make most ample promises of their interest to forward his request; but when these gentlemen were assembled in Council they either forgot their engagements, or determined to disoblige, when the charge of falsehood or severity might be transferred from particular members to the whole body. One or two gentlemen of my acquaintance, who petitioned the Council for permission to depart the State, applied to every member of the Council, and received the strongest assurances from each of his interest, and yet when the petition was brought before them in the Council chamber it was rejected without assigning any reason.

3rd. I conjectured that the most moderate legislatures are disposed to enact the severest and most unreasonable laws and afterwards mitigate

with the arrival of Parson Lewis. Some conceived that he was a spy, others that he had deserted from disgust to the British cause and pure affection to the American cause, whilst the ladies were unanimous that it was a love affair which brought him to Boston, for during his imprisonment he had frequent interviews with Mr. Pierpont's daughter, a young girl of fifteen, who had an independent fortune of £5000 sterling. This day, after a long and severe drought, about 3 o'clock we had a smart thunder shower, which lasted about ten minutes. Three men being with a boat on one of the islands of the harbour, placed themselves under it for a shelter from the shower! As soon as the rain ceased a little, two of the company ventured out, and called upon the other to follow their example, which he at first refused to do, but upon repeated applications he complied. He had no sooner left the boat than a

stream of lightning descended and stove it all to pieces. News arrives that the French fleet had taken all the vessels from Cork.

*August 2d.* This day, being Sunday, could not assist Mr. Parker for want of a suitable discourse. As I was walking to church in the morning Mr. Lash put a guinea into my hand. After evening service went to drink tea with Mr. Domett; present, Col. Tudor's lady,—though a Whig, very moderate,—Mr. Blotchet, Mr. Cheever, and Mr. Brimmer. (?) I was extremely pleased with the conversation of Mr. Cheever. Among other things he told me that when the high sons perceived that a number of Tories had taken the oath of allegiance they were so enraged as to threaten them with immediate destruction, calling them rogues, villains, &c. After tea took a walk upon the Common, then visited and supped with Mr. Warner and lady. I regard them as a very modest and generous couple. Upon my return home found Mr. Parker gone to visit Mrs. Hooper, of Newbury. His lady informed me that she had sent for me and Mr. Parker to spend the evening. When Mr. Parker returned, about 12 o'clock, he told me that Mrs. Hooper had informed him that she had seen a letter very lately from Mr. Marston, at Halifax, wherein he writes that he is in good health and high spirits, and, were he at liberty, he could write such intelligence as must give the friends of government the most ample satisfaction.

*3d.* This morning visited Mr. Brown and his son, the Doctor, and took a breakfast with Mrs. Dixy. I found her in great affliction on account of her little daughter, who was sick of a fever. Visited Mr. Thomas Amory and his lady, where I was kindly entertained. I tarried till after dinner, and was favoured with the sight of several curious letters, and the relation of many shocking anecdotes. After dinner at Captain William Morton's, at Mr. Burn's, and on board Capt. Hatch, where I met with my old friend Mr. Nathaniel Gardiner. He brought intelligence that the people of Nantucket had certain information that a British fleet, under Lord Byron, was on their passage; that the garrison at Newport was 11,000 strong, and that provisions were cheap and plenty at New York. Towards evening at Mr. Parker's, and drank tea in company with several ladies. Dr. Brown and Capt. Hatch here. The former had the confidence to apply to Mr. Parker for a recommendation, and referred him to me for a character. Supped at home with a large company. Mr. Nathaniel Gardiner here to visit me, and to give me an account of his adventures. The friends of government now begin to receive a little more courage, and to expect some more favourable events.

*4th.* This morning, after walking upon the wharves, visited Mrs. Coffin. Dined at home, in company with Mr. Inman. Drank tea at Mrs. Sheaf's. Several gentlemen and ladies. Mr. Gardiner met me, according to agreement, at Mr. Domett's, but that worthy couple being from home we walked towards Capt. Foster's, but finding the smallpox in that part of the town, turned aside to Mrs. Dixy's. I found her daughter recovered. We proceeded back to Mr. Domett's, and had the pleasure of finding him and his lady at home. We were presently joined by Mrs. Sheaf and her daughter Polly. We had a very agreeable evening, and supped before we parted. Received either this, or the preceding day, eight dollars from Mr. Thomas Amory.

*5th.* After passing away the forenoon in paying different visits went to Mr. Has-kin's, and tarried dinner with that worthy man and his family. Drank tea and supped abroad. Capt. Smith arrives from Woolwich, and I engage a passage with him to Kennebeck. Mr. Hubbard gives me three quarters of an hundred of rice, and Mr. N. Green a bushel of rye. Great preparations for three days past have been making for the expedition against Rhode Island; the streets and roads not only full of armed men upon the march from every quarter, but a multitude of carriages, with provisions and warlike forces; volunteers come pouring into town from every region of the country; men of consequence and fortune appear both on horseback and in the most pompous vehicles that can be procured. Assurance of success is displayed in every countenance, and all expect to return in a few days victorious



and loaded with plunder. To suggest any difficulty is highly criminal, and to forebode disappointment would be fatal. To see these people, who had always the greatest aversion to the manners, religion, and government of the French, now rejoicing in their alliance and exulting in their assistance, affords a most striking instance of the perverseness of the human heart, and displays beyond example the obstinacy, the madness, the folly, the perfidy of my countrymen. Rather than yield to the most prevailing convictions of reason, rather than comply with the most sacred dictates of conscience and religion, I may add, rather than be happy in the enjoyment of their liberties and possessions, they choose to rush headlong into guilt, misery, and ruin, and to entail upon themselves and posterity the most ignoble servitude.

6th. This morning, understanding that I had made a blunder in not dining at Mr. Inman's, who had given me an invitation the preceding day, and that he was highly offended at my neglect, I waited upon him to make the best apology in my power. I assured him that I was not sensible that he gave me any invitation, and that I was wholly ignorant that any company was about to dine at his house. His lady, a most excellent woman, quickly ended the dispute, and, when we had taken a breakfast, Mr. Inman insisted upon my returning to dine with him this day. I spent the forenoon at Mr. Seargent's and Mr. Turner's, where I heard from a number of gentlemen the following intelligence: The captain of a prize brought into Salem affirmed that Lord Byron had sailed from Britain with a fleet of twenty-five capital ships, and that the harbour of Brest was blocked up with thirty-two ships of the line under the command of Admiral Hervey, Earl of Bristol. Present at dinner, besides Mr. Inman and wife, Nancy Seargent and Betsey Murray, daughter to Col. Murray, one of the Mandamus Counsellors, who fled the country. After dinner I waited upon Dr. Lloyd: saw there a young gentleman from Gen. Sullivan, who informed us that the attack was to be made upon Rhode Island immediately. The Dr., at parting, gave me nine dollars. From hence I repaired to Mr. Parker's, where I found that my old friend, Mr. William Gardiner, had arrived from Concord, and had been twice to enquire for me. I went directly to his lodgings, but to my great disappointment I found him absent. I however met him presently after in the street. We went back to Mr. Parker's, where we drank tea, and then took a walk into the garden. After spending the evening together we agreed to meet each other the next morning about eleven at Mr. Domett's.

7th. [A part of this day's Journal will be found in the Memoir, p. 120.] Mr. Gardiner soon came in, and Mrs. Domett engaged us to dine with them. Before dinner we went on board Smith and visited Capt. Hatch, and our return found Mrs. Coffin, and had a very sociable entertainment. Mr. Gardiner and I waited upon Dr. Byles and drank tea with him, his daughters, and other young ladies. The Dr. was in high spirits, and rather more diverting than usual. We spent the evening together, when I took my leave of Mr. Gardiner. • • • • Mr. Gardiner assured me, upon very good authority, that every person in Canada who suffered by the ravages of the American rebels, had their losses fully made up, and that the whole amounted to £170,000 sterling.

8th. [A part of this day's Journal will be found in the Memoir, p. 120.] • • After which I returned her, (Mrs. Domett,) a visit of thanks, and took my leave of that generous lady and her daughters. • • • • Having put my things on board the vessel, dined at Mr. Parker's, called upon several friends, drank tea with Mrs. Domett, and parted with Mrs. Coffin and that excellent couple whom I shall always esteem with the sincerest affection. About ten Dr. Mayer and I took our leave and embarked on board Capt. Smith. The weather was now extremely hot, with a gentle breeze of S. W. wind. We had two female passengers on board, and about 11 o'clock got under sail.

9th. The next morning about sunrise, near Thatcher's Island, just as we were coming round the Cape, discovered a very large ship. Her guns were carefully concealed,

and she let us pass without notice. Soon after we observed a very strong current setting to the westward; a short calm ensued, when the wind sprang up about east. About noon the clouds began to gather thick from every quarter, and the distant thunder uttered its voice. When we were miles to the south of the Shoal Islands, it being between 3 and 4 o'clock, the clouds were exceedingly black and heavy from the N. E. around to the S. E., the lightnings streamed dreadfully in various directions, and the bursting thunders roared aloud. At length the tempest burst upon us. A squall struck us from the W. N. W., which in a few minutes veered into the E. S. E. The darkness, thunder and rain continued with uncommon severity till we opened Portsmouth harbour, a little before sunset, when the clouds began to disperse, and we came to an anchor a little below the light-house, where we lay rolling and tumbling all night, and our female passengers were in consequence very sick.

10th. When the tide served in the morning we came to anchor in Pepperell's Cove, at Kittery, the wind being E. N. E. About 10 o'clock the captain set the two women on shore; we then proceeded in the boat to Newcastle, where, upon enquiring for Mr. Chase,\* I found that he had died six months before. His son, Stephen, was gone to Portsmouth, as well as his daughter. After rambling near two hours about the Island returned on board. In our passage we approached a large brig under sail, on board of which I saw Mr. Spole, with my friend Jenny Sheaf, from Martinico. Having dined I went on shore to visit Mr. Stevens, the minister on Kittery Point. I here met with civil treatment, found him a modest, sensible man, rather on the side of the British government, and his daughter a well accomplished and agreeable young lady. Being invited I tarried till the next morning.

11th. The wind continuing nearly in the same quarter I went on board after breakfast, and went with the Captain and Dr. Mayer to Portsmouth, where I met with great pleasure several of my friends, as Mr. Haven's family, Mrs. Clapham, Mrs. Fraser, and Mr. Whipple and lady. Dined at Mr. Whipple's. I perceived that his lady was greatly discouraged at the appearance of publick affairs. I was able, however, by several anecdotes, to revive her spirits. After dinner I returned to Mr. Haven's, where I spent an hour very agreeably. Capt. Smith, being obliged to go on board, I left the town with regret, but the wind continuing to blow from the N. E., with clouds and fog, I was permitted to revisit Mr. Stevens. I found that he was gone to Portsmouth. He returned, however, after tea. [Part of this day's Journal is inserted in the Memoir, p. 121.] The company were so agreeable to each other that they never went to repose till after twelve.

12th. This morning the weather was boisterous, and the wind blowing hard from the N. E. and great appearances of a storm. After breakfast went on board; so windy that we could not, as we intended, visit Portsmouth. Towards evening landed, in company with Capt. Crandall, at Pepperell's Wharf, and spent several hours in walking about the neighbourhood. The ruins of Sir William's fine estate induced us to reflect upon the instability of human affairs. A few years occasion prodigious alterations, especially in such seasons of plunder and depredation. The house, which belonged to Andrew Pepperell Sparhawk—a stately edifice—has lately been reduced to almost a heap of ruins, for no other reason but because the owner is in Britain. We saw in the dock a fine little schooner from the eastward with a family on board. The master informed us that Capt. Callahan, having taken from him a sloop of ninety tons, made him a present of that schooner, though greatly opposed by the Captain of Marines. This vessel, armed, had taken three sloops. About nine in the evening the weather began to roughen, the clouds to gather from every quarter, and the increasing winds to agitate the waters.

13th. This morning, as soon as daylight appeared, we had a most violent storm at

---

\* Rev. Stephen Chase, uncle to Mrs. Bailey. See Note F., p. 236.

N. E., attended with large quantities of rain. It continued without intermission till near sunset, during which the water was in violent agitation, and we thought ourselves unsafe with two anchors at her bow. One sloop was stove in pieces at the beginning of this tempest, and a schooner, attempting to recover by the light-house point, lost her anchor, had her jib carried away, and was finally bilged against the rocks. Another sloop, commanded by Joseph Decker, rode out the storm just within the southernmost point of Piscataqua harbour, expecting every moment either to go on shore, or to be swallowed up by the waves. The violence of the tempest abated, however, very fast in the evening. We had an uncomfortable situation on board, being closely confined to a nasty cabin, while the vessel kept incessantly rolling and tumbling, especially in the night, to such a degree that we could hardly lay in our cabins.

14th. A fine morning after the storm, but the wind still continues to breeze from the east. After our Captain had been to afford some relief to his distressed brethren, I embarked for Portsmouth on board a large canoe with Mr. James Marden and his brother. In our passage we went on board a privateer of ten carriage guns, where I quickly perceived a most shocking exhibition of confusion and profaneness. The oaths and execrations were horrid beyond expression. I had formerly been five or six weeks on board a British man-of-war, where all was order, piety, and politeness, in comparison with what now appeared. We took the gunner on board and proceeded to town. When I arrived at Mr. Stevens's I found them at dinner, and, to my great satisfaction, Dr. Coffin, directly from Falmouth. He expected to meet his lady here from Boston before evening. After dinner, and talking over the news, we went out together and met Mr. J. Sheaf at the barber's shop, when I engaged to wait for this agreeable gentleman at Mr. Whipple's. I spent the afternoon with Mr. Whipple, his lady, Madam Wentworth, Mrs. Purcel, and Mrs. Clapham. As I was waiting upon Mrs. Purcel home met Mr. Sheaf; we walked together and took the tour of several streets. He informed me that he had only twenty-two days from Martihico, and that there was no appearance of war among the French and Spaniards. He was perfectly surprized when he heard that a French fleet was upon the coast of New England. Went this afternoon to Capt. Roach and his family. I found here Mr. John Parker, the Sheriff, brother to Parson Parker, of Boston; he made some severe reflections upon my persecutors, in particular their imposing the oath of abjuration. When Mr. Parker was gone Mr. Roach applied to have his child baptized. I performed the office in the presence of three ladies, who were here on a visit. At parting Capt. Roach gave me half a guinea, and kindly offered to do his part toward my support during the present calamitous times. After I had parted with Mr. Sheaf I went with Mrs. Whipple to Capt. Turner's, where we found Mr. Whipple arrived before us, and Mrs. Pepperell. Just as we had entered into sociable conversation I was called away to baptize a child for one Reed, a little out of town. Here were present a large number of ladies. After I had performed the sacred ordinance I returned to my company, and about ten I went to Mr. Staver's, and found Mrs. Coffin arrived from Boston, but she and the Dr. were both gone to bed. After supper spent an hour with Mrs. Frazier and another lady. The former gave me a yard of muslin for Mrs. Bailey. Lodged at this house.

15th. This morning rose early and waited for breakfast till Dr. Coffin, his lady, and Miss Betty Wier were dressed. Mrs. Coffin brought word that the French fleet had left Newport, and that the Cork fleet had all arrived safe at New York, which incidents gave uncommon spirits to the friends of government, who had for a long time been in a despairing situation. Mr. Marden being ready to go on board I was obliged to leave this very agreeable company. When we came to the vessel we found the wind still unfavorable, which determined us to return. I dined at Mr. Staver's, waited upon Mr. Jeffries, and drank tea at Mr. Whipple's, where I learned from that gentleman that one Mr. Emerson, of York, had been upon Rhode Island to satisfy his curiosity.

He declared that he had been not only in the Provincial army, but among the inhabitants, who assured him there were 10,000 British forces at Newport, the rebel army between 12,000 and 20,000 strong. He confirmed the account of the departure of the French fleet, and added that they sailed on Monday morning in pursuit of some British ships which appeared in sight the evening before, and that prior to this movement the French had re-embarked all their land forces to the number of 4,500. Went with Mr. Whipple to Mr. Staver's, and found Griffin arrived from Boston, who informed us that the Whigs were greatly alarmed at the French Admiral's conduct; that the Salem volunteers, in attempting to reconnoitre the enemy's works had lost ten of their number; that the late storm had greatly annoyed the Provincial army, as the militia and volunteers were destitute of shelter; that the Royal forces, in case the French fleet should not return, intended to surround Rhode Island; and that two capital ships had lately arrived from Britain. Our company consisted of Capt. Turner, Mr. Jaffrey, Mr. Whipple, Capt. Hickey, and Mr. Stavers, besides Griffin and Davis. About 10 received a note from Mr. Soward to baptize his child. At 11 I complied with his request, after which I supped and lodged at Mr. Whipple's. Mr. J. Sheaf gave me six lbs. of coffee.

16th. This, being Sunday morning, after having an early breakfast with Mr. Stavers, returned on board. The wind soon began to breeze E. and by S., and the tide favouring we beat out to sea, and had a most pleasant passage into Winter Harbour, where we came to anchor about half past five in the afternoon. We landed the two Mardens at this place, but the wind blowing hard almost from the S. E. our Captain concluded it not prudent to proceed. In the night showers of rain. Another sloop, belonging to Broad Bay, anchored near us in this harbour.

17th. Wind about east, thick weather, attended with rain and fog. Went on shore on Wood Island. This island is surrounded with a sharp, rocky shore; the skirts of it abound with gooseberry bushes; the situation of the inland parts very low, and the soil exceeding rich; vegetables grow here to an uncommon size; on the north-west end we observed the appearance of a deep bog. Having dined on board we concluded, in the afternoon, to visit father Hussey, a Quaker, who had lived upon a large farm to the south of this harbour above forty years. I was pleased with the conversation of his brother, who happened to be present on a visit from Berwick, but I quickly discovered the owner of the house to be an obstinate, self-conceited, censorious bigot. We entered deeply into public measures, and, though the Quakers loudly condemned the proceedings of the American opposition, yet, I strongly suspect, they are no hearty friends to the British Constitution. They are unwilling to risk anything in the reformation or subversion of any government, yet, I fancy, a republican form must be most agreeable to their inclinations. The whole family appeared very contracted and inhospitable, not asking either of us to eat or drink, though they prepared an afternoon repast, and it was with difficulty we obtained a drink of water. Showery in the night, with some lightning.

18th. Wind still continues east, with a prodigious thick fog. After breakfast went on shore, first to one Capt. Hill's, where we met with very indifferent treatment. We then crossed over a narrow channel, and visited one Fletcher. The old woman and her two daughters were the most hard-favoured and disagreeable of the sex I ever beheld; the whole family were extremely rough and hoggish in their manners. The old man raved against Capt. Callahan, and threatened him with hanging. He had a daughter deaf and dumb, and a son blind. We tarried in this inhospitable dwelling. The weather continuing the same we went on board without any prospect of sailing. In the evening lightning and rain.

19th. This day wet and foggy. In the morning, after breakfast, went on shore and visited an island to the N. W., exceeding rough and uneven. About eleven visited the old Quaker, who treated us in a very hoggish manner, never asking us to sit

down, and he took four shillings lawful for one dozen of cucumbers. In the afternoon the fog began to disperse, and about sunset the weather was perfectly calm and serene.

*August 20th.* This morning awoke about 2 o'clock and finding a steady gale of S. W. wind and a clear sky alarmed the Captain, and in less than an hour after we got under sail. Before sunrise passed Cape Elizabeth. At 9 or 10 entered the mouth of the Kennebeck.

Mr. T. Percy came on board and informed us that he and his brother were obliged to take the oath from the complaint of Sam. McCobb. About 12 we came to anchor in Fiddler's reach. Went on shore with Dr. Mayer at Capt. Drummond's. Found him a violent son of liberty and a friend to the French alliance. He however treated us with complaisance and invited us to tarry to dinner; after which we visited Mr. McFadden and Mr. Preble. Towards evening returned and drank tea with Mrs. Drummond. Capt. Drummond having furnished us with a barge, we went about sunset in pursuit of the sloop and overtook her in the gut, where we found Carleton arrived from Boston. He left that port the evening before and brought intelligence that the French fleet had not yet returned. Night coming on and the wind breesing, my Woolwich friends advised me to go home with them. In consequence of this invitation I visited Mr. David Gilmore and tarried with him till the next morning. It gave me great satisfaction to find my friends in so good spirits here, notwithstanding the gloomy aspect of publick affairs. I cannot forbear reflecting upon the peculiar circumstances of our rulers at this season, and I imagine they are highly deceived. They are certainly ignorant of the prevailing sentiment and discontent among the people. They, in the beginning of this revolt, flattered the lower classes of mankind and addressed them with misrepresentations and lies, till they inspired them with enthusiastic madness, and directed them, in the frenzy of their zeal, to bully, insult, mob and plunder men of the highest worth, integrity and consequence, those very persons whom they had hitherto approached with reverence and listened to with attention, whose advice and authority they had always regarded as sacred; everything was carried by noise, persecution, and violence, until the spirit of persecution began to subside among the common people and moderation to take its place. Those men who had advanced themselves into the highest stations of government during these commotions, took it for granted that they were firmly fixed in the affections of the rabble, and that they had nothing to fear except a few Tories, which it was their principal concern to suppress. For this purpose they enacted the most cruel and unreasonable laws, putting it in the power of every ill-natured and malicious man to ruin his neighbour. These institutions are so severe that men are afraid openly to complain, yet in secret they cannot forbear expressing the highest discontent and chagrin, and nothing is heard in private corners except murmurs and complaints, and the number of those who delight in persecution is very inconsiderable; this sentiment is almost wholly confined to those who can gratify their revenge by the persecution of a Tory neighbour, while the remainder bitterly execrate the authors and instruments of the action. Now all the uneasiness and clamor which prevail abroad are closely concealed from the legislative body which sits at Boston amid the bustle of warlike preparations and the hurry of business. For who would venture to disclose any unwelcome truth when he is liable to be punished for sedition, to be regarded as an enemy to his country, and perhaps to be wholly deprived of his freedom. Every one who approaches the supreme authority by way of petition for mercy, or request for favour, makes it his principal study to flatter and please. He will not, in such circumstances, excite any disagreeable sensations by the mention of unwelcome truths, but labour all in his power to preserve the utmost good humor, and carefully suppress every suggestion that may tend to censure or reprehend the government to which he applies.

*21st.* This morning rose early and visited Mr. William Gilmore. After breakfast baptized, before a large number of people, a child for Capt. Fullerton; then calling

upon Capt. Smith we went on board and took our things in order to proceed homeward, but the wind quickly began to breeze from the north, attended with frequent thunder squalls. When we arrived, after much fatigue, at the Chops of Merry-meeting Bay, we found Mr. Hatch and Jackson on board a vessel bound to Nantucket. This incident prevented our proceeding any farther, and obliged us to go on shore, where we continued above four hours, but perceiving a formidable thunder shower arising we determined to visit Capt. Hobbs'. We had very civil entertainment at his house, and about dark embarked and continued our voyage a mile beyond the Chops, when a violent squall burst upon us from the north, attended with uncommon darkness and cold. It was with extreme difficulty we were able to reach the shore, upon which the waves dashed with increasing and resistless fury. I was constrained to continue above an hour holding the painter, while Dr. Mayer ran to solicit assistance. At length, after rambling through the bushes, and over burnt logs and rocky ledges, he appeared with Mr. John Trot.(?) We perceived ourselves to be but a few rods from his house, and having hauled our boat into a cove, with watching the greater part of the night we prevented her dashing in pieces.

22d. After breakfast, the wind still blowing from the north-west, we embarked, and about two arrived at Pownalborough, where I had the satisfaction of finding my family in good health, though they had greatly suffered in my absence from want of provisions. I was astonished to perceive the severity of the drought in this part of the country. Almost everything was consumed, and a terrible fire raging near the Eastern River, rendered the prospect still more distressing. I was visited this afternoon by several of my friends.

[Journals missing from August 23d, 1778, to January 16th, 1779, inclusive.]

### 1779.

*January 17th—Sunday.* At home. San's (?) preached. Cushing forbids him.

28th. Set off on a journey. Arrived at Whitchasset.

29th. Arrived at Mr. Rhode's, in Bristol.

30th. A snow storm. At Mr. Palmer's. Lodged at Capt. Vinal's.

31st. At night at Mr. Palmer's.

*February 1st.* At Capt. Vinal's, Cremor's, Chapman's, and (Rev. Dr.) Shefford's.

3d. Baptized Eunice Vinal. Returned to Palmer's.

4th. Dined at Noble's and lodged at J. Sevey's.

5th. Breakfasted at Mr. Wood's. Get home at sunset.

6th. Baptized John Carlow.

14th—*Sunday.* Baptized Anna Costelo. Mr. Gardiner here.

21st—*Sunday.* Mr. Gardiner and 11 persons.

*March 1st.* At home. N. Palmer reads his confession.

2d. At home. John (McNamarra) returns from Broad Bay.

6th. At Mr. Pochard's. His father ill.

7th. At Mr. Pochard's. The old man dies.

8th. Mr. Pochard buried.

11th. Mr. Lawrence's child buried.

14th. At Mr. Lawrence's. Baptized Amos and Betsy Hitchins.

19th. Rode to Mr. R. Turner's. Tarried all night.

20th. Rode home.

*April 4th—Sunday.* Company.

6th. Chose the same church officers.

#### ERRATA.

Page 240, Note; for L'Esarbot, read L'Escarbot.

Page 251, Note; for Christ's Church, read Christ Church.